





L. lat. f. 547 sd

DONUM  
**LUDOVICI II.**

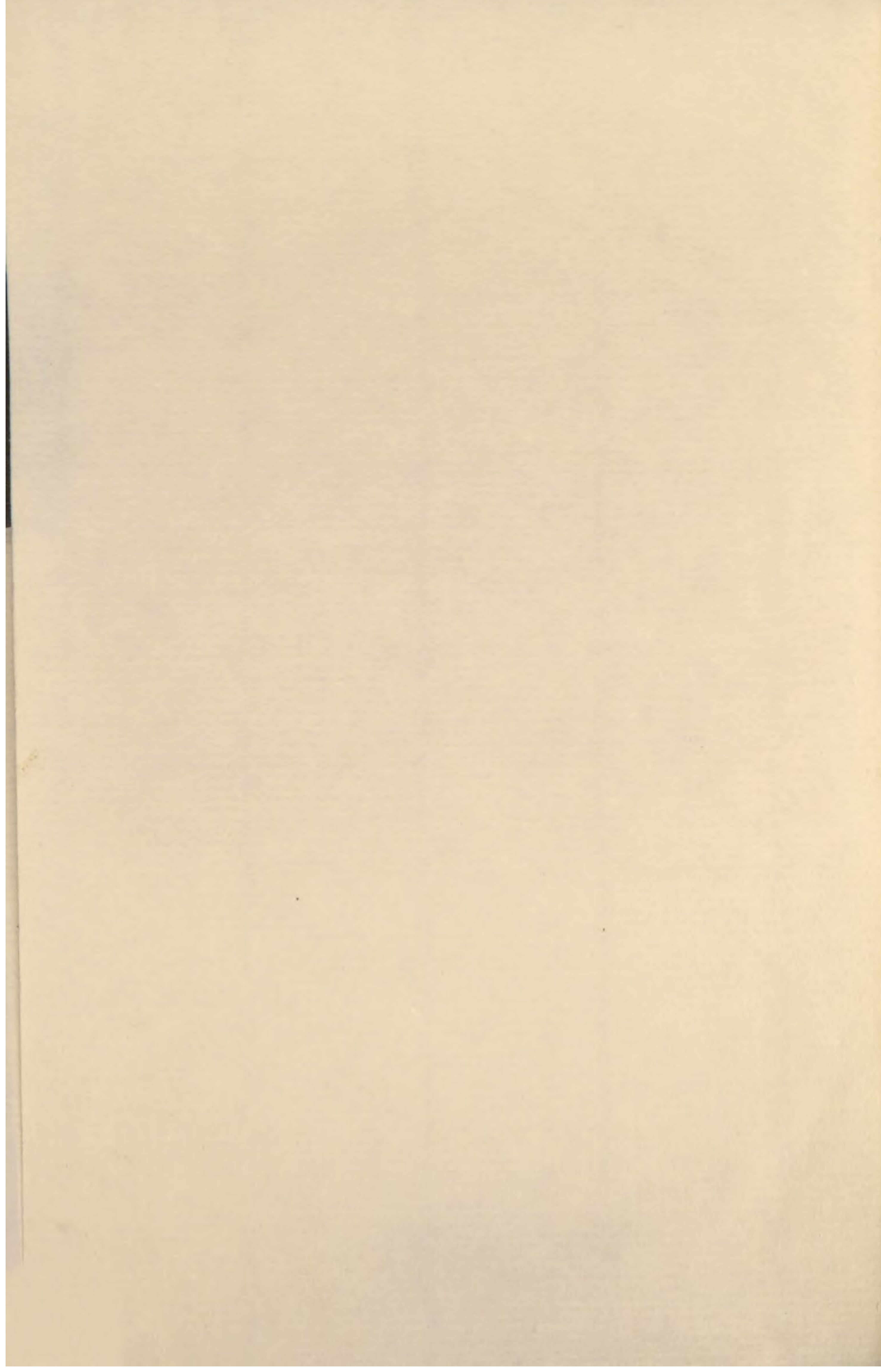
AUGUSTISSIMI  
BAVARIÆ REGIS.

348 36











*John Robinson. 1825.*

*L. lat. f. 547 sd*

A NEW  
PORTUGUESE  
GRAMMAR  
IN FOUR PARTS;

CONTAINING

- I. Rules for the Combination and Use of the different Parts of Speech,
- II. The Syntax, in which are explained, after a more copious manner than hitherto attempted, the peculiar uses of the PORTUGUESE PARTICLES.
- III. A Vocabulary, more particularly containing the Terms of COMMERCE, WAR, and NAVIGATION, with a variety of Phrases and familiar Dialogues, taken from common conversation and the best authors.
- IV. Various Passages extracted from the most approved ancient and modern writers, in prose and verse, with a view to facilitate the reading of the most valuable Portuguese books.

---

By ANTHONY VIEYRA, Transtagano.

---

THE NINTH EDITION,  
CAREFULLY REVISED AND GREATLY IMPROVED,  
WITH THE PORTUGUESE WORDS PROPERLY ACCENTED,  
ACCORDING TO THE LATEST AND BEST AUTHORITIES,  
By MR. I. P. AILLAUD.

---

*Necesse est enim inter quos mercatura et contractuum sint, inter eos quoque sermonis esse commercia. UBERTUS FOLIETA.*

---

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR F. WINGRAVE, IN THE STRAND.

1813.

348 - 236



1891. 11. 11. 11. 11.

BURLINGTON  
RES  
MONASTERY

**Bayerische  
Staatsbibliothek  
München**



*John Robinson 1825*

TO  
ROBERT ORME, Esq.

SIR,  
**T**HE best Historians and the greatest Poet  
my country has produced, have dedi-  
cated their talents to the subject which at  
present employs yours; and as no one is  
more sensible than yourself of the Geo-  
graphical, Commercial, and Political Know-  
ledge, which may be derived from an ac-  
quaintance with their writings on Indian  
affairs, this work of mine can nowise be  
addressed with greater propriety than to  
yourself.

I am, SIR,

Your most humble servant,

ANTHONY VIEYRA.



430

250

21500

860

107500



—

THE AUTHOR'S

PREFACE.

*AS the usefulness of the Portuguese language is so well known to all English merchants who carry on a general trade with the different Parts of the known world, it will be needless to use any arguments here to prove it ; and I shall refer what I have to say on the copiousness and energy of this language, to the Preface to my English and Portuguese Dictionary.*

*The reader will find in the First Part of this Grammar, what is material as a foundation of the whole.*

*At the end of the Second Part is a full explanation of the Particles, on which I have bestowed more time and labour, because this subject has been hitherto much neglected, although the principal ornament and elegance not only of the Portuguese, but of every other language, chiefly consist in the proper arrangement and judicious interspersion of the words.*

*In the Third Part is a larger collection than hitherto published of the terms of Trade, War,*



Navigation, &c. *which* the present intercourse between the nations renders particularly useful.

*Having found a great difficulty in procuring Portuguese books in this Country, I have been commonly obliged to furnish with part of my private collection those Gentlemen whom I have had the honour of assisting in the study of this language, during my residence here ; therefore, in the Fourth Part I have given some passages selected from the best Portuguese Authors, and which will, at the same time, facilitate the reading of their most eminent writers.*

---

#### ADVERTISEMENT TO THIS NEW EDITION.

**T**HIS new Edition of Mr. Vieyra's Grammar, has been not only accurately marked with the proper accents to facilitate the Pronunciation and the Intelligence of the Language, but even materially altered in the body of the Work. The accentuation is a matter of so much consequence in the Portuguese Language, that one accent used in the room of another, often changes entirely the signification of the word, as for instance in the words *Avó* and *Avô* ; the former, when



marked with an acute, meaning *grand-mother*, the latter with a circumflex, meaning *grand-father*. This interesting part, in which all the former Editions have been so deficient, (using only the acute) has been scrupulously corrected in the present one. In that part which treats of the Pronunciation, some very necessary corrections have been introduced. The pronunciation of the *ch*, wrongly explained in the other Editions, is here in this, brought to its real sound.

New passages from the best Modern Writers, have been substituted for some of the Ancient ones, to enable the learners to form a proper idea of the variations and progress of the Language, down to the present time. A new Vocabulary of the Military Words of Command and a fresh Translation of the Commercial Letters have also been inserted in this Edition.

Such are the principal alterations made in this Work, which, it is hoped, will meet with the approbation of the public.

*London, May, 1813.*



# CONTENTS.

---

## PART I.

|                                                                                       |           |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------|
| <i>OF the Portuguese Alphabet, and the manner of pronouncing each separate Letter</i> | Page 1    |
| <i>Of the manner of pronouncing the Portuguese Letters as combined in Syllables</i>   | - 3       |
| <i>Of the Articles</i>                                                                | - - - 8   |
| <i>Of the Nouns</i>                                                                   | - - - 11  |
| <i>Of the Pronouns</i>                                                                | - - - 25  |
| <i>Of Verbs</i>                                                                       | - - - 44  |
| <i>Of the Participles</i>                                                             | - - - 113 |
| <i>Of the Adverbs</i>                                                                 | - - - 114 |
| <i>Of the Prepositions</i>                                                            | - - - 117 |
| <i>Of the Conjunctions</i>                                                            | - - - 118 |
| <i>Interjective Particles</i>                                                         | - - 120   |
| <i>Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese Language</i>                             | 121       |

## PART II.

|                                                               |       |
|---------------------------------------------------------------|-------|
| <i>Of the Division of Syntax</i>                              | - 122 |
| <i>Of the Syntax of Articles</i>                              | - 126 |
| <i>Of the Syntax of Nouns, and first, of the Substantives</i> | - 131 |
| <i>Of the Syntax of Adjectives</i>                            | 132   |
| <i>Of the Syntax of the Comparatives and Superlatives</i>     | - 135 |
| <i>Of the Syntax of Pronouns</i>                              | - 136 |

|                                                          |           |
|----------------------------------------------------------|-----------|
| <i>Of the Syntax of Verbs</i>                            | - 139     |
| <i>Of the Syntax of Particles and Gerunds</i>            | - - - 152 |
| <i>Of Prepositions</i>                                   | - - - 154 |
| <i>Of the Portuguese Orthography</i>                     | - - - 191 |
| <i>Of the Quantity of Syllables, and their Sound</i>     | - - - 209 |
| <i>Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin</i> | - 215     |

## PART III.

|                                                            |          |
|------------------------------------------------------------|----------|
| <i>The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language</i> | 218      |
| <i>A Vocabulary of Words most used in Discourse</i>        | - - 1    |
| <i>Of the Portuguese Coin</i>                              | - 58     |
| <i>A Collection of Portuguese Proverbs</i>                 | - - - 59 |
| <i>Familiar Dialogues</i>                                  | - - 68   |
| <i>Letters on Mercantile Affairs, &amp;c.</i>              | - - - 83 |

## PART IV.

|                                                                                             |           |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------|
| <i>Several useful and entertaining Passages, collected from the best Portuguese Writers</i> | - - - 107 |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------|



---

A NEW

P O R T U G U E S E

GRAMMAR.

---

PART I.

---

CHAP. I.

OF THE PORTUGUESE ALPHABET.

*And the manner of pronouncing each separate Letter.*

THE Portuguese alphabet contains twenty-four letters, viz.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, L, M, N, O, P, Q,  
R, S, T, U, V, X, Y, Z.

The A is expressed by a sound like that of *a* in the English words *at*, *rat*, *fat*, &c.

B is expressed by a sound like that of the *be*, in the first syllable of the English word *Betty*.

C is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *celebrated*.

D is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *declare*.

E is expressed by a sound like that which we give to the English *a* when we pronounce the word *care*.

B



F is expressed by the same sound as in English.

G is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *generation*.

H is expressed by a sound like that of the English word *aghast* if you cut off the two last letters *st*, and keep the accent on the second *a*.

I is expressed by the sound of our *ee*.

J is called *j consoante*, it is expressed by the sound of *ee*, and has the same power as the *g* before *e* or *i*.

L, as in English.

M, as in English.

N, as in English.

O has nearly the same sound as in the English word *store*.

P is expressed by a sound like that of *pe* in the English word *penny*.

Q is expressed by a sound like that of the English *k*.

R is expressed by a sound like that of the English participle *erred*, if you can cut off the last letter *d*.

S, as in English.

T is expressed by a sound like that of *tha* in the English word *Thames*.

U is expressed by a sound like that of *oo* in the English word *poop*.

V is expressed by a sound like that of *oo*; they call it also *oo consoante*, i. e. the *v* consonant.

X is expressed by a sound like that of our pronoun personal *she*, if you add an *s* to it, or as *shees*.

Y is expressed by a sound like that of an *i* in the English word *visible*, and is called *upsilon*.

Z is expressed by the sound of our English *zed*, leaving out the *d*, or *zea*.



*Of the manner of pronouncing the Portuguese Letters  
as combined in Syllables; and first*

OF THE VOWELS.

A.

A in Portuguese is commonly pronounced like *a* in the following English words *adapted, castle, &c.* It is sometimes pronounced with less strength, and closely, as in *âmbos*, where the *a* is pronounced like *a* in the English word *ambition*.

E.

The letter *e* has two different sounds; the one open like *ai* in *daily*; the other close, like that in the English word *mellow*. Examples of the former, *fê, faith, pé, foot, &c.* Examples of the latter, *rêde, a net, parêde, a wall, &c.* In this consists a great part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation, which however, cannot be learnt but by a long use, notwithstanding all the rules that can be given.

I.

Is pronounced like *ee* in the English word *steel*, *áço*; or like *i* in the English words *still, ainda; visible, visível*.

O.

This vowel has two sounds; one open, as in the word *dó, pity*, where the *o* is pronounced like our *o* in the word *store*; the other close, as in the Portuguese article *do, of*, and the word *redôndo, round*, where the *o* is pronounced like our *u* in *turret* or *stumble*. It is likewise in the different pronunciation of this vowel that consists the greatest part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation; but it can be learned only by a long use.



## P O R T U G U E S E

U.

The vowel *u* is pronounced like *oo* in English.

Y.

Y has the same sound as the Portuguese vowel *i*.

---

 O F C O N S O N A N T S .

B

Keeps always the same sound as in English.

C

Before *a, o, u*, and the consonants *l, r*, is properly pronounced as *k*; but before *e* and *i* it takes the hissing sound of *s*: it takes also the sound of *s* before *a, o, u*, when there is a dash under it thus *ç*.

*I could wish the learned in Portugal would follow the resolution of the Royal Academy of Madrid, by expunging such dash, and placing the s in its stead, since they have in both languages the same hissing sound, which frequently occasions great confusion in the proper use of them.*

C before *h* is pronounced like *sh* in the English words *shine, shape, &c.*

Double *c* is sounded only before *e* and *i*, the first with the sound of *k*, and the other with the hissing sound of *s*; as in *accidênte*, accident, pronounce *aksidênte*.

D

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English.

F

Is pronounced always as in English.

G

Before the vowels *a, o, u*, and before consonants, is pronounced as in English: example, *gôsto*, taste; *gaiôla*, cage; *gríto*, a cry.



G before *e* and *i* denotes the sound of *j* consonant.

*Gua* sounds almost like our *wa* : example, *guárda*, pronounce *gwarda*.

*Gue*, *gui*, are pronounced as *gue* in the word *guest*, and *gui* in the word *gift* ; but in the verbs *arguír* and *redarguír*, it is to be pronounced as if it were written *argueer*, &c.

## H.

The letter *h* is never aspirated nor pronounced at the beginning of words, as *hóra*, an hour ; *homem*, a man : but, according to the modern orthography, all those words are written without an *h*.

H when preceded by a *c*, makes a sound with it like our *sh*. See the letter C, and also the letters L and N.

## J

Is pronounced like our *j* consonant.

## K.

The Portuguese have no such letter as *k*.

## L

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English.

*Lh* is pronounced like *g* before an *l* in the Italian words *figlio*, *foglio*, &c.

## M

Is pronounced as in English, when placed before a vowel with which it forms a syllable ; but, when it is at the end of words, and preceded by the letter *e*, it forms in Portuguese a nasal sound like that of the French words *vin*, wine ; *pain*, bread ; except *sóem*, *tóem*, from the verbs *soár*, *toár*, and some others.

M at the end of words, preceded by an *a*, *o*, or *i*, has such a nasal obtuse sound that can only be learned from a master's mouth.



## N.

N being before a vowel with which it forms a syllable, is pronounced as in English; otherwise, it only gives a nasal sound to the vowel that precedes it.

N before *h* has the same sound as *gn* in Italian, or in the French words *Espagne, Allemagne*.

## P.

P and *ph* are pronounced as in English.

## Q

Is pronounced like *k*: example, *quéro*, I am willing, pronounce *kero*.

☞ The vowel *u* after *q* in the word *qual*, which, must be uttered so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear, is pronounced as in the English word *quantity*, in order to distinguish it from the substantive *cal*, lime.

## R.

R and double *r* are pronounced as in English.

## S.

S and *ss* are pronounced as in English.

S between two vowels is pronounced like a *z*; particularly in the words ending in *oso*, and *esa*, as *amoroso, cuidadooso, mesa, defesa, &c.*

## T

Is pronounced as in English.

## V

Is pronounced as in English.

## X

Is pronounced as *sh* in English; except in the word *axioma*, in which, according to *Feyjó*, the *x* is to be pronounced like *c*.



X after the vowel *e* is pronounced like *cs*, in the words, *extençam*, *extenuádo*, *expulso*, *excellênte*, and some other words.

X between two vowels is pronounced like *gz* in the words *exactamênte*, *exornár*; except *Alexáandre*, *Paixám*, *Puxo*, *báxo*, and some other words, that may be learnt by use. You must take care to pronounce the *g* so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear.

Z

Is pronounced as in English, but at the end of words it is pronounced like *s*, as *rapáz*, boy; *Francez*, French; *perdíx*, partridge; *voz*, voice; *luz*, light, &c.

The tittle, or little dash, which the Portuguese call *til*, is set by them over some letters instead of *m*; as *bẽ* instead of *bem*; *convẽ* instead of *convém*; *hũa* instead of *huma*;\* and as it is then to be considered as an *m*, see what we have said about the pronunciation of that letter.

They also set their *til*, ~, over the vowels, *ao*, *aa*, in the end of words, thus *aõ*, *aa*. See what we have said above of *m* at the end of words preceded by an *a*.

---

OF DIPHTHONGS.

The meeting of two vowels in one and the same syllable constitute what is called a Diphthong, and are the following in the Portuguese language.

*Aa*, as in *maçãa*, an apple.

*Ae*, as in *cães*, dogs.

*Ay*, as in *páy*, father.

*Ai*, as in *máis*, more.

*Ao*, as in *páo*, wood.

*Au*, as in *cáusa*, a cause.

---

\* It may be here observed that the curved mark, ~, is the most perfect, though it is found necessary, in English types, frequently to substitute the plain ~ instead of the curved.



*Eo*, as in *céo*, heaven.

*Ey*, as in *réy*, king.

*Ei*, as in *améi*, I loved.

*Eu*, as *éu*, I.

*Io*, as *vio*, he saw.

*Oe*, as in *poēm*, they put; *compóem*, they compose; *meloēs*, melons, &c.

*Oy*, as in *bóy*, an ox; *fóy*, he was.

*Ou*, as *dou*, I give; *sou*, I am.

*Ue*, as *azúes*, blue:

✦ The two vowels in the following words must be plainly and distinctly pronounced:

*Ai*, as in *paíz*, a country, pronounce *pa-íz*.

*Ea*, as in *lampréa*, a lamprey, pronounce, *lampré-a*.

*Ia*, as *clemência*, clemency, pronounce, *clemênci-a*.

*Io*, as in *navío*, a ship, pronounce, *naví-o*.

*Iu*, as *viúva*, a widow, pronounce, *vi-úva*.

*Oā*, as *Lisbóa*, Lisbon, *próa*, a prow, pronounce, *Lisbó-a*, &c.

*Oe*, as *tóem*, *sóem*, from the verbs, *toár*, and *soár*, pronounce, *tó-em*, &c.

*Oi*, as *roím*, bad, pronounce, *ro-ím*.

*Oo*, as *cooperaçám*, co-operation, pronounce, *co-operaçãõ*.

*Ui*, as *ruína*, ruin, pronounce, *ru-ína*.

## C H A P. II.

### OF THE ARTICLES.

**T**HOSE particles called Articles, are properly prepositions, commonly put before nouns, to shew their gender, number, and case.

These articles are definite or indefinite.

#### *Of the Definite Article.*

The definite article marks the gender, number, and case of the nouns which it precedes.



The English tongue has but one definite article, namely *the*, which serves for both numbers.

The Portuguese has two, viz. *o* for the masculine and *a* for the feminine.

The definite article has five cases, the nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative; because the vocative in the nouns is designed and preceded merely by the particle *o*.

*The Declension of the Masculine Article o.*

| Singular.                                  | Plural.                                      |
|--------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|
| Nominative, <i>o</i> , the.                | Nominative, <i>os</i> , the.                 |
| Genitive, <i>do</i> , of the.              | Genitive, <i>dos</i> , of the.               |
| Dative, <i>ao</i> , or <i>o</i> , to the.  | Dative, <i>aos</i> , or <i>os</i> , to the.  |
| Accusative, <i>ao</i> , or <i>o</i> , the. | Accusative, <i>aos</i> , or <i>os</i> , the. |
| Ablative, <i>do</i> , from or by the.      | Ablative, <i>dos</i> , from or by the.       |

*The Declension of the Feminine Article a.*

| Singular.                       | Plural.                                |
|---------------------------------|----------------------------------------|
| Nominative, <i>a</i> , the.     | Nominative, <i>as</i> , the.           |
| Genitive, <i>da</i> , of the.   | Genitive, <i>das</i> , of the.         |
| Dative, <i>á</i> , to the.      | Dative, <i>ás</i> , to the.            |
| Accusative, <i>a</i> , the.     | Accusative, <i>as</i> , the.           |
| Ablative, <i>da</i> , from the. | Ablative, <i>das</i> , from or by the. |

☞ Observe, that the Portuguese have an article for each gender, both in the singular and the plural.

*Of the Indefinite Article.*

The indefinite article may be put before the masculine as well as the feminine gender, before the plural as well as the singular number.

The indefinite article has but four cases, the genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative.

One may put *de* before a noun masculine as well as a feminine, as *húma corôa de réy*, a king's crown; the word *réy* is masculine; *hum chapéo de pálha*, a hat of straw; the word *pálha* is of the feminine gender.

The indefinite article *de* is also put before the plural as well as the singular number; example, *húma*



*corôa de flôres*, a crown of flowers; *hum prato de arrôz*, a plate of rice.

*Declension of the Indefinite Article.*

Genitive, *de*, of.

Accusative, *a*.

Dative, *á*, to.

Ablative, *de*, from.

✚ The accusative of this article is not expressed in English: example, *Eu conheci a seu páy*, I knew his father, *eu conheci a sua mãy*, I knew his mother.

The indefinite article may also be put before infinitives, and then it signifies *to*; as *he tempo de fallár, de dormír, de lér*, &c. it is time to speak, to sleep, to read, &c. *eu vou a vêr, a fallár*, I am going to see, to speak.

N. B. Whenever we meet with *of* and *to* in English, followed by *the*, remember they are the indefinite articles, and then we must make use of the indefinite article *de*, or *a*, in Portuguese.

When the verb is in the infinitive mood, and serves as nominative to the following verb, they put the article *o* before it; as *o comêr e o dormír são as côusas máis necessárias nesta vida*, eating and sleeping are the greatest necessities of life.

When the preposition *in* is followed by the article *the* or by a pronoun possessive, as *in the*, *in my*, *in thy*, *in his*, we must render it in Portuguese by *em o* or *no*, *em os* or *nos*, for the masculine; and by *em a* or *na*, *em as* or *nas*, for the feminine: example, in the garden, *em o jardim*, or *no jardim*; in the street, *em a rua* or *na rua*; in thy book, *em o teu*, or *no teu livro*; in his bed, *em a sua*, or *na sua câma*, &c.

When after the preposition *with*, which in Portuguese is expressed by *com*, we find the articles *the*, or a pronoun possessive, as *with the*, *with my*, &c. we may say, *com o*, or *co*, *com a* or *coa*, *com os*, or *cos*, *com as*, or *coas*: example, with the prince, *com o* or *co príncipe*; with the sword, *com a* or *coa espáda*; with the eyes, *com os* or *cos olhos*; with my books, *com os* or *cos meus livros*, &c.



When the preposition *with* is followed by a pronoun possessive, and this by a noun of quality or kindred, as *with your majesty, with your highness, with your excellency, with his brother, &c.* *with* must then be rendered by the Portuguese word *com*, as *com vossa majestade, com vossa altêza, com seu irmão*, without using the article.

Observe, that sometimes the dative and accusative of the indefinite article are not expressed in English, particularly before pronouns personal and proper names; example, *convém a nós*, it behoves us; *António matou a Pedro*, Anthony killed Peter.

### C H A P. III.

#### OF THE NOUNS.

**T**HE Portuguese nouns have various terminations, as will appear hereafter.

They have but two genders, the masculine and feminine.

The Portuguese nouns have no variation of cases, like the Latin, and the article only distinguishes the case.

#### *Of nouns ending in a ; and of their declension.*

| Singular.                                                 | Plural.                                                       |
|-----------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------|
| Nom. <i>a rainha</i> , the queen.                         | Nom. <i>as rainhas</i> , the queens.                          |
| Gen. <i>da rainha</i> , of the queen.                     | Gen. <i>das rainhas</i> , of the queens.                      |
| Dat. <i>á rainha</i> , to the queen.                      | Dat. <i>ás rainhas</i> , to the queens.                       |
| Acc. <i>a rainha</i> , the queen.                         | Acc. <i>as rainhas</i> , the queens.                          |
| Voc. <i>ó rainha</i> , O queen.                           | Voc. <i>ó rainhas</i> , O queens.                             |
| Abl. <i>da ou pélla rainha</i> , from<br>or by the queen. | Abl. <i>das ou pellas rainhas</i> ,<br>from or by the queens. |

We have already observed that the Portuguese nouns have no variation of cases; therefore there is



no occasion to display more examples of their declensions, because you need but change the article according to their gender.

*Of the Gender of Nouns ending in a.*

Nouns ending in *a* are generally of the feminine gender; as *rósa*, a rose; *janélla*, a window, &c. You must except *día*, a day, *planéta*, a planet; and other nouns ending in *a*, belonging to a man; as *marióla*, a porter; *jesuíta*, a jesuit: those derived from the Greek are likewise masculine; as *dógma*, *epigrámma*, *clíma*; except scientific names, as *mathemática*, *theología*, &c.

Except also from this general rule some nouns that have the accent upon the last syllable; as *alvárá*, a charter, or a prince's letters patent; *Pará*, one of the captainships of the Portuguese America, &c.

Observe, that the plural of nouns ending in *a* is formed by adding the letter *s* to the singular; as likewise the plural of all nouns that terminate in vowels.

Observe also, that nouns ending in *āa* are of the feminine gender, and form their plural as those ending in *a*.

*Of the Gender of Nouns ending in e.*

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender; as *dente*, a tooth; *válle*, a valley; *vêntre*, the womb, &c.

The exceptions are *fê*, faith; *fônte*, a fountain; *chave*, a key; *tôrre*, a tower; *ave*, a fowl; *cárne*, flesh or meat; *gênte*, people; *môrte*, death; *nêve*, snow; *nóite*, night; *pônte*, a bridge; *pêste*, plague; *párte*, part; *serpênte*, a serpent; *lébre*, a hare.

Except also all names of virtues, vices, faculties, and those expressive of the passions of the mind; as *virtúde*, virtue; *santidáde*, holiness; *bondáde*, goodness; *vaidáde*, vanity; *ociosidáde*, idleness, &c.



Thirdly, *idade*, age; *velhice*, old age; *rusticidade*, rusticity; *capacidade*, capacity; *felicidade*, happiness; *sorte*, fortune; *arte*, art; *arvore*, a tree; *fertilidade*, fertility; *sede*, thirst; *sebe*, a hedge; *couve*, cabbage; *herdade*, a farm or manor; *chaminé*, a chimney; *parede*, a wall; *saude*, health; *rede*, a net; *maré*, the tide; *febre*, fever; *galé*, a gallery, &c.

*Of the Gender of the Nouns ending in i.*

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine; as *extasi*, a rapture; *nébri*, a hawk, &c.

*Of Nouns ending in o.*

Nouns ending in *o* are of the masculine gender; as *livro*, a book; *filho*, a son; *braco*, an arm; *vestido*, a garment; *espelho*, a looking glass, &c. Except *náo*, a ship; *filhó*, a fritter or pancake; *eiró*, an eel.

*Of Nouns ending in u.*

All nouns ending in *u* are masculine; as *perú*, a turkey; *gróu*, a crane.

*Of Nouns ending in y.*

Nouns ending in *y* are of the masculine gender; as *rêy*, king; *páy*, father; *bóy*, ox, &c. except *lêy*, a law; *mãy*, a mother.

*Of the other Terminations of Nouns, or of those terminating in consonants.*

1. All nouns ending in *al*, are masculine; as *sinál*, a sign or token; *sal*, salt. You must except *cal*, lime, which is feminine, and has no plural.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the letter *l* of the singular into *es*; as *sináes* from *sinál*; *animáes* from *animál*.

2. Nouns ending in *ar* are of the masculine gender; as *ar*, air.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *áres* from *ar*.



Some nouns ending in *as* in the plural are feminine, and have no singular; as *mígas*, *exéquias*, &c.

3. Nouns ending in *az* are of the masculine gender; as *rapáz*, a boy; except *paz*, peace. The plural is formed by the addition of *ez* to the singular.

4. Nouns ending in *el* are masculine; as *annél*; a ring; *papél*, paper, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *is*; as *annéis*, from *annél*; *papéis*, from *papél*.

5. Nouns ending in *em* are of the masculine gender; as *hómem*, a man; *bem*, benefit, &c. Except *órdem*, order; *viagem*, a voyage; *virgem*, a virgin, &c. but *salvagem*, a savage, is common.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*; as *hómens* from *hómem*, &c.

6. Nouns ending in *er* are of the masculine gender; as *podér*, power; *prazér*, pleasure, &c. Except *colhér*, a spoon; *mulhér*, a woman.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *colhéres*, from *colhér*.

7. Nouns ending in *ez* are of the masculine gender; as *freguêz*, a parishioner or a customer; *mêz*, month; *arnêz*, *levêz*, *revêz*, &c. Except *surdêz*, deafness; *torquêz*, *vêz*, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *freguêzes*, from *freguêz*; but *têz* has no plural.

8. Nouns ending in *il* are of the masculine gender; as *funíl*, a funnel; *barríl*, a barrel.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *s*, as *funís*, from *funíl*, &c. Except *aquátíl*, *fácil*, *pensíl*, &c. which change the *il* into *eis* in the plural, as *fáceis*, from *fácil*.

9. Nouns ending in *im* are of the masculine gender, as *espadím*, a little sword.



The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *espadíns* from *espadím*.

10. Nouns ending in *ir* or *yr* are of the masculine gender; but *mártir* or *mártyr*, a martyr, is common.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

11. All nouns ending in *iz* are of the masculine gender; as *apprendíz*, an apprentice; *naríz*, nose; *verníz*, varnish; *matíz*, a shadowing in painting; *chafaríz*, *chamaríz*, &c. Except *aboíz*, *perdíx*, *raíz*, *codorníz*, *matríz*, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *perdízes* from *perdíx*.

12. Nouns ending in *ol* are of the masculine gender; as *anzól*, a hook; *sól*, the sun, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *anzóes* from *anzól*, &c.

13. Nouns ending in *om* are of the masculine gender; as *som*, sound; *dóm*, gift, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *sons* from *som*, &c.

14. Nouns ending in *or* are of the masculine gender; as *amôr*, love, *temôr*, fear, &c. Except *dôr*, pain; *côr*, colour, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *amôres* from *amôr*.

Nouns ending in *os* are of the masculine gender; as *Déos*, God.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *s* into *zes*, as *Déozes* from *Déos*.

15. Nouns ending in *oz* are of the masculine gender; as *albernóz*, a Moorish coat; *arróz*, rice; *algóz*, hangman, &c. Except *nóz*, a walnut; *vóz*, voice; *fóz*, the mouth of a river.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.



16. Nouns ending in *ul* or *um* are of the masculine gender; as *sul*, the south; *Saúl*, Saul, a proper name of a man; *atúm*, tunny-fish.

The plural of those ending in *ul*, according to the learned *Bluteau*, is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *súes* from *sul*, *azúes* from *azúl*, blue, &c. Except *cônsules* from *cônsul*, a consul.

The plural of those ending in *um*, is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *atúns* from *atúm*.

17. Nouns ending in *uz* are of the masculine gender; as *arcabúz*, an arquebuss.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

18. Nouns ending in *aõ* are of the feminine gender; as *maõ*, hand; *composiçaõ*, composition, *oraçaõ*, oration, &c. Except *paõ*, bread; *anaõ*, a dwarf; *ouçaõ*, a hand-worm; *trovaõ*, thunder; *esquadraõ*, a squadron; *piaõ*, a child's top; *borraõ*, a blot with ink; *papelaõ*, paste-board; *chaõ*, the ground, *quinaõ*, a share.

There is no certain rule for the formation of the plural of the nouns ending in *aõ*; because some change the *aõ* of the singular into *ães*, as *Alemães*, from *Alemaõ*, a German; *capitães*, from *capitaõ*, a captain; *caães*, from *caõ*, a dog, *paães*, from *paõ*, a loaf; &c. Some change the *aõ* of the singular into *ãos*; as *cidadãos*, from *cidadeaõ*, a citizen; *christãos*, from *christaõ*, a christian; *cortezaãos* from *cortezaõ*, a courtier; *villãos*, from *villaõ*, a villain, &c. Some change the *aõ* of the singular into *ões*; as *esquadrões*, from *esquadraõ*, a squadron; *trovões*, from *travaõ*, thunder; *conclusões*, from *conclusaõ*, a conclusion; *orações*, from *oraçaõ*, an oration; and generally all the Portuguese nouns that may be easily made English, by changing their termination *çaõ* into the English termination *tion*, as *declinaçaõ*, declension or declination, *consideraçaõ*, consideration, &c. and these are of the feminine gender.



19. All nouns signifying a male, must be of the masculine gender; as *dúque*, duke; *marquêz*, a marquis; *cônde*, count, and those denoting a female are always feminine.

You may form two general rules from what has been said concerning the formation of the plural of nouns, viz.

I. That all nouns ending in any of the vowels have their plural formed by adding the letter *s* to the singular.

II. That the plural of nouns ending in *az*, *ez*, *iz*, *oz*, *uz*, is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

#### *Of Augmentatives.*

The Portuguese have their augmentatives formed by the increase of one or two syllables, which they add to the end of their nouns, and serve either to augment the signification of nouns, or to declare a thing contemptible; and so, from *hómem*, a man, they form, *hómemzarraõ*, a great strong man; *tôlo*, a fool, *toleiraõ*, a great fool, &c. and some others that may be learnt by use. They have also their augmentatives for the feminine; as, *molherôna*, a great stout woman; *toleirôna*, &c.

There are a great many nouns that appear, by their termination, to be augmentatives, though they are not; as, *forão*, a ferret; *atafôna*, an ass or a horse-mill, &c.

#### *Of Diminutives.*

The diminutives lessen the signification of their primitives.

The diminutives in the Portuguese language are always formed by changing the last vowel of the primitives into *inho*; but they denote either smallness of things, or kindness and flattery; as *bichinho*, a little worm, from *bicho*, a worm; *coitadinho*, from *coitado*, a poor little man; *bonitinho*, a little pretty



person or thing, from *bonito*, pretty. Sometimes they are formed by adding *zínho* to the primitives; as *caõzínho*, a little dog, from *caõ*, a dog, *irmãõzínho*, dear little brother, from *irmãõ*, &c.

The diminutives that serve for the feminine have their termination in *ínha*, or *zínha*; as *maõzínha*, a little hand, from *maõ*, a hand; *cabecínha*, a little head, from *cabeça*, a head. You may see in the last example, that the diminutives serving for the feminine and ending in *ínha*, are formed by changing the last syllable *a* of the primitive into *ínha*.

Observe that many nouns appear to be diminutives without being so; as *moínho*, a mill; *espínha*, a fish-bone.

Note, the diminutives in Portuguese convey sometimes a bad meaning, and denote contempt.

#### *Of Nouns Adjective.*

All adjectives ending in *o* make their feminine by changing *o* into *a*; as *dôuta*, from *dôuto*, learned; but *mão*, bad, makes *mã* in the feminine.

Those that end in *aõ* have their feminine in *ãa*; as, *sãa*, from *saõ*, healthy; *louçãa*, from *louçãõ*, brisk, gay, beautiful; *mẽaa*, from *meãõ*, middling, ordinary.

Those ending in *e* are common to both genders; as, *fôrte*, strong, &c.

Those that end in *m* make their feminine by adding an *a* to the masculine; as, *húma*, from *hum*, one; *algúma*, from *algúm*, some, &c. and sometimes by changing the *m* into *a*; as, *commúa*, from *commúm*, common; *bóa*, from *bom*, good.

Those that end in *u* make their feminine by adding *a* to the masculine, as *núa*, from *nu*, naked; *crúa*, from *cru*, raw.

Those that end in *ez* are common to both genders; as *cortéz*, civil, kind; *capáz*, capable, &c. except some which make the feminine, by adding *a*



to the masculine ; as, *Francêza*, from *Francêz*, French ; *Portuguêza*, from *Portuguêz*, Portuguese  
*Espanhól*, Spanish, makes *Espanhóla* in the feminine : but generally those that end in *l* are common to both genders ; as *affável*, affable ; *cruél*, cruel, &c.

*Of the Comparison of Adjectives.*

The comparison of adjectives is the way of increasing their signification by certain degrees, which are three, viz. the positive, comparative and superlative.

The positive lays down the natural signification of the adjective ; as, *nóbre*, noble ; *gránde*, great.

The comparative raises it to a higher degree, by comparing it to the positive, which in Portuguese is performed by the adverbs *máis*, more ; *ménos*, less ; as, *máis nóbre*, more noble ; *ménos bélla*, less handsome.

There are some adjectives which do not admit of *máis* or *ménos* before them ; as *celéste*, *nascído*, *comprádo*, *desterrádo*, &c.

There are four Portuguese comparatives which end in *or* : they may also be expressed by *máis*, more, before their positive ; as,

*Mayór*, greater, *máis gránde*.

*Menór*, less, *máis pequêno*.

*Peór*, worse, *máis roím*.

*Melhór*, better, *máis bóm*.

To which may be added *superiôr*, superior ; *inferiôr*, inferior ; *deteriôr* ; and some others.

Observe, that there can be no comparison made without the word *than* ; and that this word is expressed in Portuguese by *que*. Ex. *Máis cláro que o sól*, clearer than the sun ; *máis bráncó que a néve*, more white than the snow. The particle *que* is sometimes preceded by the word *do*. Ex. *isto he máis do que êu lhe disse*, this is more than I told him ;



*hé mais prudente do que parece*, he is more wise than it appears.

N. B. The comparatives *superiôr*, *inferiôr*, and some others, do not require *que* before the second term but the dative of the articles, viz. *á*, *ás*, *áo*; *aos*: Examp. *O outro he superiôr a este*, the other is superior to this.

When the Portuguese have a mind to heighten their comparisons, they make use of, *muíto mais*, a great deal or much more; as also of *muíto ménos*, a great deal, or much less. Ex. *Cæsar he muíto mais estimádo que Pompéo*, Cæsar is much more esteemed than Pompey; *Pompéo foi muíto ménos feliz que Cæsar*, Pompey was much less happy than Cæsar.

#### *Of the Superlative.*

The Portuguese superlative is formed from the noun adjective, by changing the last letter into *íssimo* for the masculine, and into *íssima* for the feminine: thus, from *béllo* is formed *bellíssimo* and *belíssima*, most handsome. But sometimes the superlative is formed by adding *muíto*, very, to the positive; as, *muíto álto*, very tall.

Observe that some superlatives are differently formed; as, *frigidíssimo*, from *frío*, cold; *amicíssimo*, from *amigo*, friend; *antiquíssimo*, from *antigo*, ancient; *capacíssimo*, from *capáz*, capable; *nobilíssimo*, from *nobre*, noble; *acérrimo*, from *ácre*, sharp, or acerb; *riquíssimo*, from *ríco*, rich; *fertilíssimo*, from *fértil*, fruitful; *boníssimo*, from *bóm*, good; *fidelíssimo*, from *fiél*, faithful; *sacratíssimo*, from *sagrado*, sacred, &c.

*The most* is expressed also in Portuguese by *o mais* and *a mais*; as the most fair, or fairest, *o mais béllo*, *a mais bélla*. But you must observe, that there are some adjectives which do not admit of *muíto*, very, *o mais*, or *a mais*; as *mórto*, *desterrado*, &c.

Observe, that by changing the last letter of the superlatives into *amente*, superlative adverbs are



composed; as, from *doutíssimo*, learned; *doutíssimamente*, most learnedly, &c. But the positive adverbs are formed by adding *mênte* to the feminine of the positive; as, *doutamente*, learnedly, from *dôuta*, the feminine of *dôuto*; *prudentemente*, prudently, from *prudênte*, prudent.

*Of Numeral Nouns; and first, of Cardinal.*

The cardinal nouns are such as express the number of things; as,

|                      |            |                              |                   |
|----------------------|------------|------------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>Húm,</i>          | one        | <i>Vinte e dous,</i>         | twenty-two        |
| <i>Dôus,</i>         | two        | <i>Vinte e três, &amp;c.</i> | twenty-three, &c. |
| <i>Três,</i>         | three      |                              |                   |
| <i>Quátro,</i>       | four       | <i>Trinta,</i>               | thirty            |
| <i>Cinco,</i>        | five       | <i>Quarênta,</i>             | forty             |
| <i>Sêis,</i>         | six        | <i>Cincoênta,</i>            | fifty             |
| <i>Sête,</i>         | seven      | <i>Sessênta,</i>             | sixty             |
| <i>Oúto or ôito,</i> | eight      | <i>Setênta,</i>              | seventy           |
| <i>Nóve,</i>         | nine       | <i>Oitênta,</i>              | eighty            |
| <i>Déz,</i>          | ten        | <i>Novênta,</i>              | ninety            |
| <i>O'nze,</i>        | eleven     | <i>Cém,</i>                  | a hundred         |
| <i>Dóze,</i>         | twelve     | <i>Duzêntos,</i>             | two hundred       |
| <i>Trêze,</i>        | thirteen   | <i>Trezêntos,</i>            | three hundred     |
| <i>Quatôrze,</i>     | fourteen   | <i>Míl,</i>                  | a thousand        |
| <i>Quínze,</i>       | fifteen    | <i>Dôus mil,</i>             | two thousand      |
| <i>Dezasêis,</i>     | sixteen    | <i>Milhaõ, or cônto,</i>     | a million         |
| <i>Dezasête,</i>     | seventeen  | <i>Húma dezêna,</i>          | half a score      |
| <i>Dezôuto,</i>      | eighteen   | <i>Húma duzia,</i>           | a dozen           |
| <i>Dezanóve,</i>     | nineteen   | <i>Húma vintêna,</i>         | a score           |
| <i>Vinte,</i>        | twenty     | <i>Dúas vintênas,</i>        | two score         |
| <i>Vinte e húm,</i>  | twenty-one | <i>Três vintênas,</i>        | three score       |

Observe, that all the cardinals that are adjective nouns, are not declined, being of the common gender, except *hum*, *húma*, one; *dôus*, *dúas*, two; and those composed of *cênto*, a hundred; as, *duzêntos*, *duzêntas*, two hundred; *quátro cêntos*, *quátro cêntas*, four hundred, &c. and when the feminine *húma* is preceded by *á*, and followed by *á outra*, then *húma* signifies *first*, and *á outra*, *secondly*.

The plural, *húns*, *húmas*, is taken sometimes instead of *algúns*, *algúmas*, signifying some; as *húns reys*, some kings; *húmas rainhas*, some queens.



N. B. *Cênto* loses *to* before a noun, either masculine or feminine, and the *n* is changed into *m*; therefore you must say, *cem soldádos*, not *cento soldádos*. It only retains *to* and *n* when it is followed by another number, as *cênto e húm*, &c. a hundred and one, &c. and when it is substantive.

N. B. Sometimes *cênto* is made a substantive; as *hum cênto de castânhas*, one hundred of chesnuts; and so all the cardinal numbers, when preceded by an article, or by another noun of number, as *o cinco de páos*, the five of clubs; *húm sête*, a seven.

The cardinal number is rendered into English by the ordinal, when it expresses the day of the month, or the date of any act; as, *chegôu a quátro de Máyo*, he arrived the fourth day of May.

#### Ordinal Nouns.

Ordinal nouns are such as express the order of things; as,

|                                      |             |                                           |                |
|--------------------------------------|-------------|-------------------------------------------|----------------|
| <i>Primêiro</i> ,                    | first       | <i>Décimo-oitávo</i> ,                    | eighteenth     |
| <i>Segúndo</i> ,                     | second      | <i>Décimo-nôno</i> ,                      | nineteenth     |
| <i>Tercêiro</i> ,                    | third       | <i>Vigésimo</i> , or <i>ventésimo</i> ;   | twen-          |
| <i>Quárto</i> .                      | fourth      |                                           | [tieth         |
| <i>Quínto</i> ,                      | fifth       | <i>Vigésimo-primeíro</i> ,                | one and        |
| <i>Séxto</i> ,                       | sixth       |                                           | [twentieth     |
| <i>Sétimo</i> ,                      | seventh     | <i>Trigésimo</i> ,                        | thirtieth      |
| <i>Oitávo</i> ,                      | eighth      | <i>Quadrágésimo</i> , or <i>quaranté-</i> |                |
| <i>Nôno</i> ,                        | ninth       | <i>simo</i> ,                             | fortieth       |
| <i>Décimo</i> ,                      | tenth       | <i>Quinquágésimo</i> ,                    | fiftieth       |
| <i>Undécimo</i> , or <i>onzêno</i> , | eleventh    | <i>Sexágésimo</i> ,                       | sixtieth       |
| <i>Duodécimo</i> ,                   | twelfth     | <i>Septuágésimo</i> ,                     | seventieth     |
| <i>Décimo-têrcio</i> ,               | thirteenth  | <i>Octágésimo</i> ,                       | eightieth      |
| <i>Décimo-quárto</i> ,               | fourteenth  | <i>Nonágésimo</i> ,                       | ninetieth      |
| <i>Décimo-quínto</i> ,               | fifteenth   | <i>Cêntésimo</i> ,                        | the hundredth  |
| <i>Décimo-séxto</i> ,                | sixteenth   | <i>Millésimo</i> ,                        | the thousandth |
| <i>Décimo-séptimo</i> ,              | seventeenth | <i>Último</i> ,                           | the last       |

The proportionable numbers are, *símplez*, *duplicádo* or *dobrádo*, *triplicádo* or *tríplice* or *tresdobrádo*, *quadruplicádo* or *quádruplo*, *cêntuplo*; a single, double, threefold, fourfold, a hundredfold.



The distributive nouns are, *hum á hum*, one by one; *dous á dous*, two by two.

In English all ordinal numbers may be formed into adverbs: but in Portuguese they have only *primeiramênte*, and *secundâriamênte*, or *segundária-mente*, first, secondly; and to express thirdly, fourthly, &c. they say, *em tercêiro lugar*, *em quáрто lugar*, in the third place, in the fourth place.

*A method (for those who understand French) to learn a great many Portuguese words in a short time.*

We must observe, that the French syllable *cha* is generally expressed in Portuguese by *ca*, rejecting the *h*. Examp. *Charbon*, *charité*, *chasteté*, *chapón*, *chapélle*, *chapître*, &c. the Portuguese say, *carvaõ*, *caridáde*, *castidáde*, *capaõ*, *capélla*, *capítulo*, &c. Observe also the following rules.

French words ending in *ance*, or *ence*; as, *constance*, *vigilance*, *clemência*, *prudência*, &c. in Portuguese end in *ância* or *ência*; as *constância*, *vigilância*, *clemência*, *prudência*, &c.

*Agne* makes *anha*; *montagne*, *montanha*; *campagne*, *campanha*.

*Ie* makes *ia*; *comédie*, *comédia*. Here you lean the accent upon the *e*, and not upon the *i*, as in French; *poésie*, *poesia*.

*Oire* makes *ória*; *gloire*, *glória*; *victoire*, *victória*.

*Ure* makes *úra*; *imposture*, *impostura*; *figure*, *figura*.

*Ison* makes *zaõ*; *raison*, *razaõ*; *prison*, *prizaõ*.

*On* makes *aõ*; *charbon*, *carvaõ*; *baron*, *baraõ*.

*Ulier* makes *ulár*: *regulier*, *regulár*; *particulier*, *particulár*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in e.*

*Ant*, *ante*; *vigilant*, *vigilante*; *amant*, *amante*.

*Ent*, adjective, *énte*; *prudent*, *prudente*; *diligent*, *diligente*.



*Té* makes *dáde*; *pureté*, *puridáde*; *liberalité*, *liberalidáde*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in vel.*

*Able*, *vel*; *louable*, *louvável*; *aimable*, *amável*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in ez.*

*Ois*, names of nations, *ez*; *François*, *Francéz*; *Anglois*, *Ingléz*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in o.*

*Ain*, and *ien*, names of nations, *áno*; *Romain*, *Románo*; *Italien*, *Italiáno*; *Napolitain*, *Napolitáno*.

*Aire*, *ário*; *salaire*, *salário*; *téméraire*, *temerário*.

*Eau*, *eo*, *chapeau*; *chapéo*.

*Ent*, substantive, *énto*; *sacrement*, *sacraménto*.

*Eux*, *óso*; *généreux*, *generóso*; *gracieux*, *gracióso*.

*If*, *ivo*; *actif*, *activo*, *passif*, *passívo*.

*C*, *co*; *porc*, *pórco*; *Turc*, *Túrco*.

*French Terminations ending in Portuguese in or.*

*Eur*, *or*; *terreur*, *terrôr*; *humeur*, *humôr*; *chaleur*, *calôr*.

*Change of Terminations of the Verbs and Participles.*

*Er*, in the infinitive mood of the first conjugation, makes *ár*; *aimer*, *amár*; *chanter*, *cantár*.

*Ir* makes *ir*, in the infinitive mood; *as*, *partir*, *partír*; *sentir*, *sentír*.

*Oir* makes *ér* in the infinitive mood; *as*, *concevoir*, *concebér*.

The participles in *é* make *ádo*; *aimé*, *amádo*; *parlé*, *falládo*.

The participles in *i* make *ído*: *dormi*, *dormido*; *menti*, *mentído*.

The participles in *u* make *do*; *as*, *conçu*, *concebído*, *entendu*, *entendído*.

There are a great many Portuguese words that have no manner of analogy with the French, which prevent these rules from being general.



C H A P. III.

O F P R O N O U N S.

**T**HE pronouns are personal, conjunctive, mixed, positive, demonstrative, interrogative, relative, or improper.

*Of personal Pronouns.*

The pronouns personal are *eu* and *nos* for the first person ; they serve for the masculine and the feminine.

*Tu* and *vos* for the second : these serve also for the masculine and feminine.

*E'lle*, for the third person of the masculine gender ; and *élles* in the plural.

*E'lla*, for the third person of the feminine gender, makes in the plural *éllas*.

The pronouns personal are declined with the article indefinite, *de*, *a*, *á*, *da*.

*The Declension of personal Pronouns.*

First Person.

| Singular Number.                                           | Plural Number.                                             |
|------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------|
| Nom. <i>Eu</i> , I.                                        | Nom. <i>nós</i> , we.                                      |
| Gen. <i>de mim</i> , of me.                                | Gen. <i>de nós</i> , of us.                                |
| Dat. <i>a mim</i> , to me.                                 | Dat. <i>a nós</i> , or <i>nos</i> , us.                    |
| Acc. <i>a mim</i> , me.                                    | Acc. <i>a nós</i> , us.                                    |
| Abl. <i>de mim</i> , or <i>por mim</i> ,<br>from or by me. | Abl. <i>de nós</i> , or <i>por nós</i> , from<br>or by us. |

*With me* is rendered by *comigo* ; and sometimes they add the pronoun *mésmo* to it ; *me* is expressed by *me* in the Portuguese ; as speak to me, *fallái-me* ; tell me, *dizéi-me* : send me, *mandái-me* ; write to me, *escrevéi-me* ; *elle disse-me*, he told me, &c.

*With us* is rendered in Portuguese by *com-nóseo*.



*Us* is rendered by *nos*. Examp. tell us, *dizéi-nos*; give us, *dái-nos*; show us, *mostrái-nos*; *elle disse-nos*, he told us, &c. In these examples *us* is not a pronoun personal, but conjunctive, as you will see hereafter.

## Second Person.

## Singular.

Nom. *tu*, thou.  
Gen. *de ti*, of thee.  
Dat. *a ti*, or *te*, to thee.  
Acc. *a ti*, or *te*, thee.  
Abl. *de ti*, or *por ti*, from  
or by thee.

## Plural.

Nom. *vós*, ye or you.  
Gen. *de vós*, or *vós*, you.  
Dat. *a vós*, or *vós*, you.  
Acc. *a vós*, or *vós*, you.  
Abl. *de vós*, or *por vós*, from  
or by you.

*With thee* is rendered by *contigo*; and sometimes they add to it the pronoun *mésmo*. *You*, or *yourself*, after imperatives are rendered by *vos*, and not *vós*; as, be you contented, *contentái vos*; show yourself, *mostrái-vos*: hide yourself, *escondéi-vos*.

*Thee* or *thysself*, are expressed after imperatives by *te*; as *móstrate*, show thysself.

*With you* is rendered in Portuguese by *com vósco*.

## Third Person. For the Masculine.

## Singular.

Nom. *élle*, he or it.  
Gen. *délle*, of him, or of it.  
Dat. *a élle*, to him, or to it.  
Acc. *a élle*, him, or it.  
Abl. *délle* or *por élle*, from  
or by him or it.

## Plural.

Nom. *élles*, they.  
Gen. *délles*, of them.  
Dat. *a élles*, to them.  
Acc. *a élles*, them.  
Abl. *délles* or *por élles*, from  
or by them.

The Portuguese have no particular pronoun, as our *it*, for things that are inanimate.

Remember that the pronoun *him*, or *to him*, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese, by *lhe*, and *them*, or *to them*, by *lhes*.

*With him* is rendered in Portuguese sometimes by *com élle*, and sometimes by *comsigo*, to which they add the pronoun *mésmo*.



## Third Person. Feminine.

## Singular.

Nom. *élla*, she or it.  
 Gen. *délla*, of her or of it.  
 Dat. *a élla*, to her or to it.  
 Acc. *a élla*, her or it.  
 Abl. *délla*, or *por élla*, from  
 or by her or it.

## Plural.

Nom. *éllas*, they.  
 Gen. *déllas*, of them.  
 Dat. *a éllas*, to them.  
 Acc. *a éllas*, them.  
 Abl. *déllas* or *por éllas*, from  
 or by them.

Remember that the pronoun *her* or *to her*, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese by *lhe*, and *them*, or *to them*, by *lhes*; as you will see in the pronouns conjunctive.

*With her* is rendered in Portuguese by *com élla* or *comsigo*.

*Of the Pronoun si, himself, or one's self.*

There is another pronoun personal that serves indifferently for the masculine and feminine: this is *si*, one's self. It has no nominative.

Gen. *de si*, of one's self, himself, or herself.

Dat. *a si*, to one's self, &c.

Acc. *a si*, one's self, &c.

Abl. *de si*, *por si*, from or by one's self.

It is joined with the pronoun *mêsmo* or *mêsma*; as *de* or *por si mêsmo*, by himself; *por si mêsmo*, or *de si mêsmo*, by herself; *o homem não ama senão a si mêsmo*, man loves himself only; *quem não hé bom senão para si, não hé bem que viva*, who minds no body but himself only, don't deserve to live; *o vício hé abominável de si mêsmo*, vice is hateful of itself; *a terra de si*, or *de si mêsmo hé fértil*, the earth is fruitful of itself.

Observe that they join also the pronoun *mêsmo* to pronouns personal, as the French do with their pronoun *même*, viz.



|                                      |                                         |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| <i>Eu mesmo</i> , myself.            | <i>nós mesmos</i> , ourselves.          |
| <i>Tu mesmo</i> , thyself.           | <i>vós mesmos</i> , yourselves.         |
| <i>Ele mesmo</i> , himself.          | <i>elles mesmos</i> } themselves.       |
| <i>Ella mesma</i> , herself.         | <i>ellas mesmas</i> }                   |
| <i>o homem mesmo</i> , man, himself; | <i>a mesma virtude</i> , virtue itself. |

1st. Observe, that *mesmo* with the article is also an adjective, signifying *the same*; thus *o mesmo*, *a mesma*, as *mesmos*, as *mesmas*, the same, relating to some nouns expressed or understood.

2dly. Note, That they also join the adjective *outro*, other, to the plural of the pronouns personal, *I* and *thou*; so they say, *nós outros*, we; *vós outros*, you.

3dly. *Comsigo* may be rendered in English (as we have said above) by *with him* and *with her*; but you must observe, that it may be rendered also by *with them* in the plural; and sometimes by *about him*, *about her* or *about them*. Exam. *Elle* or *ella*, *nunca traz dinheiro comsigo*, he, or she, never has money about him, or about her.

### *Of conjunctive Pronouns.*

The pronouns conjunctive are so called, because they always come immediately before or after the verb that governs them.

The pronouns conjunctive bear a great resemblance to the pronouns personal; the pronouns personal are,

*Eu*, I; *tu*, thou; *elle*, he; *nós*, we; *vós*, ye; *elles*, they.

There are seven pronouns conjunctive, viz. *me*, to me, or me: *te*, to thee, or thee; *se*, to himself, or himself, to herself, or herself; *lhe* to him, or him, to her, or her; *nos*, to us, or us; *vos*, to you, or you, *lhes*, to them, or them.

### *Example.*

*Isto me agrada*, this pleases me; *hé-me necessário*, I want.

*Dêos te vê*, God sees thee.

*Ella se louva*, she praises herself.



*Eu lhe diréi*, I will tell him, *or* I will tell her.

*Eu lhes promettí*, I promised them: as well for the masculine as the feminine.

The pronoun conjunctive, *lhe*, is always put after the verb, when it is in the imperative mood; as *dizéi-lhe*, tell him; *cortái-lhe as ázas*, cut his wings; but when the verb is in some other mood, it may be put either before or after it; as *élle lhe cortôu*, or *élle cortôu-lhe a cabeça*, he has cut off his head. The same observation takes place in the other pronouns conjunctive.

The pronoun conjunctive, *se*, is sometimes followed by *me*, *lhe*, &c. as *offeréce-se me*, it is offered to me; *representôu-se lhe*, it was represented to him, &c.

1st. Note, that the pronouns conjunctive are very often joined to a verb, preceded or followed by the verb *havér*. Examp. *Dar-lhe héi tanta pancáda*, or *eu lhe héi de dar tanta pancáda, que, &c.* I will cudgel him so much, that, &c.

2dly. *Lhe* is sometimes rendered in English by *you*. Examp. *Que lhe paréce aquillo?* What do you think of that? *assênta no que lhe digo*, be persuaded, or believe what I tell you.

### *Of Pronouns mixed.*

There are some pronouns in Portuguese which are composed of the pronouns personal and conjunctive, and which therefore are called mixed.

To clear up this matter, you must express them as underneath, changing the letter *e* of the pronoun conjunctive into *o* for the masculine, and *a* for the feminine; as to say, *to me of it*, instead of *me o*, or *me a*, you must say, *mo* or *ma*. In the like manner, instead of *lhe o* or *lhe a* you must say, *lho* or *lha*, &c. as you may observe in the following pronouns mixed, or rather contracted.



|                      |                                                          |                 |                                          |
|----------------------|----------------------------------------------------------|-----------------|------------------------------------------|
| <i>mo</i> , m.       | { me of it,<br>or<br>it or him to me.                    | <i>to</i>       | { thee of it<br>or<br>it or him to thee. |
| <i>ma</i> , f.       | { me of it.<br>or<br>it or her to me.                    | <i>ta</i>       | { thee of it<br>or<br>it or her to thee. |
| <i>mos</i> , m.      | { me of them,<br>or                                      | <i>tos</i> , m. | { thee of them<br>or                     |
| <i>mas</i> , f.      | { them to me                                             | <i>tas</i> , f. | { them to thee.                          |
| <i>selo</i> , m.     | { it to himself, to herself, or to themselves.           |                 |                                          |
| <i>sela</i> , f.     | { it to herself, to himself, or to themselves.           |                 |                                          |
| <i>selos</i> , m.    | { them to himself, to herself, or to themselves.         |                 |                                          |
| <i>selas</i> , f.    | { them to herself, to himself, or to themselves.         |                 |                                          |
| <i>lho</i> , m.      | { to him, or to her of it<br>or<br>it to him, or to her. |                 |                                          |
| <i>lha</i> , f.      | { to him, or to her of it<br>or<br>it to him, or to her. |                 |                                          |
| <i>lhos</i> , m.     | { to them of it, to him of them, or to her of them.      |                 |                                          |
| <i>lhas</i> , f.     | { to them of it, to him of them, or to her of them.      |                 |                                          |
| <i>nolo</i> , m.     | { us of it, or it to us.                                 |                 |                                          |
| <i>nola</i> , f.     | { us of it, or it to us.                                 |                 |                                          |
| <i>nolos</i> , m. p. | { them to us.                                            |                 |                                          |
| <i>nolas</i> , f. p. | { them to us.                                            |                 |                                          |
| <i>volo</i> , m.     | { you of it, or it of you.                               |                 |                                          |
| <i>vola</i> , f.     | { you of it, or it of you.                               |                 |                                          |
| <i>volos</i> , m. p. | { you of them, or them to you.                           |                 |                                          |
| <i>volas</i> , f. p. | { you of them, or them to you.                           |                 |                                          |

Here you have some Examples.

*Pára dár-lho*, to give it to him or to her.

*Dái-mo*, give it me.

*Eu to daréi*, I'll give it you.

*Entrégo-to*, I deliver it to you.

*Díze-lho*, you tell it him, or her.

*Entréga-lhos*, deliver them to him, or to her.

*Lá selo haja*, leave that to himself.

*Elle nolo disse*, he told us of it.

*Eu volos mandaréi*, I'll send <sup>him</sup> to you.

If the verbs are in the infinitive, the pronouns mixed may be put either before or after the verbs; as, *para dizêrmo*, or *para mo dizêr*, to tell me it; but if the verbs are in the gerund, the pronouns



mixed must be transposed; as, *dizêndomo*, and not *mo dizêndo*, in telling me it.

You must make use of these pronouns, both masculine and feminine, according to the gender of the thing named, sent or delivered, and not of the person to whom the thing is said, sent, given, &c.

*Of possessive Pronouns.*

Pronouns possessive, so called, because they denote that the thing spoken of belongs to the person or thing they are connected with, are of two sorts, absolute and relative. See the remarks hereafter.

The English have no article in the nominative before the pronouns possessive; but the Portuguese have, as, *my*, *o meu*, *a minha*, fem. Plur. *os meus*, *as minhas*, fem.

The pronouns possessive in Portuguese are the following :

Sing. *meu*, m. *minha*, f. } *my*.

Plur. *meus*, m. *minhas*, f. }

Sing. *teu*, m. *tua*, f. } *thy*.

Plur. *teus*, m. *tuas*, f. }

Sing. *seu*, m. } *his or its*.

Plur. *seus*, m. }

Sing. *sua*, f. } *her or its*.

Plur. *suas*, f. }

Sing. *nosso*, m. *nossa*, f. } *our*.

Plur. *nessos*, m. *nessas*, f. }

Sing. *vosso*, m. *vossa*, f. } *your*.

Plur. *vossos*, m. *vossas*, f. }

The pronouns possessive are declined with the definite article *o* for the masculine, and *a* for the feminine.

*Example.*

*Singular.*

Nom. *a meu livro*, my book.

Gen. *do meu livro*, of my book.

Dat. *ao meu livro*, to my book.

Acc. *meu livro*, my book.

Abl. *do ou pello meu livro*, from or by my book.



## Plural.

Nom. *os meus livros*, my books.

Gen. *dos meus livros*, of my books.

Dat. *aos meus livros*, to my books.

Abl. *dos ou pêllos meus livros*, from or by my books.

Decline all the other masculines after the same manner, and their feminines by the article *a*; as my house; *a minha casa*; of my house, *da minha casa*, &c.

Note, you must not use the definite article when the pronouns possessive precede nouns of quality, as well as those of kindred, but the indefinite article *de*, *a*, &c.

## Example.

*Vossa magestade*, your majesty.

*De vossa magestade*, of your majesty, &c.

*Mêu páy*, my father.

*De mêu páy*, of my father, &c.

From the above examples it appears that nouns declined by the indefinite article have no article in the nominative.

Though the definite article is sometimes used before nouns of kindred, yet we ought not to use it, according to the old proverb: *tu vivendo bonos, scribendo sequare peritos*.

*Seu* is sometimes made use of in room of *vósso* and *vóssa*, in the polite way of speaking: so they say, *tênho o seu livro*, I have your book: *fallêi ao seu criado*, I spoke to your servant; *os seus olhos são formosos*, your eyes are handsome.

*Remarks upon the Possessives.*

The pronouns possessive absolute always come before the noun they belong to. We have expressed them above.



Pronouns possessive relative are so called because they not being joined to their substantive, suppose it either expressed before, or understood, and are related to it. They are the following:

|       | Masc.          | Fem.                 |          |
|-------|----------------|----------------------|----------|
| Sing. | <i>Mêu,</i>    | <i>minha,</i>        | } mine.  |
| Plur. | <i>Mêus,</i>   | <i>minhas,</i>       |          |
| Sing. | <i>Têu,</i>    | <i>tua,</i>          | } thine. |
| Plur. | <i>Têus,</i>   | <i>túas,</i>         |          |
| Sing. | <i>Sêu,</i>    | <i>sua,</i> hers.    |          |
| Plur. | <i>Sêus,</i>   | <i>súas,</i> theirs. |          |
| Sing. | <i>Nosso,</i>  | <i>nossa,</i>        | } ours.  |
| Plur. | <i>Nossos,</i> | <i>nóssas,</i>       |          |
| Sing. | <i>Vosso,</i>  | <i>vossa,</i>        | } yours. |
| Plur. | <i>Vossos,</i> | <i>vóssas,</i>       |          |

To express in Portuguese *it is mine, it is thine, &c.* we must say *he meu, he teu, &c.*

The pronouns possessive absolute do not agree, in Portuguese, in gender with the noun of the possessor, as in English, but with that of the thing possessed; as, *a mãy ama a seu filho*, the mother loves her son; *o pái ama a sua filha*, the father loves his daughter. So you see that the pronoun masculine *sêu*, in Portuguese, is sometimes rendered by *her* in English, and the feminine *sua* by *his*.

The same observation is to be made upon the possessives relative, according to the gender of the noun that is understood; therefore they say of a hat, (for instance) belonging to a lady, *he o seu*, it is hers; because the noun understood, viz. *chapéo*, hat, is of the masculine gender.

We have already said, that *sêu*, and *sua*, are sometimes rendered into English by *your*, when they are absolute: but you must also observe, that they are sometimes rendered into English by *yours*, when they are pronouns relative, and that in the polite way of speaking; and so they say, speaking of any thing belonging to a gentleman or lady, *he o seu*, or



*he a sua*, it is yours ; but if the gentleman or lady are not present, or if they do not speak directly to them, though present, then the pronouns *sêu* and *sua* must be rendered into English by *his* or *hers*.

Note, That the pronouns possessive absolute, in Portuguese, agree also in number with the noun of the thing possessed ; hence it is that they say *a sua história*, its history, speaking of a kingdom, province, &c. or, *his history*, speaking of any history composed by a man ; or, *her history*, speaking of that written by a woman ; or, *their history*, speaking of that written by several hands, or of several people. And from this example you may learn, that the Portuguese have no particular pronoun possessive for things that are inanimate, as we have the pronoun *its*. Hence at last it follows, that when the Portuguese possessives *sêu* and *sua* are relative, they are rendered into English by *his*, or *hers*, or *theirs*, according to the gender and number of the noun of the possessor that is understood.

You must also observe, that they sometimes add the third pronoun personal, *dêlle*, of him, *dêlles*, of them, *dêlla*, of her, *dêllas*, of them ; to denote more plainly whose thing it is they speak of ; as *o sêu livro dêlles*, their book ; as, *as suas palavras dêlla*, her words, &c.

Note, that the possessives absolute are left out when they are preceded by a verb, or by a pronoun conjunctive, which sufficiently denote whose thing it is they speak of ; the Portuguese being then contented with the article ; as *dêvo-lhe a vida*, I owe my life to him, or to it ; *dêe-me a barriga*, my belly aches.

When the pronouns possessive absolute are before nouns of different genders in the same sentence, and with which they are grammatically construed, they ought to be repeated ; as, *sêu pái e sua mãy*, his father and mother : not *sêu pái e mãy*.



Moreover, the Portuguese use the pronoun possessive absolute in the following case, when we use the possessive relative; a friend of mine, *hum dos meus amigos*.

The possessives *minha, tua, sua, nossa, vossa*, may be also relative, but with a different meaning. Examples; *Levarêi a minha avante*, I will insist upon it, I will obtain it; *êlle levará a sua avante*, he will insist upon it, he will do it; *levai a vossa avante*, go on with your resolution; *fazêr das suas*, to play tricks, to dodge.

*Os meus, os seus, &c.* signify my relations, or my friends, thy relations, or thy friends; as, *os seus não o quêrem*, his parents or relations do not like him; *dêixa-o hir com os seus*, let him go with his people, his countrymen, &c.

Take notice, that when the pronoun possessive is accompanied by a pronoun demonstrative, they do not put the article in the nominative; they do not say *o êste meu livro*, but *êste meu livro*, this book of mine. But in all other cases they make use of the indefinite article; as *d' êste* or *dêste vosso livro*, &c.

#### *Of the Pronouns demonstrative.*

They are called pronouns demonstrative, because they serve to point out or demonstrate any thing or person; as, this book, *êste livro*; that man, *aquêlle hómem*.

There are three principal demonstratives in Portuguese, viz. *êste*, this; *êsse*, that; *aquêlle*, that; but observe that *êste* shews the thing or person that is just near or by us; *êsse* shews the thing that is a little farther, or near the person; and *aquêlle* shews what is very distant from the person who speaks, or is spoken of, and is expressed in English by *that there*, or *yonder*. You must also observe, that *êsse, êssa*, is used in writing to any person to express the place or town wherein he dwells; as *tênho fallado nêssa cidade*



*com muitos amigos*, I have spoken in your city with many friends.

These Pronouns are declined thus :

|           | Masc.                    | Fem.                | Neut.              |             |
|-----------|--------------------------|---------------------|--------------------|-------------|
| Singular. | Nom. <i>este</i> ,       | <i>esta</i> ,       | <i>isto</i> ,      | this.       |
|           | Gen. <i>deste</i> ,      | <i>desta</i> ,      | <i>disto</i> ,     | of this.    |
|           | Dat. <i>a este</i> ,     | <i>a esta</i> ,     | <i>a isto</i> ,    | to this.    |
|           | Acc. <i>este</i> ,       | <i>esta</i> ,       | <i>isto</i> ,      | this.       |
|           | Abl. <i>deste</i> ,      | <i>desta</i> ,      | <i>disto</i> ,     | from this.  |
|           |                          |                     |                    | No Neut.    |
| Plural.   | Nom. <i>estes</i> ,      | <i>estas</i> ,      |                    | these.      |
|           | Gen. <i>destes</i> ,     | <i>destas</i> ,     |                    | of these.   |
|           | Dat. <i>a estes</i> ,    | <i>a estas</i> ,    |                    | to these.   |
|           | Acc. <i>estes</i> ,      | <i>estas</i> ,      |                    | these.      |
|           | Abl. <i>destes</i> ,     | <i>destas</i> ,     |                    | from these. |
|           |                          |                     |                    | No Neut.    |
| Singular. | Nom. <i>esse</i> ,       | <i>essa</i> ,       | <i>isso</i> ,      | that or it. |
|           | Gen. <i>desse</i> ,      | <i>dessa</i> ,      | <i>disso</i> ,     | of that &c. |
|           | Dat. <i>a esse</i> ,     | <i>a essa</i> ,     | <i>a isso</i> .    | to that.    |
|           | Acc. <i>esse</i> ,       | <i>essa</i> ,       | <i>isso</i> ,      | that.       |
|           | Abl. <i>desse</i> ,      | <i>dessa</i> ,      | <i>disso</i> ,     | from that.  |
|           |                          |                     |                    | No Neut.    |
| Plural.   | Nom. <i>esses</i> ,      | <i>essas</i> ,      |                    | those.      |
|           | Gen. <i>desses</i> ,     | <i>dessas</i> ,     |                    | of those.   |
|           | Dat. <i>a esses</i> ,    | <i>a essas</i> ,    |                    | to those.   |
|           | Acc. <i>esses</i> ,      | <i>essas</i> ,      |                    | those.      |
|           | Abl. <i>desses</i> ,     | <i>dessas</i> ,     |                    | from those. |
|           |                          |                     |                    | No Neut.    |
| Singular. | Nom. <i>aquêle</i> ,     | <i>aquêlla</i> ,    | <i>aquillo</i> ,   | that.       |
|           | Gen. <i>daquêle</i> ,    | <i>daquêlla</i> ,   | <i>daquillo</i> ,  | of that.    |
|           | Dat. <i>á aquêle</i> ,   | <i>a aquêlla</i> ,  | <i>a aquillo</i> , | to that.    |
|           | Acc. <i>aquêle</i> ,     | <i>aquêlla</i> ,    | <i>aquillo</i> ,   | that.       |
|           | Abl. <i>daquêle</i> ,    | <i>daquêlla</i> ,   | <i>daquillo</i> ,  | from that.  |
|           |                          |                     |                    | No Neut.    |
| Plural.   | Nom. <i>aquêlles</i> ,   | <i>aquêllas</i> ,   |                    | those.      |
|           | Gen. <i>daquêlles</i> ,  | <i>daquêllas</i> ,  |                    | of those.   |
|           | Dat. <i>a aquêlles</i> , | <i>a aquêllas</i> , |                    | to those.   |
|           | Acc. <i>aquêlles</i> ,   | <i>aquêllas</i> ,   |                    | those.      |
|           | Abl. <i>daquêlles</i> ,  | <i>daquêllas</i> ,  |                    | from those. |



You must observe, that there is an elision of the vowel of the indefinite article in the genitive and ablative of the pronouns *este* and *esse*, both in the singular and plural; and that they write and pronounce *déste*, *désta*, &c. instead of *de este*, *de ésta*; and so in the neuter they write *dísso*, *dísto*, instead of *de isso*, *de isto*. The same observation you must make upon the pronoun *aquélle*, wherein you will see another elision besides, in the dative case.

Note, That both the Portuguese and Spaniards have demonstratives of the neuter gender; though they do not agree with the substantives as in Latin, because they do not say *isto homem*, but *este homem*, this man. But the word *côusa*, thing, is always understood, though the neuter demonstrative does not agree with it; so that it is the same thing to say *isto*, or *ésta côusa*, this thing; *isso*, or *éssa côusa*, that thing, &c. Example, *isso he* or *éssa he a côusa de que nós estamos fallando*, that is the thing we are speaking of; *aquillo he* or *aquella he a côusa que vós devéis fazer*, that is the thing you must do, &c.

When the preposition *em*, in, comes before the pronouns demonstrative, they make an elision of the vowel of it, and change the consonant *m* into *n*; and so, instead of writing and pronouncing *em este*, *em ésta*, *em isto*, *em isso*, *em aquillo*, they write and pronounce *neste*, *néta*, *nisto*, *nisso*, &c. in this, in that, &c.

The words *outro*, *outra*, are often joined to the pronouns demonstrative, taking off the last *e*; as *estoutro*, *essoutro*, *aquelloutro*. Example; *Estoutro homem*, this other man; *estoutra molhér*, this other woman; *essoutro homem*, that other man.

They also join very often the pronoun *mêsmo*, the same, to the demonstrative; as *este mêsmo homem*, this very same man; *aquillo mêsmo*, that very same thing.

*Aquí*, *alí*, and *lá* are sometimes added to the demonstrative, or on the noun that comes after it, in



order to specify and particularize it still more ; as *este homem aquí*, this man ; *aquella molhér lá*, that woman : *aquí*, denoting a near, or present object ; and *lá*, a distant and absent one.

The pronouns *aquêle*, *aquella*, *aquêlles*, *aquêllas*, when they relate to persons, and are followed by the relative *que*, are rendered into English by *he who*, or *he that*, *she who* or *that*, *they who* or *that* ; as *aquêle que ama a virtúde he feliz*, he who loves virtue is happy ; *aquêlles que desprézaõ a sciência não conhecem o valor d'ella*, they who despise learning know not the value of it. You must observe, that when *aquêle*, *aquella*, &c. are preceded by *este*, *esta*, &c. then *este* signifies the last thing or person spoken of, and *aquêle*, &c. the first ; as *Cárlos foi grande, Frederico ambicioso, este valente, aquêle poderoso*, Charles was great, Frederic ambitious, the first powerful, the last courageous.

The pronoun possessive absolute *his*, *her*, *their*, construed in English with a noun followed by the pronoun relative *who* or *that* before a verb, is made into Portuguese by the genitive of the pronouns *aquêle*, *aquella*, *aquêlles*, followed by *que*, and the possessive is left out ; as, all men blame his manners who often says that, which himself does not think, *tódo o mundo censúra o procedimêto daquêle que tem por costúme dizêr o que não tem no pensamêto* ; Providence does not prosper their labours that slight their best friends, *a Providência não abencôa o trabalho daquêlles que desprézaõ os seus melhores amigos*.

The English pronoun *such* followed by *as* or *that* (but not governed of the verb substantive *to be*), is also rendered into Portuguese by *aquêlles que*, or *aquêlles táes que*, or *aquêle que* ; as, such as do not love virtue do not know it, *aquêlles or aquêlles táes que não amaõ a virtúde, não a conhecem*.

The pronouns *isso*, *isto*, *aquillo*, before *que*, are Englished by *what* ; as *elle diz aquillo que sábe*, he says what he knows.



*Aquella* is also used to shew contempt; as *que quer aquella homem?* What does that man desire?

*Of the Pronouns interrogative.*

The pronouns interrogative serve to ask questions, and are as follows; who, what, which, *quem*, *que*, *qual*.

Example.

|                               |                                     |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>Quem hé?</i>               | who is it?                          |
| <i>Quem vos disse isso?</i>   | who told you so?                    |
| <i>Que queréis?</i>           | what will you have?                 |
| <i>Com que se sustenta?</i>   | what does he maintain himself with? |
| <i>Que estais fazendo?</i>    | what are you doing?                 |
| <i>De que se faz isto?</i>    | from what is this done?             |
| <i>Que livro he este?</i>     | what book is this?                  |
| <i>Que negócios tendes?</i>   | what affairs have you?              |
| <i>Que casa hé?</i>           | what house is it?                   |
| <i>De qual falláis vós?</i>   | which do you speak of?              |
| <i>Qual d'elles?</i>          | which of them?                      |
| <i>Quem or qual dos dous?</i> | which or whether of the two?        |

These pronouns are thus declined.

| Singular and Plural.<br>Masculine and Feminine. |            | Singular and Plural.<br>Masculine and Feminine. |            |
|-------------------------------------------------|------------|-------------------------------------------------|------------|
| Nom. <i>quem</i> ,                              | who.       | Nom. <i>que</i> ,                               | what.      |
| Gen. <i>de quem</i> ,                           | of whom.   | Gen. <i>de que</i> ,                            | of what.   |
| Dat. <i>a quem</i> ,                            | to whom.   | Dat. <i>a que</i> ,                             | to what.   |
| Acc. <i>quem</i> ,                              | whom.      | Acc. <i>que</i> ,                               | what.      |
| Abl. <i>de quem</i> ,                           | from whom. | Abl. <i>de que</i> ,                            | from what. |

*Qual* is used in speaking both of persons and things, and is declined thus:

| Singular.             | Masculine and Feminine. |
|-----------------------|-------------------------|
| Nom. <i>qual</i> ,    | which or what.          |
| Gen. <i>de qual</i> , | of which or what.       |
| Dat. <i>á qual</i> ,  | to which or what.       |
| Acc. <i>qual</i> ,    | which or what.          |
| Abl. <i>da qual</i> , | from which or what.     |



## Plural. Masculine and Feminine.

|      |                  |                            |
|------|------------------|----------------------------|
| Nom. | <i>quâes,</i>    | which <i>or</i> what.      |
| Gen. | <i>de quâes,</i> | of which <i>or</i> what.   |
| Dat. | <i>a quâes,</i>  | to which <i>or</i> what.   |
| Acc. | <i>quâes,</i>    | which <i>or</i> what.      |
| Abl. | <i>de quâes,</i> | from which <i>or</i> what. |

Observe, that when the word *quer* is added to *quem*, or *qual*, it quite alters the meaning; *quemquer* signifying whoever, or any person, and *qualquer* any one, whether man, woman, or thing; and sometimes they add the participle *que* to them, as *quemquer, que, &c.*

*Of the Pronouns relative.*

Pronouns relative are those which shew the relation, or reference, which a noun has to what follows it. They are the following; *qual*, which; *que*, that or which; *cújo*, whose; *quem*, who.

*Qual*, in a sense of comparison, is followed by *tal*, and then *qual* is Englished by *as*, and *tal* by *of*.

N. B. When *qual* is only a relative, it is declined with the definite articles *o* or *a*.

The pronoun *que* may be relative both to persons and things, and is common to all numbers, genders, and cases; as *o livro que*, the book which; *os livros que*, the books which; *a carta que*, the letter which; *as cartas que*, the letters which; *o mestre que ensina*, the master who teacheth; *a molhér que tenho*, the wife that I have; *o homem que eu amo*, the man whom I love; and it is declined thus:

## Singular and Plural.

|      |                |                                 |
|------|----------------|---------------------------------|
| Nom. | <i>que,</i>    | which <i>or</i> who.            |
| Gen. | <i>de que,</i> | of which <i>or</i> of whom.     |
| Dat. | <i>a que,</i>  | to which <i>or</i> to whom.     |
| Acc. | <i>que,</i>    | which <i>or</i> whom.           |
| Abl. | <i>de que,</i> | from which <i>or</i> from whom. |



*Que* is sometimes a conjunction; as *crêyo que hirêi*, I believe that I shall go. See the Syntax.

The relative *quem*, who, is only relative to persons; but in the nominative case of the singular is rendered into English by *he who*, or *who*; as, *quem fállá dêve considerár*, &c. he who speaks ought to consider, &c. *êu naõ sêi quem*, I know not who.

Observe, that *quem* is common to all numbers, genders, and cases; but it has no nominative in the plural.

*Quem* is declined thus:

Singular and Plural.

|      |                  |                                 |
|------|------------------|---------------------------------|
| Nom. | <i>quem</i> ,    | he who, or she who, or whoever. |
| Gen. | <i>de quem</i> , | of whom.                        |
| Dat. | <i>a quem</i> ,  | to whom.                        |
| Acc. | <i>quem</i> ,    | whom.                           |
| Abl. | <i>de quem</i> , | from whom.                      |

*Quem* is sometimes a particle disjunctive, and then it signifies *some*; as, *quem cânta, e quem ri*, some sing, and some laugh; and sometimes it serves to exclamation; as *quem me dêra estár em casa!* how fain would I be at home!

*Cújo, cúja*, is declined thus:

|       | Masc.                 | Fem.             |             |
|-------|-----------------------|------------------|-------------|
| Sing. | Nom. <i>cújo</i> ,    | <i>cúja</i> ,    | whose.      |
|       | Gen. <i>de cújo</i> , | <i>de cúja</i> , | of whose.   |
|       | Dat. <i>a cújo</i> ,  | <i>a cúja</i> ,  | to whose.   |
|       | Acc. <i>cújo</i> ,    | <i>cúja</i> ,    | whose.      |
|       | Abl. <i>de cújo</i> , | <i>de cúja</i> , | from whose. |

The plural is formed by adding *s* to the singular; as, *cújos, cujas*, whose, &c.

Note, that *cújo* must be followed by the noun or term which it refers to, and with which it agrees in gender, number and case; as, *a pessoa cúja reputação vós admiráis*, the person whose reputation you wonder at; *o céu cújo soccorro núnca fálta*, heaven, whose assistance never fails; *cúja bêlla cára*, whose fair visage: *cújas bellêzas*, whose beauties; *a cújo*



*páty* to whose father ; *de cújos irmãos tenho recebido*, from whose brothers I have received. Observe also that *cújo* is not to be repeated, though the terms which it refers to be of different number ; as, *cúja valia e óbras*, whose value and deeds.

Note, that, *o, a, os, as, lo, la, &c.* are also pronouns relative, when joined to verbs. See the syntax, chap. iv.

### *Of the improper Pronouns.*

These pronouns are called *improper*, because indeed they are not properly pronouns, but have a great resemblance with pronouns, as well as with adjectives. They are the following :

|                      |                  |
|----------------------|------------------|
| <i>Hum,</i>          | one.             |
| <i>Alguém,</i>       | somebody.        |
| <i>Algúm,</i>        | some.            |
| <i>Ninguém,</i>      | nobody.          |
| <i>Nenhúm,</i>       | none.            |
| <i>Cadahúm,</i>      | every one, each. |
| <i>Cáda,</i>         | every.           |
| <i>Outro, outra,</i> | other.           |
| <i>Outrem,</i>       | another.         |

*Qualquer*, any one ; whether man, or woman, or thing.

*Qualquer dos dous*, either of the two, or whethersoever of the two.

*Quemquer*, whoever, or any person.

*Tódo*, all, or every. *Tal*, such, &c.

*Hum* has two terminations, viz. *hum, húma* ; and in the plural it makes *huns*, and *húmas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

*Alguém* has only one termination, and it is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article.

*Algúm* has two terminations, viz. *algúm, algúma* ; and in the plural, *algúns, algúmas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

*Ninguém* has only one termination, and is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article ; *ninguém o cré*, nobody believes it.



*Nenhúm* has two terminations, viz. *nenhúmas*, *nenhúma*, and in the plural *nenhúns*, *nenhúmas*; and is only declinable with the indefinite article; *nenhúm hómem*, no man; *de nenhúm effeito*, of no effect.

*Cadahúm* has two terminations. viz. *cadahúm*, *cadahúma*; but it has no plural, and is only declinable with the indefinite article.

*Cáda* has but one termination. It has no plural, and is only declinable with the indefinite article: *cáda día*, every day; *cáda mez*, every month.

*Outro* has two terminations, viz. *óutro*, *óutra*; and in the plural, *óutros*, *óutras*. It is declinable both with the definite and indefinite articles.

*Outrem* has only one termination. It has no plural, and takes the indefinite article.

*Qualquér* has but one termination. It makes *quaesquér* in the plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. *Qualquér* is said both of persons and things.

*Quemquér* has but one termination. It has no plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. It is rendered in English by *any body*: *quemquér vos dirá*, any body will tell you. *Quemquér* is used in speaking of a person.

*Tódo* has two terminations, viz. *tódo*, *tóda*; and in the plural, *tódos*, *tódas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article. It is sometimes taken substantively, and then it signifies *the whole*; as *o tódo hé mayór que a sua parte*, the whole is bigger than its part.

*Tal* has only one termination. It makes *tâes* in the plural, and it is declined with the indefinite article. It is common to the masculine and to the feminine genders; and sometimes it is joined to *qual*; as, *tal qual elle hé*, such as it is.

*Tal* supplies sometimes the place of the person whose name is not specified; as, *hum tal velháco deve sér castigádo*, such a rogue ought to be punished.



## CHAP. IV.

## OF VERBS.

**T**HE verb is a part of speech which serves to express that which is attributed to the subject in denoting the *being* or *condition* of the things and persons spoken of, the *actions* which they do, or the *impressions* they receive.

The first and the most general division of Verbs is into personal and impersonal.

A verb personal is conjugated by three persons.

## Example.

|       |   |                    |              |
|-------|---|--------------------|--------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu amo,</i>     | I love.      |
|       |   | <i>tu amas,</i>    | thou lovest. |
|       |   | <i>elle ama,</i>   | he loves.    |
| Plur. | { | <i>nós amamos,</i> | we love.     |
|       |   | <i>vós amais,</i>  | ye love.     |
|       |   | <i>elles amaõ,</i> | they love.   |

A verb impersonal is conjugated by the third person of the singular number only; as, *chóve*, it rains, *convém*, it behoves.

A verb, considered in regard to the syntax, is of four sorts, viz. active, passive, neuter, and reciprocal.

Some of the verbs are regular, and others irregular.

Some are also called auxiliary verbs. We shall give their definitions in their proper places.

Before you begin to learn the conjugations, it will be proper to observe, that all the verbs may be



conjugated with the pronouns personal, *eu, tu, elle,* &c. or without them.

*Of the auxiliary Verbs.*

The auxiliary verbs are so called, because they help to the conjugation of other verbs. They are four in Portuguese, viz. *havêr, têr, to have; sér, estár, to be.* The auxiliary verb *sér, to be,* is also called the verb substantive, because it affirms what the subject is, and is always followed by a noun that particularizes what that subject is; as *sér rico, prudente, douto, &c. to be rich, wise, learned, &c.*

*The Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb têr, or havêr, to have.*

The Indicative Mood.

Present.

|       |   |                                         |                 |
|-------|---|-----------------------------------------|-----------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu tenho, ou hey,</i>                | I have.         |
|       |   | <i>tu tens, ou has,</i>                 | thou hast.      |
|       |   | <i>elle tém, ou há,</i>                 | he has or hath. |
| Plur. | { | <i>nos temos, ou havêmos, ou hêmos,</i> | we have.        |
|       |   | <i>vos tendes, ou havéis, ou héis,</i>  | you have.       |
|       |   | <i>êlles tém, ou haõ,</i>               | they have.      |

Preterimperfect.

|       |   |                                              |             |
|-------|---|----------------------------------------------|-------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu tinha, ou havia, ou hía,</i>           | I had.      |
|       |   | <i>tu tinhas, ou havías, ou hías,</i>        | thou hadst. |
|       |   | <i>elle tinha, ou havia, ou hía,</i>         | he had.     |
| Plur. | { | <i>nós tínhamos, ou havíamos, ou híamos,</i> | we had.     |
|       |   | <i>vós tínhieis, ou havíeis, ou híeis,</i>   | you had.    |
|       |   | <i>êlles tinhaõ, ou haviaõ, ou híaõ,</i>     | they had.   |

Preterperfect definite.

|       |   |                                    |             |
|-------|---|------------------------------------|-------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu tive, ou houve,</i>          | I had.      |
|       |   | <i>tu tiveste, ou houveste,</i>    | thou hadst. |
|       |   | <i>elle teve, ou houve,</i>        | he had.     |
| Plur. | { | <i>nós tivêmos, ou houvêmos,</i>   | we had.     |
|       |   | <i>vós tivêstes, ou houvêstes,</i> | you had.    |
|       |   | <i>êlles tivêraõ ou hováraõ,</i>   | they had.   |



## Preterperfect.

|       |   |                         |                |
|-------|---|-------------------------|----------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu tenho tido,</i>   | I have had.    |
|       |   | <i>tu tens tido,</i>    | thou hast had. |
|       |   | <i>elle tem tido,</i>   | he has had.    |
| Plur. | { | <i>nós temos tido,</i>  | we have had.   |
|       |   | <i>vós tendes tido,</i> | you have had.  |
|       |   | <i>elles tem tido,</i>  | they have had. |

## Preterpluperfect.

|       |   |                           |               |
|-------|---|---------------------------|---------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu tinha tido,</i>     | I had had.    |
|       |   | <i>tu tinhas tido,</i>    | thou had had. |
|       |   | <i>elle tinha tido,</i>   | he had had.   |
| Plur. | { | <i>nós tínhamos tido,</i> | we had had.   |
|       |   | <i>vós tínkieis tido,</i> | you had had.  |
|       |   | <i>elles tinhaõ tido,</i> | they had had. |

This tense may also be conjugated thus; *tivéra, tivéras, tivéra, tivéramos, tivéreis, tivéraõ.*

## First Future.

|       |   |                                   |                          |
|-------|---|-----------------------------------|--------------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu terêi, ou haverêi,</i>      | I shall or will have.    |
|       |   | <i>tu terás, ou haverás,</i>      | thou shalt or wilt have. |
|       |   | <i>elle terá, ou haverá,</i>      | he shall or wilt have.   |
| Plur. | { | <i>nós terêmos, ou haverêmos,</i> | we shall or will have.   |
|       |   | <i>vós terêis, ou haverêis,</i>   | ye shall or will have.   |
|       |   | <i>elles teráõ, ou haveráõ,</i>   | they shall or will have. |

## Second Future.

Sing. *eu hei de têr, ou havêr, &c.* I must have, &c.

## Third Future.

Sing. *eu haverêi de têr, ou havêr, &c.* I shall be obliged to have, &c.

## Fourth Future.

Sing. *eu havia de têr, ou havêr, &c.* I was to have, &c.

## Imperative.

|       |   |                                  |                |
|-------|---|----------------------------------|----------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>têm tu, ou hájas tu,</i>      | have thou.     |
|       |   | <i>tênhã elle, ou hája elle,</i> | let him have.  |
| Plur. | { | <i>tenhãmos, ou hajãmos nós,</i> | let us have.   |
|       |   | <i>tênde, ou havêi, vós,</i>     | have ye.       |
|       |   | <i>tênhaõ, ou hájaõ elles,</i>   | let them have. |



The imperative has no first person, because it is impossible to command one's self.

Optative and Subjunctive.

I join them together, because their tenses are similar.

Present.

|       |   |                                                                       |
|-------|---|-----------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>que eu tenha, ou haja,</i> that I have, <i>or</i> that I may have. |
|       |   | <i>que tu tenha, ou haja,</i> thou hast, <i>or</i> mayest have.       |
|       |   | <i>que elle tenha, ou haja,</i> he has, <i>or</i> may have.           |
| Plur. | { | <i>que nós tenhamos, ou hajamos,</i> we have, <i>or</i> may have.     |
|       |   | <i>que vós tenhamos, ou hajamos,</i> ye have, <i>or</i> may have.     |
|       |   | <i>que elles tenhamos, ou hajamos,</i> they have, <i>or</i> may have. |

First Preterimperfect.

|       |   |                                         |   |                                                        |
|-------|---|-----------------------------------------|---|--------------------------------------------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>que eu tivéra or tivésse,</i>        | } | that I had, <i>or</i> I should, would, &c. have, &c.   |
|       |   | <i>houvéra, or houvésse,</i>            |   |                                                        |
|       |   | <i>que tu tivéras or tivesses,</i>      |   |                                                        |
|       |   | <i>houvéras or houvesses,</i>           |   |                                                        |
| Plur. | { | <i>que elle tivéra or tivésse,</i>      | } | that we had, <i>or</i> we should, would, &c. have, &c. |
|       |   | <i>houvéra or houvésse,</i>             |   |                                                        |
|       |   | <i>que nós tivéramos or tivéssemos,</i> |   |                                                        |
|       |   | <i>houvéramos or houvéssemos,</i>       |   |                                                        |
| Plur. | { | <i>que vós tivéreis or tivésseis,</i>   | } | that we had, <i>or</i> we should, would, &c. have, &c. |
|       |   | <i>houvéreis or houvésseis,</i>         |   |                                                        |
|       |   | <i>que elles tivérao or tivéssem,</i>   |   |                                                        |
|       |   | <i>houvérao or houvéssem,</i>           |   |                                                        |

Second Preterimperfect.

|       |   |                                    |   |                                             |
|-------|---|------------------------------------|---|---------------------------------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu teria ou haveria,</i>        | } | I should, would, <i>or</i> could have, &c.  |
|       |   | <i>tu terias ou haverias,</i>      |   |                                             |
|       |   | <i>elle teria ou haveria,</i>      |   |                                             |
| Plur. | { | <i>nós teriamos ou haveriamos,</i> | } | we should, would, <i>or</i> could have, &c. |
|       |   | <i>vós teríeis ou haveríeis,</i>   |   |                                             |
|       |   | <i>elles teriaõ ou haveriaõ,</i>   |   |                                             |

Preterperfect.

|       |   |                                           |   |                  |
|-------|---|-------------------------------------------|---|------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>que eu tenha tido ou havido,</i>       | } | that I have had. |
|       |   | <i>que tu tenha tido ou havido,</i>       |   | thou hast had.   |
|       |   | <i>que elle tenha tido ou havido,</i>     |   | he has had.      |
| Plur. | { | <i>que nós tenhamos tido ou havido,</i>   | } | we have had.     |
|       |   | <i>que vós tenhamos tido ou havido,</i>   |   | you have had.    |
|       |   | <i>que elles tenhamos tido ou havido,</i> |   | they have had.   |



## Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

|       |                                                                                                                       |                  |                      |
|-------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------|----------------------|
| Sing. | { <i>se eu tivéra ou tivésse</i><br><i>se tu tivéras ou tivesses</i><br><i>se elle tivéra ou tivésse</i>              | } <i>tído,</i> { | if I had had,<br>&c. |
| Plur. | { <i>se nós tivéramos ou tivéssemos</i><br><i>se vós tivéreis ou tivésseis</i><br><i>se elles tivéraõ ou tivéssem</i> |                  |                      |

## Second Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

|       |                                                                    |                  |                        |
|-------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------|------------------------|
| Sing. | { <i>eu teria</i><br><i>tu terias</i><br><i>elle teria</i>         | } <i>tído,</i> { | I should have had, &c. |
| Plur. | { <i>nós teríamos</i><br><i>vós teríeis</i><br><i>elles teriaõ</i> |                  |                        |

## First Future.

|       |                                                                            |                                                          |
|-------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------|
| Sing. | { <i>se eu tivér,</i><br><i>tu tivéres,</i><br><i>elle tivér,</i>          | if I shall have.<br>thou shalt have.<br>he shall have.   |
| Plur. | { <i>se nós tivérmos,</i><br><i>vós tivérdes,</i><br><i>elles tivérem,</i> | if we shall have.<br>you shall have.<br>they shall have. |

This tense may be conjugated also thus: *houvér, houvéres, houvér; houvérmos, houvérdes, houvérem.* See the synt. of the auxiliary Verbs.

## Second Future.

It is composed of the First Future and the Participle.

|       |                                                        |                  |                          |
|-------|--------------------------------------------------------|------------------|--------------------------|
| Sing. | { <i>se eu tivér</i><br><i>tivéres</i><br><i>tivér</i> | } <i>tído,</i> { | if I shall have had, &c. |
| Plur. | { <i>tivérmos</i><br><i>tivérdes</i><br><i>tivérem</i> |                  |                          |

## Infinitive Mood.

## Present.

*tér,* to have.



Preterperfect.

*têr tido*, to have had.

Participles.

Preterit: Sing. *tido*, *tida*. Plur. *tidos*, *tidas*, had.

Future.

*que há de têr*, that is to have.

Gerunds.

*têndo*, having or in having. *têndo*, *tido*, having had.

Supine.

It is supplied in Portuguese by the prepositions *a* or *para*, and the verb in the infinitive; as,  
*para têr*, to have.

In like manner are conjugated its compounds *contêno*, *detêno*, *mantêno*, &c.

*Remarks upon the auxiliary verb, têr, to have.*

The verb *têr*, to have, is an auxiliary or helping verb, which serves to conjugate other verbs: example, *têr lido*, to have read; *nós têmos feito*, we have done; *êles têm visto*, they have seen, &c.

When the verb *têr* is followed by the participle *que*, before an infinitive mood, it denotes the duty, inclination, &c. of doing any thing; as, *que têndes que fazer?* what have you to do? *têno que fazer húma visita*, I must pay a visit; *êlle tem muito que dizêrvos*, he has a great many things to tell you.

*Of the auxiliary verb havêr.*

This is one of the most useful verbs in Portuguese, since it is not only auxiliary to itself, as *eu hei de havêr*, I must have; *eu havia de havêr*, I was to have, &c. but also to all sorts of verbs; as *eu hei de cantar*, I will sing, or I must sing, or I am to sing; *eu hei de hir*, I must go; *eu havia de fallar*, I was to speak; *eu hei de escrevêr*, I must write, &c. In which examples you may see that the verb *havêr*, when auxiliary, has generally the particle *de* and the verb of the infinitive mood after it; and



that then it denotes a firm resolution, possibility, or necessity of doing any thing, therefore it is not to be rendered into English by the verb *to have*; as you may see by the second, third, and fourth future of the indicative mood.

The verb *havêr*, with the particle *de*, and the verb *sêr*, to be, after it, is an auxiliary both to the passive verbs, and sometimes to the verb *sêr* itself; as, *hêi de sêr feliz*, I shall be happy: *O príncipe ha de sêr respeitádo*, the prince ought to be, or must be, respected.

The same verb *havêr* is also auxiliary without the particle *de*; but then it is put after the verb to which it is auxiliary; and so they say, *dárvos-hêi*, I will give you; *dárlhe-hêi*, I will give to him, &c. In which examples you may observe, that the auxiliary verb *havêr* is put after the verb and the pronouns conjunctive, *te*, *lhe*, &c. and sometimes it is put after the verbs and the pronoun mixed; as, *mandár volo-hêi*, I'll send it to you. Take notice, however, that in the foregoing examples the verb *havêr* may be put before the other verb; but then it requires the particle *de*, and has a different meaning; as, in the first example, you may say, *hêi de dárvos*, I must give to you. You must also observe, that when the indicative present of the auxiliary verb *havêr* is auxiliary to other verbs, as in the foregoing examples, you must cut off the last letters *ei* from the future of the verbs: and so you may say *dárlhe-hêi*, or *hêi de dárlhe*; but not *darêi lhe-hêi*, nor *hêi de darêi lhe*. Moreover, when the preterimperfect *havia* is to be auxiliary to any verb, and it is to be placed after it, you must make use of *hía*, *hías*, *hía*, *híamos*, *híeis*, *híão*; and so you may say, *dar-lhe-hía*, *hías*, &c. but not *dar-lhe-havia*, *hávias*, &c. I should give to him, thou shouldst, &c.

We shall not be at a loss how to express the interrogation in Portuguese, if we do but put the pronouns personal after the verbs, as in English, and



we shall never mistake in saying *terei eu?* shall I have? *temos nós?* have we? *tens tu?* hast thou? *tem elle?* has he? but sometimes they do not mention the pronouns at all; as, *que faremos?* what shall we do? *cantarémos?* shall we sing?

Observe, that *haver* is sometimes Englished by *to be*; as, *que ha de sér de mim?* what is to become of me?

When we speak by negation, we must use the word *naõ* before the verb; as, *naõ tenho*, I have not; *vós naõ conhecéis*, you do not know, &c.

The conjugation of the auxiliary verb *sér*, or *estár*, to be.

Indicative.

Present.

|       |   |                                      |           |
|-------|---|--------------------------------------|-----------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu sou</i> or <i>estou</i> ,      | I am.     |
|       |   | <i>tu és</i> or <i>estás</i> ,       | thou art. |
|       |   | <i>elle hé</i> or <i>está</i> ,      | he is.    |
| Plur. | { | <i>nós somos</i> or <i>estâmos</i> , | we are.   |
|       |   | <i>vós sois</i> or <i>estâis</i> ,   | you are.  |
|       |   | <i>elles são</i> or <i>estão</i> ,   | they are. |

Preterimperfect.

*Preterimperfect*

|       |   |                                         |            |
|-------|---|-----------------------------------------|------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu era</i> or <i>estava</i> ,        | I was.     |
|       |   | <i>eras</i> or <i>estavas</i> ,         | thou wast. |
|       |   | <i>era</i> or <i>estava</i> ,           | he was.    |
| Plur. | { | <i>nós éramos</i> or <i>estávamos</i> , | we were.   |
|       |   | <i>ereis</i> or <i>estáveis</i> ,       | you were.  |
|       |   | <i>eraõ</i> or <i>estávaõ</i> ,         | they were. |

Preterperfect definite.

|       |   |                                      |            |
|-------|---|--------------------------------------|------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu fui</i> or <i>estive</i> ,     | I was.     |
|       |   | <i>foste</i> or <i>estiveste</i> ,   | thou wast. |
|       |   | <i>fôí</i> or <i>estêve</i> ,        | he was.    |
| Plur. | { | <i>fômos</i> or <i>estivêmos</i> ,   | we were.   |
|       |   | <i>fôstes</i> or <i>estivêstes</i> , | you were.  |
|       |   | <i>fôraõ</i> or <i>estivêraõ</i> ,   | they were. |



## Preterperfect.

It is composed of the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *tér*, to have, and its own participle, *sído*, or *estado*.

## Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the preterimperfect indicative, and the participle *sído*, or *estado*.

|       |   |                                         |                  |
|-------|---|-----------------------------------------|------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu tinha sido</i> or <i>estado</i> , | I had been.      |
|       |   | <i>tinhas sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,   | thou hadst been. |
|       |   | <i>tinha sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,    | he had been.     |
| Plur. | { | <i>tínhamos sido</i> or <i>estado</i> , | we had been.     |
|       |   | <i>tínheis sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,  | you had been.    |
|       |   | <i>tinhaõ sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,   | they had been.   |

This tense may also be conjugated thus ; *fôra*, or *estivêra* ; *fôras*, or *estivêras* ; *fôra*, or *estivêra* ; *fôramos*, or *estivêramos* ; *fôreis*, or *estivêreis* ; *fôraõ*, or *estivêraõ*.

## Future.

|       |   |                                        |                     |
|-------|---|----------------------------------------|---------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu serêi</i> or <i>estarei</i> ,    | I shall or will be. |
|       |   | <i>serás</i> or <i>estarás</i> ,       | thou shalt be.      |
|       |   | <i>será</i> or <i>estará</i> ,         | he shall be.        |
| Plur. | { | <i>serêmos</i> , or <i>estaremos</i> , | we shall be.        |
|       |   | <i>serêis</i> or <i>estareis</i> ,     | you shall be.       |
|       |   | <i>serão</i> or <i>estaráõ</i> ,       | they shall be.      |

## Imperative.

|       |   |                                                 |              |
|-------|---|-------------------------------------------------|--------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>sê tu</i> or <i>está</i> ,                   | be thou.     |
|       |   | <i>sêja</i> or <i>estêja</i> <i>elle</i> ,      | let him be.  |
| Plur. | { | <i>sejâmos</i> or <i>estejâmos</i> <i>nós</i> , | let us be.   |
|       |   | <i>sêde</i> or <i>estái</i> <i>vós</i> ,        | be you.      |
|       |   | <i>sêjaõ</i> or <i>estêjaõ</i> <i>êlles</i> ,   | let them be. |

## Optative and Subjunctive.

## Present.

|       |   |                                       |                              |
|-------|---|---------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>que eu sêja</i> or <i>estêja</i> , | that I may be, or that I be. |
|       |   | <i>sejas</i> or <i>estêjas</i> ,      | thou mayst be, or be.        |
|       |   | <i>sêja</i> or <i>estêja</i> ,        | he may be, &c.               |



|       |   |                                      |              |
|-------|---|--------------------------------------|--------------|
| Plur. | { | <i>sejâmos</i> or <i>estejâmos</i> , | we may be.   |
|       |   | <i>sejâis</i> , or <i>estejâis</i> , | you may be.  |
|       |   | <i>sêjaõ</i> or <i>estêjaõ</i> ,     | they may be. |

First Preterimperfect.

|       |   |                                             |                            |
|-------|---|---------------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>que eu fôra</i> or <i>fôsse</i> ,        | } that I were or might be. |
|       |   | <i>estivêra</i> or <i>estivêsse</i> ,       |                            |
|       |   | <i>fôras</i> or <i>fôsses</i> ,             | } thou wert.               |
| Plur. | { | <i>estivêras</i> or <i>estivêsses</i> ,     |                            |
|       |   | <i>fôra</i> or <i>fôsse</i> ,               | } he were.                 |
|       |   | <i>estivêra</i> or <i>estivêsse</i> ,       |                            |
| Plur. | { | <i>que nós fôramos</i> or <i>fôssemos</i> , | } that we were.            |
|       |   | <i>estivêramos</i> or <i>estivêssemos</i> , |                            |
|       |   | <i>fôreis</i> or <i>fôsseis</i> ,           | } you were.                |
|       |   | <i>estivêreis</i> , or <i>estivêsseis</i> , |                            |
|       |   | <i>fôraõ</i> or <i>fôssem</i> ,             | } they were.               |
|       |   | <i>estivêraõ</i> or <i>estivêssem</i> ,     |                            |

Second Preterimperfect.

|       |   |                                        |                       |
|-------|---|----------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu seria</i> or <i>estaria</i> ,    | I should or would be. |
|       |   | <i>serias</i> or <i>estarias</i> ,     | thou shouldest be.    |
|       |   | <i>seria</i> or <i>estaria</i> ,       | he should be.         |
| Plur. | { | <i>seríamos</i> or <i>estaríamos</i> , | we should be.         |
|       |   | <i>serieis</i> or <i>estarieis</i> ,   | you should be.        |
|       |   | <i>seriaõ</i> or <i>estariaõ</i> ,     | they should be.       |

Preterperfect.

It is compounded of the present conjunctive of the auxiliary verb *têr*, and its own participle *sido*, or *estádo*,

|       |   |                                             |                    |
|-------|---|---------------------------------------------|--------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>que eu tenha sido</i> or <i>estádo</i> , | that I have been.  |
|       |   | <i>tênhas sido</i> or <i>estádo</i> ,       | thou hast been.    |
|       |   | <i>tênhá sido</i> , &c.                     | he has been.       |
| Plur. | { | <i>tenhâmos sido</i> , &c.                  | that we have been. |
|       |   | <i>tenháis sido</i> , &c.                   | you have been.     |
|       |   | <i>tênhão sido</i> , &c.                    | they have been.    |

Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *têr*, and its own participle.



|       |   |                                |   |                  |
|-------|---|--------------------------------|---|------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>se eu tivéra or tivésse</i> | } | if I had been.   |
|       |   | <i>sido or estado</i>          |   |                  |
|       |   | <i>tivéras, &amp;c.</i>        |   | thou hadst been. |
| Plur. | { | <i>tivéra, &amp;c.</i>         |   | he had been.     |
|       |   | <i>tivéramos, &amp;c.</i>      |   | we had been.     |
|       |   | <i>tivéreis, &amp;c.</i>       |   | you had been.    |
|       |   | <i>tivéraõ, &amp;c.</i>        |   | they had been.   |

## Second Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *tér*, and its own participle *sido* or *estado*.

|       |   |                                |  |                              |
|-------|---|--------------------------------|--|------------------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>eu teria sido or estado</i> |  | I should or would have been. |
|       |   | <i>terias, &amp;c.</i>         |  | thou shouldst have been.     |
|       |   | <i>teria, &amp;c.</i>          |  | he should have been.         |
| Plur. | { | <i>teríamos, &amp;c.</i>       |  | we should have been.         |
|       |   | <i>teríeis, &amp;c.</i>        |  | you should have been.        |
|       |   | <i>teriaõ, &amp;c.</i>         |  | they should have been.       |

## First Future.

|       |   |                                  |  |                  |
|-------|---|----------------------------------|--|------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>quando eu fôr or estiver,</i> |  | when I shall be. |
|       |   | <i>fôres or estiveres,</i>       |  | thou shalt be.   |
|       |   | <i>fôr or estiver,</i>           |  | he shall be.     |
| Plur. | { | <i>fôrmos or estivermos,</i>     |  | we shall be.     |
|       |   | <i>fôrdes or estiverdes,</i>     |  | you shall be.    |
|       |   | <i>fôrem or estiverem,</i>       |  | they shall be.   |

## Second Future.

It is compounded of the future subjunctive of the verb *tér*, and its own participle.

|       |   |                                        |  |                         |
|-------|---|----------------------------------------|--|-------------------------|
| Sing. | { | <i>quando eu tiver sido or estado,</i> |  | when I shall have been. |
|       |   | <i>tiveres sido, &amp;c.</i>           |  | thou shalt have been.   |
|       |   | <i>tiver sido, &amp;c.</i>             |  | he shall have been.     |
| Plur. | { | <i>tivermos sido, &amp;c.</i>          |  | we shall have been.     |
|       |   | <i>tiverdes sido, &amp;c.</i>          |  | you shall have been.    |
|       |   | <i>tiverem sido, &amp;c.</i>           |  | they shall have been.   |

## Infinitive.

## Present.

*sêr or estâr ;* to be.

## Preterperfect.

*têr sido or estado,* to have been.



## Participles.

Pret.

*sído* or *estado*, been.

Future.

*que há de sér*, or *estar*, that is to be.

## Gerunds.

*sêdo* or *estãdo*, being.*têdo sido* or *estado*, having been.

## Supine.

*para sér* or *estar*, to be.Remarks upon the verb *sér* and *estar*.

There is a considerable difference between these verbs, *sér* and *estar*, both in Portuguese and Spanish. In English there is no word to distinguish them, since they are both rendered into English by *to be*. *Sér* signifies the proper and inseparable essence of a thing, its quality or quantity; *sér hómem*, to be a man; *sér bóm*, to be good; *sér álto*, to be tall; *sér lárgo*, to be wide; *sér bráncó*, to be white, &c. But *estar* denotes a place, or any adventitious quality; as, *estar em Lóndres*, to be in London; *estar de saúde*, to be in health; *estar fríó*, to be cold; *estar quênte*, to be warm; *estar doênte*, to be sick; *estar infadádo*, to be angry; *estar allêgre*, to be merry, &c.

Take notice, that you may use *estar* before the gerunds, but not *sér*; therefore you may say, *estou fallãdo, lendo*, &c. I am speaking, reading, &c, but not *sou fallãdo*, &c.

*The three Conjugations of regular Active Verbs.*

A regular verb is such as is confined to general rules in its conjugation.



A verb active denotes the action or impression of the subject, and governs a noun which is the object of that action or impression ; as, *amár a virtúde*, to love virtue ; *recebêr cartas*, to receive letters.

The regular Portuguese verbs have three different terminations in the infinitive ; to wit, in *ar*, *er*, *ir* ; as, *amár*, to love ; *temêr*, to fear ; *admittir*, to admit.

*An easy Method of learning to conjugate the Portuguese Verbs.*

I have reduced all the tenses of the Portuguese verbs to eight ; four of which are general, and have the same terminations in all the verbs ; and the other four may be likewise made general by changing some letters, and all the conjugations reduced to one.

The general tenses are, the future indicative, the first and second preterimperfect subjunctive, and the first future subjunctive.

The future indicative is terminated in all the verbs, in

*réi, rás, rá ; rémos, réis, raõ.*

The imperfect subjunctive, in

*ra or sse, ras or sses, ra or sse ; rámos or ssemos, réis or sséis, raõ or ssem.*

The second imperfect, in

*ría, rías, ría ; ríamos, ríeis, ríaõ.*

The first future subjunctive, in

*es, mos, des, em.*

Note, that I have only put the termination of the second person singular of the future subjunctive, because the first and third of the same number are like their respective infinitives of the three conjugations, which however keep both their last consonant



and vowel before the terminations I have marked for the second person singular, and for the whole plural. As to the future indicative, you have nothing to do but add *éi* to the respective present infinitive of the three conjugations, in order to form the first person singular; and if you add to the same infinitive present *as*, you will form the second person singular of it, and so of all the rest, by adding to the infinitive present, *a*, *emos*, *eis*, *aõ*.

The imperfect subjunctive has two terminations for every person, both in the singular and plural; but if you cut off the last consonant *r* of the infinitive, and then add to it the terminations above-mentioned, you ~~shall~~<sup>will</sup> form the imperfect subjunctive, according to its two different terminations. Lastly, if you cut off the last consonant of the infinitive, and add to it the terminations above-mentioned, you will form the second imperfect subjunctive.

The present indicative of the three conjugations is formed by changing the last letters of the infinitive, viz. *ar*, *er*, *ir*, into *o*; as, *âmo*, *entêdo*, *admitto*, from *amâr*, *entendêr*, *admittîr*.

The preterimperfect indicative is formed in the first conjugation, by changing the last consonant of the infinitive, viz. *r*, into *va*, *vas*, *va*, *vâmos*, *véis*, *vaõ*; but in the second conjugation it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *ia*, *ias*, *ia*, *íamos*, *ieis*, *iaõ*; and in the third by changing the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into, *a*, *as*, *a*; *âmos*, *éis*, *aõ*.

The perfect definite in the first conjugation is formed by changing the termination *ar* of the infinitive into *éi*, *âste*, *ôu*, *âmos*, *âstes*, *âraõ*; and in the second conjugation, it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *i*, *éste*, *éo*, *émos*, *éstes*, *éraõ*. In the third conjugation, the same tense



is formed by changing the termination *ir* of the infinitive into *í, íste, ío, ímos, ístes, íraõ*.

The present subjunctive in the first conjugation is formed by changing the termination *ar* of the infinitive into *e, es, e, émos, éis, em*; and in the second conjugation, it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *a, as, a, ámos, áis, aõ*. In the third conjugation, the same tense is formed by changing the termination *ir* of the infinitive into the same terminations, *a, as, a, &c.*

As to the imperative mood, you may only observe, that the second person singular is always the same as the third person singular of the present indicative, in all the conjugations.

The participles of the preterperfect tense in the first conjugation are formed by changing the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into *do* for the masculine, and *da* for the feminine; and into *dos, das*, for the plural; but when you come to verbs of the second conjugation, you change the termination *er* of the infinitive into *ído, ída, &c.*

In the third conjugation, you must change the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into *do* for the masculine, *da* for the feminine, &c.

### *The first Conjugation of the verbs in ar.*

#### The Indicative Mood.

I shall put the pronouns personal, *eu, tu, elle, &c.* no more.

#### Present.

|                |              |
|----------------|--------------|
| <i>ámo,</i>    | I love.      |
| <i>ámas,</i>   | thou lovest. |
| <i>áma,</i>    | he loves.    |
| <i>amâmos,</i> | we love.     |
| <i>amáis,</i>  | ye love.     |
| <i>ámaõ,</i>   | they love.   |



Preterimperfect.

|                  |                  |
|------------------|------------------|
| <i>amáva,</i>    | I did love.      |
| <i>amavas,</i>   | thou didst love. |
| <i>amáva,</i>    | he did love.     |
| <i>amávamos,</i> | we did love.     |
| <i>amáveis,</i>  | you did love.    |
| <i>amávaõ,</i>   | they did love.   |

Preterperfect definite.

|                 |               |
|-----------------|---------------|
| <i>améi,</i>    | I loved.      |
| <i>amáste,</i>  | thou lovedst. |
| <i>amôu,</i>    | he loved.     |
| <i>amámos,</i>  | we loved.     |
| <i>amástes,</i> | you loved.    |
| <i>amáraõ,</i>  | they loved.   |

Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *amádo*, and the present indicative auxiliary verb *ter*.

|                      |                  |
|----------------------|------------------|
| <i>ténho amádo,</i>  | I have loved.    |
| <i>tens amádo,</i>   | thou hast loved. |
| <i>tem amádo,</i>    | he has loved.    |
| <i>têmos amádo,</i>  | we have loved.   |
| <i>têndes amádo,</i> | you have loved.  |
| <i>tém amádo,</i>    | they have loved. |

Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *amádo*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

N. B. This tense may be conjugated thus, *amára*, *amáras*, *amára*, *amáramos*, *amáreis*, *amáraõ*, or,

|                        |                  |
|------------------------|------------------|
| <i>tinha amádo,</i>    | I had loved.     |
| <i>tínhas amádo,</i>   | thou hast loved. |
| <i>tinha amádo,</i>    | he had loved.    |
| <i>tínhamos amádo,</i> | we had loved.    |
| <i>tínheis amádo,</i>  | you had loved.   |
| <i>tinhaõ amádo,</i>   | they had loved.  |

Future.

|                |                       |
|----------------|-----------------------|
| <i>amaréi,</i> | I shall or will love. |
| <i>amarás,</i> | thou shalt love.      |
| <i>amará,</i>  | he shall love.        |



*amarémos,*  
*amaréis,*  
*amarão,*

we shall love.  
 you shall love.  
 they shall love.

## Imperative.

*âma tu,*  
*âme elle,*  
*amêmos nós,*  
*amáí vós,*  
*âmem êlles,*

love thou.  
 let him love.  
 let us love.  
 love you.  
 let them love.

## Optative and Subjunctive.

*que eu âme,*  
*âmes,*  
*âme,*  
*amêmos,*  
*améis,*  
*âmem,*

that I may love.  
 thou mayest love.  
 he may love.  
 we may love.  
 you may love.  
 they may love.

## First Preterimperfect.

*que eu amára, or amásse,*  
*amáras, or amásse,*  
*amára, or amásse,*  
*amáramos, or amássemos,*  
*amáreis or amásseis,*  
*amáraõ or amássem,*

that I might or could love.  
 they mightest love.  
 he might love.  
 we might love.  
 you might love.  
 they might love.

When we find the conjunction *if* before the indicative imperfect, we must use the imperfect of the subjunctive or optative, when we speak by way of wish or desire; as, If I did love, *se eu amásse*, or *amára*, and not *se eu amára*, if I had loved; if I had, *se eu tivéra, tivésse*, and not *se eu tinha*; and so in all the verbs.

## Second Preterimperfect.

*amaría,*  
*amarías,*  
*amaría,*  
*amaríamos,*  
*amaríeis,*  
*amaríaõ,*

I should love.  
 thou shouldst love.  
 he should love.  
 we should love.  
 you should love.  
 they should love.



Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amado* and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

|                            |                    |
|----------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>que eu tenha amado,</i> | that I have loved. |
| <i>têhas amado,</i>        | thou hast loved.   |
| <i>têha amado,</i>         | he has loved.      |
| <i>tenhamos amado,</i>     | we have loved.     |
| <i>tenhais amado,</i>      | you have loved.    |
| <i>têhaõ amado,</i>        | they have loved.   |

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amado* and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

|                                       |                   |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>se eu tivêra or tivésse amado,</i> | if I had loved.   |
| <i>tivêras or tivesses amado,</i>     | thou hadst loved. |
| <i>tivêra or tivésse amado,</i>       | he had loved.     |
| <i>tivêramos or tivéssemos amado,</i> | we had loved.     |
| <i>tivêreis or tivésseis amado,</i>   | you had loved.    |
| <i>tivêraõ or tivéssem amado,</i>     | they had loved.   |

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amado* and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

|                        |                           |
|------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>teria amado,</i>    | I should have loved.      |
| <i>terias amado,</i>   | thou shouldst have loved. |
| <i>teria amado,</i>    | he should have loved.     |
| <i>teríamos amado,</i> | we should have loved.     |
| <i>teríeis amado,</i>  | ye should have loved.     |
| <i>teriaõ amado,</i>   | they should have loved.   |

Future.

|                        |                    |
|------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>quando eu amar,</i> | when I shall love. |
| <i>amáres,</i>         | thou shalt love.   |
| <i>amar,</i>           | he shall love.     |
| <i>amármos,</i>        | we shall love.     |
| <i>amárdes,</i>        | you shall love.    |
| <i>amárem,</i>         | they shall love.   |



## Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *amado*, and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *têr*.

|                               |                          |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>quando eu tiver amado,</i> | when I shall have loved. |
| <i>tiveres amado,</i>         | thou shalt have loved.   |
| <i>tiver amado,</i>           | he shall have loved.     |
| <i>tivermos amado,</i>        | we shall have loved.     |
| <i>tiverdes amado,</i>        | you shall have loved.    |
| <i>tiverem amado,</i>         | they shall have loved.   |

## Infinitive.

## Present.

*amár,* to love.

## Preterperfect.

*têr amado,* to have loved.

## Participle.

## Present.

*que âma,* or *amãnte,* that loves.

## Pret.

*amado,* masc. *amada,* fem. loved.

## Future.

*que há de amár,* that is to love.

## Gerunds.

*amando,* loving.  
*têndo amado,* having loved.

## Supine.

*para amár,* to love.

Note, the verbs terminating in the infinitive in *cár* take *qu* in those tenses, where the *c* would otherwise meet with the vowel *e*; and those terminating in the infinitive in *gar* take an *u* in those tenses, where the *g* would otherwise meet with the same vowel *e*; that is to say, in the first person singular of the preterperfect definite, in the third person



singular, in the first and third plural of the imperative, and in the whole present subjunctive, which are the tenses I shall give you by way of example in the verbs *peccár* and *pagár*.

*Peccár*, to sin.

Preterperfect definite.

*eu pequêi*, I sinned—instead of *peccêi*.

Imperative.

*péque êlle*, let him sin: *pequêmos nós*, let us sin; *péquem êlles*, let them sin—and not *pécce êlle*, &c.

Present subjunctive.

*que eu péque*, *tu péques*, that I may sin—  
and not *que eu pécce*, *pécces*, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

*paguéi*, I paid.

*Págar*, to pay.

Imperative.

*págue êlle*, *paguêmos nós*, *páguem êlles*, let him pay, &c.

Present subjunctive.

*que eu págue*, *págues*, *págue*, *paguêmos*, *paguéis*, *páguem*,  
that I may pay, &c.—and not *page*, *pages*, &c.

The other tenses are conjugated like *amár*.

Regular verbs in *ar*.

*Abafár*, to choke, or to smother.

*Abalár*, to shake.

*Abanár*, to fan.

*Abastár*, to satiate.

*Abaxár*, to bring or let down.

*Abençoár*, to bless.

*Abocanhár*, to carp.

*Avominár*, to abominate.

*Abotoár*, to button.

*Acabár*, to finish.

*Admoestár*, to admonish.

*Affrontár*, to abuse.

*Agarrár*, to lay hold of.

*Alagár*, to overflow.

*Amaldiçoár*, to curse.

*Annulár*, to annul, or to make void.

*Apressár*, to press, or hasten.

*Aquentár*, to warm.

*Argumentár*, to argue.

*Assoprár*, to blow.

*Atár*, to tie.

*Avassalár*, to subdue, to conquer.

*Azedár*, to sour.



*Of the Verbs passive.*

Before we proceed to the second conjugation, it is necessary to know that the Verbs passive, which express the suffering of an action, are nothing more than the participles of verbs active, conjugated with the verb *sér*, to be.

## E X A M P L E.

## Present tense.

|                          |                 |
|--------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>eu sou amado,</i>     | I am loved.     |
| <i>tu és amado,</i>      | thou art loved. |
| <i>elle hé amado,</i>    | he is loved.    |
| <i>nós somos amados,</i> | we are loved.   |
| <i>vós sois amados,</i>  | you are loved.  |
| <i>elles são amados,</i> | they are loved. |

and so throughout the other moods and tenses.

The second conjugation of the verbs in *ér*.

## Indicative Mood.

## Present.

|                  |               |
|------------------|---------------|
| <i>vendo,</i>    | I sell.       |
| <i>vendes,</i>   | thou sellest. |
| <i>vende,</i>    | he sells.     |
| <i>vendemos,</i> | we sell.      |
| <i>vendéis,</i>  | you sell.     |
| <i>vendem,</i>   | they sell.    |

## Preterimperfect.

|                   |                  |
|-------------------|------------------|
| <i>vendia,</i>    | I did sell.      |
| <i>vendias,</i>   | thou didst sell. |
| <i>vendia,</i>    | he did sell.     |
| <i>vendíamos,</i> | we did sell.     |
| <i>vendíeis,</i>  | you did sell.    |
| <i>vendião,</i>   | they did sell.   |

## Preterperfect definite.

|                  |               |
|------------------|---------------|
| <i>vendí,</i>    | I sold.       |
| <i>vendeste,</i> | thou soldest. |
| <i>vendêo,</i>   | he sold.      |



|                   |            |
|-------------------|------------|
| <i>vendêmos,</i>  | we sold.   |
| <i>vendêstes,</i> | you sold.  |
| <i>vendêraõ,</i>  | they sold. |

Preterperfect.

|               |   |                 |   |                  |
|---------------|---|-----------------|---|------------------|
| <i>ténho</i>  | } | <i>vendído,</i> | { | I have sold, &c. |
| <i>téns</i>   |   |                 |   |                  |
| <i>tém</i>    |   |                 |   |                  |
| <i>têmos</i>  |   |                 |   |                  |
| <i>têndes</i> |   |                 |   |                  |
| <i>tém</i>    |   |                 |   |                  |

Preterpluperfect.

|                 |   |                 |   |                  |
|-----------------|---|-----------------|---|------------------|
| <i>tinha</i>    | } | <i>vendído,</i> | { | I have sold, &c. |
| <i>tinhas</i>   |   |                 |   |                  |
| <i>tinha</i>    |   |                 |   |                  |
| <i>tínhamos</i> |   |                 |   |                  |
| <i>tínheis</i>  |   |                 |   |                  |
| <i>tinhaõ</i>   |   |                 |   |                  |

This tense may also be conjugated thus ; *vendêra, vendêras, vendêra, vendêramos, vendêreis, vendêraõ,*

Future.

|                    |   |                           |
|--------------------|---|---------------------------|
| <i>venderêi,</i>   | } | I shall or will sell, &c. |
| <i>venderás,</i>   |   |                           |
| <i>venderá,</i>    |   |                           |
| <i>venderêmos,</i> |   |                           |
| <i>venderéis,</i>  |   |                           |
| <i>venderáõ,</i>   |   |                           |

Imperative Mood.

|                      |                |
|----------------------|----------------|
| <i>vênde tu,</i>     | sell thou.     |
| <i>vênda êlle,</i>   | let him sell.  |
| <i>vendâmos nós,</i> | let us sell.   |
| <i>vendêi vós,</i>   | sell ye.       |
| <i>vêndaõ êlles,</i> | let them sell. |

Obtative and Subjunctive.

|                      |   |                      |
|----------------------|---|----------------------|
| <i>que eu vênda,</i> | } | that I may sell, &c. |
| <i>vêndas,</i>       |   |                      |
| <i>vênda,</i>        |   |                      |
| <i>vendâmos,</i>     |   |                      |
| <i>vendâis,</i>      |   |                      |
| <i>vêndaõ,</i>       |   |                      |



## Preterimperfect.

*que eu vendêra or vendêsse,* that I might or could sell,  
*vendêras or vendêsses,* &c.  
*vendêra or vendêsse,*  
*vendêramos or vendêssemos,*  
*vendêreis, or vendêsseis,*  
*vendêraõ or vendêssem,*

## Second Preterimperfect.

*venderia,* I should sell, &c.  
*venderias,*  
*venderia,*  
*venderiamos,*  
*venderieis,*  
*venderiaõ,*

## Preterperfect.

*que eu tenha*  
*têhas*  
*tenha*  
*tenhamos*  
*tenhais*  
*tenhaõ* } *vendido,* { that I have sold, &c.

## Preterpluperfect.

*se eu tivêra or tivêsse,*  
*tivêras or tivêsses,*  
*tivêra or tivêsse,*  
*tivêramos or tivêssemos,*  
*tivêreis or tivêsseis,*  
*tivêraõ or tivêssem,* } *vendido,* { if I had sold, &c.

## Second Preterpluperfect.

*eu teria*  
*terias*  
*teria*  
*teriamos*  
*terieis*  
*teriaõ* } *vendido,* { I should have sold, &c.



## Future.

|                          |                        |
|--------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>quando eu vendêr,</i> | when I shall sell, &c. |
| <i>vendêres,</i>         |                        |
| <i>vendêr,</i>           |                        |
| <i>vendêrmos,</i>        |                        |
| <i>vendêrdes,</i>        |                        |
| <i>vendêrem,</i>         |                        |

## Second Future.

|                        |                     |                                |
|------------------------|---------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>quando eu tivêr</i> | } <i>vendído,</i> { | when I shall have sold,<br>&c. |
| <i>tivêres</i>         |                     |                                |
| <i>tivêr</i>           |                     |                                |
| <i>tivêrmos</i>        |                     |                                |
| <i>tivêrdes</i>        |                     |                                |
| <i>tivêrem</i>         |                     |                                |

## Infinitive Mood.

## Present.

*vendêr,* to sell.

## Preterperfect.

*têr vendído,* to have sold.

## Participle.

## Present.

*que vênde,* that sell, that sells.

## Preterit.

*vendído,* masc. *vendída,* fem. Plur. *vendídos,* *vendidas,* sold.

## Future.

*que ha de vendêr,* that is to sell.

## Gerund.

*vendêndo,* selling.  
*têndo vendído,* having sold.

## Supine.

*para vendêr,* to sell.

After the same manner as the verb *vendêr*, are conjugated all the other regular verbs of the second conjugation ending in *er*; as the following;



*Acômetêr*, to attack.*Bebêr*, to drink.*Comêr*, to eat.*Comprehendêr*, to perceive, or apprehend.*Cometêr*, to commit.*Concedêr*, to grant.*Corrêr*, to run.*Devêr*, to owe.*Escondêr*, to hide.*Emprendêr*, to undertake.*Metêr*, to put in.*Offendêr*, to offend.*Prometêr*, to promise.*Respondêr*, to answer.*Reprehendêr*, to reprove.*Temêr*, to fear.*Varrêr*, to sweep, &c.

The third conjugation of the verbs ending in *ir*.

### Indicative Mood.

#### Present.

|                   |              |                     |
|-------------------|--------------|---------------------|
| <i>admitto</i> ,  | I admit, &c. | <i>admittimos</i> . |
| <i>admittes</i> , |              | <i>admittis</i> .   |
| <i>admitte</i> ,  |              | <i>admittem</i> .   |

#### Preterimperfect.

|                                    |                      |
|------------------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>admittia</i> , I did admit, &c. | <i>admittiamos</i> . |
| <i>admittias</i> ,                 | <i>admittieis</i> .  |
| <i>admittia</i> ,                  | <i>admittiaõ</i> .   |

#### Preterperfect definite.

|                              |                      |
|------------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>admitti</i> , I admitted. | <i>admittimos</i> .  |
| <i>admittiste</i> ,          | <i>admittistes</i> . |
| <i>admittio</i> ,            | <i>admittiraõ</i> .  |

#### Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *admittido*, and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb. *têr*.

|                             |                  |
|-----------------------------|------------------|
| <i>tênho admittido</i> ,    | I have admitted. |
| <i>têns admittido</i> , &c. | thou hast, &c.   |

#### Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the particle *admittido*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *têr*.

|                               |                 |
|-------------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>tinha admittido</i> , &c.  | I had admitted. |
| <i>tinhas admittido</i> , &c. | thou hadst, &c. |

This tense may also be conjugated thus; *admittira*, *admittiras*, *admittira*, *admittiramos*, *admittireis*, *admittiraõ*.



## Future.

|                      |                        |
|----------------------|------------------------|
| <i>admittiréi,</i>   | I shall or will admit. |
| <i>admittirás,</i>   |                        |
| <i>admittirá,</i>    |                        |
| <i>admittirêmos,</i> |                        |
| <i>admittiréis,</i>  |                        |
| <i>admittiráõ,</i>   |                        |

## Imperative.

|                        |                 |
|------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>admítte tú,</i>     | admit thou.     |
| <i>admítta elle,</i>   | let him admit.  |
| <i>admittâmos nós,</i> | let us admit.   |
| <i>admitti vós,</i>    | admit ye.       |
| <i>admíttaõ elles,</i> | let them admit. |

## Obtative and Subjunctive.

## Present.

|                        |                       |
|------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>que eu admítta,</i> | that I may admit, &c. |
| <i>admittas,</i>       |                       |
| <i>admítta,</i>        |                       |
| <i>admittâmos,</i>     |                       |
| <i>admittâis,</i>      |                       |
| <i>admíttaõ,</i>       |                       |

## First Preterimperfect.

|                                        |                         |
|----------------------------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>que eu admittíra or admittísse,</i> | that I might admit, &c. |
| <i>admittíras or admittísseis,</i>     |                         |
| <i>admittíra or admittísse,</i>        |                         |
| <i>admittíramos or admittíssemos,</i>  |                         |
| <i>admittíreis or admittísseis,</i>    |                         |
| <i>admittíraõ or admittíssem,</i>      |                         |

## Second Preterimperfect.

|                       |                              |
|-----------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>admittiría,</i>    | I should or would admit, &c. |
| <i>admittirías,</i>   |                              |
| <i>admittiría,</i>    |                              |
| <i>admittiríamos,</i> |                              |
| <i>admittiríeis,</i>  |                              |
| <i>admittiríaõ,</i>   |                              |

## Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the particle, *admittido*, and the present subjunctive of the verb *tér*.

|                                  |                         |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>que eu tenha admittido,</i>   | that I have admitted.   |
| <i>ténhas admittido, &amp;c.</i> | thou hast admitted, &c. |



## PORTUGUESE

## Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *têr* and the participle *admittido*.

*se eu tivêra admittido*, If I had admitted.  
*tivêras*, &c. thou hadst admitted, &c.

## Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *têr* and the participle *admittido*.

*eu teria admittido*, I should have admitted.  
*terias*, &c. thou shouldst, &c.

## First Future.

*se eu admittir*, If I shall admit, &c.  
*admittires*,  
*admittir*,  
*admittirmos*,  
*admittirdes*,  
*admittirem*,

## Second Future.

It is composed of the first future subjunctive of the verb *têr* and the participle *admittido*.

*se eu tiver admittido*, If I shall have admitted.  
*tiveres*, &c. thou shalt, &c.

## Infinitive Mood.

## Present.

*admittir*, to admit.

## Preterperfect.

*têr admittido*, to have admitted.

## Participle.

## Present.

*admittido*, for the masc. *admittida*, for the fem. admitted.

## Future.

*que há de admittir*, that is to admit.

## Gerunds.

*admittindo*, admitting.  
*têndo admittido*, having admitted.

## Supines.

*para admittir*, to admit.



Conjugate after the same manner the following verbs:

|                                   |                                          |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| <i>Abrir</i> , to open.           | <i>Nutrir</i> , to nourish.              |
| <i>Conduzir</i> , to conduct.     | <i>Reduzir</i> , to reduce, to bring to. |
| <i>Introduzir</i> , to introduce. | <i>Traduzir</i> , to translate.          |
| <i>Induzir</i> , to induce.       | <i>Deduzir</i> , to deduct, &c.          |
| <i>Produzir</i> , to produce.     |                                          |
| <i>Luzir</i> , to shine.          |                                          |

### *Of the irregular Verbs in ar.*

There are in each conjugation some verbs which do not conform to the common rule, and on that account are called irregulars.

There are but two of the first conjugation, which in some of their tenses depart from the rule of the verb *amár*, viz, *estar* and *dár*. We have already conjugated the first, and the second is conjugated in the following manner.

#### Indicative.

##### Present.

|                           |                         |
|---------------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>dôu</i> , I give.      | <i>damos</i> , we give. |
| <i>dás</i> , thou givest. | <i>dáis</i> , you give. |
| <i>dá</i> , he gives.     | <i>daõ</i> , they give. |

##### Preterimperfect.

|                                     |                                                                 |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>dáva</i> ,<br><i>davas</i> , &c. | I did give, &c. (as in regular verbs of the first conjugation.) |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------|

##### Preterperfect definite.

|                             |                           |
|-----------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>dêi</i> , I gave.        | <i>demos</i> , we gave.   |
| <i>dêste</i> , thou gavest. | <i>dêstes</i> , you gave. |
| <i>dêu</i> , he gave.       | <i>dêraõ</i> , they gave. |

##### Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *dádo* and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *têr*; as *tênho dádo*, I have given, &c.

##### Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the particle *dádo* and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *têr*; as *êutinha dádo*, &c. I had given, &c.



## PORTUGUESE

## Future.

*daréi*, I shall or will give, &c. (as in the verb *amár*)  
*darás*, &c.

## Imperative.

*dá tu*, give thou. *dêmos nós*, let us give.  
*dê elle*, let him give. *dái vós*, give thou.  
*dê m êlles*, let them give.

## Obtative and Subjunctive.

## Present.

*que eu dê*, that I may give, &c.  
*dês*,  
*dê*,  
*dêmos*,  
*dêis*,  
*dê m*,

## Preterimperfect.

*que eu dêra* or *dêsse*, that I might give, &c.  
*dêras* or *dêsses*,  
*dêra* or *dêsse*,  
*dêramos* or *dêssemos*,  
*dêreis* or *dêsseis*,  
*dêraõ* or *dêssem*,

## Second Imperfect.

*daría*, I should give, &c. *daríamos*.  
*darías*, *daríeis*.  
*daría*, *daríaõ*.

The preterperfect, preterpluperfect, and the second preterpluperfect, are composed of the participle *dádo*, and the auxiliary verb *têr*, as in the regular verbs.

## Future.

*quando eu dêr*, when I shall give, &c.  
*dêres*,  
*dêr*,  
*dêrmos*,  
*dêrdes*,  
*dêrem*,

## Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *dádo*, &c. as the regular verbs.



Infinitive.

Present.

*dár*, to give, &c. as in the regular verbs.

— *Of the irregular Verbs in er.*

I begin with *fazêr*, *podêr*, and *sabêr*, because they occur oftenest in discourse.

*Fazêr*, to do or make.

Indicative.

Present.

|                |            |                  |          |
|----------------|------------|------------------|----------|
| <i>fáço</i> ,  | I do.      | <i>fazêmos</i> , | we do.   |
| <i>fázes</i> , | thou dost. | <i>fazéis</i> ,  | you do.  |
| <i>fáz</i> ,   | he does.   | <i>fázem</i> ,   | they do. |

Imperfect.

|                 |                        |                   |
|-----------------|------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>fazía</i> ,  | I did or did make, &c. | <i>fazíamos</i> , |
| <i>fazias</i> , |                        | <i>fazíeis</i> .  |
| <i>fazia</i> ,  |                        | <i>faziaõ</i> .   |

Preterperfect definite.

|                  |             |                   |
|------------------|-------------|-------------------|
| <i>fiz</i> ,     | I made, &c. | <i>fizêmos</i> ,  |
| <i>fizêste</i> , |             | <i>fizêstes</i> . |
| <i>fêz</i> ,     |             | <i>fizêraõ</i> .  |

Preterperfect.

|                      |                  |
|----------------------|------------------|
| <i>ténho feito</i> , | I have done, &c. |
| <i>téns feito</i> ,  | &c.              |

Preterpluperfect.

|                       |                 |
|-----------------------|-----------------|
| <i>tinha feito</i> ,  | I had done, &c. |
| <i>tinhas feito</i> , | &c.             |

Future.

|                |                                                  |
|----------------|--------------------------------------------------|
| <i>farei</i> , | I shall do, &c. (according to the regular verb.) |
| <i>farás</i> , | &c.                                              |

Imperative.

|                    |             |                      |              |
|--------------------|-------------|----------------------|--------------|
| <i>fáze tu</i> ,   | do thou.    | <i>façâmos nós</i> , | let us do.   |
| <i>fáça êlle</i> , | let him do. | <i>fazêi vós</i> ,   | do you.      |
|                    |             | <i>fáçaõ êlles</i> , | let them do. |



## Optative.

## Present.

*que eu faça,*  
*faças,*  
*faça, &c.*

that I may do, &c. (according to the regular verbs.)

## Preterimperfect.

*que eu fizera or fizesse,* that I might do, &c.  
*fizeras or fizesses,*  
*fizera or fizesse,*  
*fizéramos or fizéssemos,*  
*fizereis or fizésseis,*  
*fizeraõ or fizéssem,*

## Second Imperfect.

*faria,* I should do, &c. *faríamos.*  
*farías,* *faríeis.*  
*faria,* *fariaõ.*

## Future.

*quando eu fizer,* when I shall do, &c.  
*fizéres,*  
*fizer,*  
*fizérmos,*  
*fizerdes,*  
*fizerem,*

## Second Future.

*quando eu tiver feito,* when I shall have done.  
*tivéres feito, &c.*

## Infinitive.

*fazer,* to do.

## Gerunds.

*fazendo,* doing or in doing.

## Participle.

*feito,* made or done.

After the same manner are conjugated *desfazer*, to undo; *contrafazer*, to counterfeit; *refazer*, to make again.



*Podér*, to be able.

Indicative.

Present.

|                |                   |                  |           |
|----------------|-------------------|------------------|-----------|
| <i>pósso</i> , | I can or am able. | <i>podémos</i> , | we can.   |
| <i>pódes</i> , | thou canst.       | <i>podéis</i> ,  | you can.  |
| <i>póde</i> ,  | he can.           | <i>podem</i> ,   | they can. |

Imperfect.

*podia*, I could or was able, &c.  
*podias*, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

|                  |               |                   |             |
|------------------|---------------|-------------------|-------------|
| <i>pude</i> ,    | I could.      | <i>pudémos</i> ,  | we could.   |
| <i>pudéste</i> , | thou couldst. | <i>pudéstes</i> , | you could.  |
| <i>póde</i> ,    | he could.     | <i>pudéraõ</i> ,  | they could. |

Preterperfect.

*ténho podido*, &c. I have been able, &c.

Future.

*poderéi*, I shall be able, &c.  
*poderás*, &c.

There is no Imperative.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

|                       |                          |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>que eu possa</i> , | that I may be able.      |
| <i>possas</i> ,       | thou mayest be able, &c. |
| <i>possa</i> ,        |                          |
| <i>possâmos</i> ,     |                          |
| <i>possâis</i> ,      |                          |
| <i>possaõ</i> ,       |                          |

Imperfect.

|                                          |                           |
|------------------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>que eu pudéra</i> or <i>pudésse</i> , | that I might be able.     |
| <i>pudéras</i> or <i>pudésses</i> ,      | thou mightst be able, &c. |
| <i>pudéra</i> or <i>pudésse</i> ,        |                           |
| <i>pudéramos</i> or <i>pudéssemos</i> ,  |                           |
| <i>pudéreis</i> or <i>pudésseis</i> ,    |                           |
| <i>pudéraõ</i> or <i>pudéssem</i> ,      |                           |



## PORTUGUESE

## Second Imperfect.

*poderia,* I should be able, &c.  
*poderias, &c.*

## Future.

*quando eu pudér,* when I shall be able, &c.  
*pudéres,*  
*pudér,*  
*pudérmos,*  
*pudérdes,*  
*pudérem,*

## Infinitive.

## Present.

*podér,* to be able.

## Gerunds.

*podêndo,* being able.

## Participle.

*pudido,* been able.

*Sabér,* to know.

## Indicative.

## Present.

|               |               |                 |            |
|---------------|---------------|-----------------|------------|
| <i>sêi,</i>   | I know.       | <i>sabêmos,</i> | we know.   |
| <i>sábes,</i> | thou knowest. | <i>sabéis,</i>  | you know.  |
| <i>sábe,</i>  | he knows.     | <i>sábem,</i>   | they know. |

## Imperfect.

*sabia,* I did know.  
*sabias,* thou didst know, &c.  
*sabia, &c.*

## Preterperfect definite.

|                  |             |                   |
|------------------|-------------|-------------------|
| <i>sôube,</i>    | I knew, &c. | <i>soubêmos.</i>  |
| <i>soubêste,</i> |             | <i>soubêstes.</i> |
| <i>sôube,</i>    |             | <i>soubêraõ.</i>  |

## Preterperfect.

*tênho sabido,* I have known, &c.



## Future.

*saberéi,* I shall or will know, &c. (according to the  
*saberás, &c.* regular verbs.)

## Imperative.

|                    |               |                      |                |
|--------------------|---------------|----------------------|----------------|
|                    |               | <i>saibâmos nós,</i> | let us know.   |
| <i>sábe tu,</i>    | know thou.    | <i>sabéi vós,</i>    | know you.      |
| <i>saiba êlle,</i> | let him know. | <i>saibaõ êlles,</i> | let them know. |

## Optative and Subjunctive.

## Present.

|                      |                      |
|----------------------|----------------------|
| <i>que eu saiba,</i> | I may know.          |
| <i>saibas,</i>       | thou mayst know, &c. |
| <i>sáiba,</i>        |                      |
| <i>saibâmos,</i>     |                      |
| <i>saibáis,</i>      |                      |
| <i>sáibaõ,</i>       |                      |

## Imperfect.

|                                    |                        |
|------------------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>que eu soubéra or soubésse,</i> | that I might know, &c. |
| <i>soubéras or soubésse,</i>       |                        |
| <i>soubéra or soubésse,</i>        |                        |
| <i>soubéramos or soubéssemos,</i>  |                        |
| <i>soubéreis or soubésseis,</i>    |                        |
| <i>soubéraõ or soubéssem,</i>      |                        |

## Second Imperfect.

|                  |                    |                    |
|------------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| <i>sabería,</i>  | I should know, &c. | <i>saberíamos.</i> |
| <i>saberías,</i> |                    | <i>saberíeis.</i>  |
| <i>sabería,</i>  |                    | <i>saberíaõ.</i>   |

## Future.

|                          |                        |
|--------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>quando eu soubér,</i> | when I shall know, &c. |
| <i>soubéres,</i>         |                        |
| <i>soubér,</i>           |                        |
| <i>soubérmos,</i>        |                        |
| <i>soubérdes,</i>        |                        |
| <i>soubérem,</i>         |                        |

## Infinitive.

## Present.

*sabér,* to know.

## Gerund.

*sabêndo,* knowing.



## Participle.

*sabido* (for the masc.) *sabida* (for the feminine,) known.

---

Of the irregular Verb *trazêr*, to bring.

## Indicative.

## Present.

|                 |                |                   |               |
|-----------------|----------------|-------------------|---------------|
| <i>trágo</i> ,  | I bring.       | <i>trazêmos</i> , | we bring, &c. |
| <i>trázes</i> , | thou bringest. | <i>trazéis</i> .  |               |
| <i>tráz</i> ,   | he brings.     | <i>trázem</i> .   |               |

## Imperfect.

*trazia*, I did bring.  
*trazias*, &c. thou didst bring, &c. (according to the regulars.)

## Preterperfect definite.

|                    |                      |                     |
|--------------------|----------------------|---------------------|
| <i>trôuxe</i> ,    | I brought.           | <i>trouxêmos</i> .  |
| <i>trouxêste</i> , | thou broughtest, &c. | <i>trouxêstes</i> . |
| <i>trôuxe</i> ,    |                      | <i>trouxêraõ</i> .  |

## Preterperfect.

*tênho trazido*, I have brought, &c.  
*tens trazido*, &c.

## Future.

|                 |                            |                   |
|-----------------|----------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>trarêi</i> , | I shall or will bring, &c. | <i>trarêmos</i> . |
| <i>trarás</i> , |                            | <i>traréis</i> ,  |
| <i>trará</i> ,  |                            | <i>traráõ</i> .   |

## Imperative.

|                     |                |                       |                 |
|---------------------|----------------|-----------------------|-----------------|
| <i>tráze tu</i> ,   | bring thou.    | <i>tragâmos nós</i> , | let us bring.   |
| <i>trága elle</i> , | let him bring. | <i>trazêi vós</i> ,   | bring you.      |
|                     |                | <i>trágaõ elles</i> , | let them bring. |

## Optative and Subjunctive.

## Present.

*que eu trága*, that I may bring, &c.  
*trágas*,  
*trága*,  
*tragâmos*,  
*tragáis*,  
*trágaõ*,



## Imperfect.

*que eu trouxéra or trouxésse,* that I may bring, &c.  
*trouxéras or trouxésse,*  
*trouxéra or trouxésse,*  
*trouxéramos or trouxéssemos,*  
*trouxéreis or trouxésseis,*  
*trouxéraõ or trouxéssem,*

## Second Imperfect.

*eu traria,* I should bring, &c. *trariamos.*  
*trarias,* *trarieis.*  
*traria,* *trariaõ.*

## Future.

*quando eu trouxér,* when I shall bring, &c.  
*trouxéres,*  
*trouxér,*  
*trouxérmos,*  
*trouxérdes,*  
*trouxérem,*

## Infinitive.

## Present.

*trazér,* to bring.

## Gerund.

*trazêndo,* bringing.

## Participle.

*trazido,* masc. *trazida,* fem. brought.

The conjugation of the Irregular Verb *vêr*, to see.

## Indicative.

## Present.

*vêjo,* I see, *vêmos.*  
*vês,* thou seest, *vêdes.*  
*vê,* he sees, &c. *vém.*

## Imperfect.

*via,* I did see, &c.  
*vias,*  
*via, &c.*



## PORTUGUESE

## Preterperfect definite.

|               |            |                |
|---------------|------------|----------------|
| <i>vi,</i>    | I saw, &c. | <i>vimos.</i>  |
| <i>viste,</i> |            | <i>vistes,</i> |
| <i>vio,</i>   |            | <i>viraõ.</i>  |

## Preterperfect.

|                            |                  |
|----------------------------|------------------|
| <i>ténho visto,</i>        | I have seen, &c. |
| <i>téns visto, &amp;c.</i> |                  |

## Future.

|                       |                  |
|-----------------------|------------------|
| <i>verei,</i>         | I shall see, &c. |
| <i>verás, &amp;c.</i> |                  |

## Imperative.

|                     |               |
|---------------------|---------------|
| <i>vê tu,</i>       | see thou.     |
| <i>vêja elle,</i>   | let him see.  |
| <i>vejâmos nós,</i> | let us see.   |
| <i>vede vós,</i>    | see you.      |
| <i>vêjaõ elles,</i> | let them see. |

## Optative.

|                     |                     |                 |
|---------------------|---------------------|-----------------|
| <i>que eu veja,</i> | that I may see, &c. | <i>vejâmos.</i> |
| <i>vejas,</i>       |                     | <i>vejaís.</i>  |
| <i>veja,</i>        |                     | <i>vejaõ.</i>   |

## Imperfect.

|                              |                       |
|------------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>que eu víra or visse,</i> | that I might see, &c. |
| <i>viras or visses,</i>      |                       |
| <i>vira or visse,</i>        |                       |
| <i>víramos or vissemos,</i>  |                       |
| <i>víreis or visseis,</i>    |                       |
| <i>viraõ or vissem,</i>      |                       |

## Second Imperfect.

|                  |                   |                  |
|------------------|-------------------|------------------|
| <i>eu veria,</i> | I should see, &c. | <i>veríamos.</i> |
| <i>verias,</i>   |                   | <i>verieis.</i>  |
| <i>veria,</i>    |                   | <i>veriaõ.</i>   |

## Future.

|                       |                       |
|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>quando eu vir,</i> | when I shall see, &c. |
| <i>vires,</i>         |                       |
| <i>vir,</i>           |                       |
| <i>vírmos,</i>        |                       |
| <i>vírdes,</i>        |                       |
| <i>vírem,</i>         |                       |



Infinitive.

*vêr,* to see.

Gerund.

*vêndo,* seeing.

Participle.

*visto, vista,* seen.

In like manner are conjugated the compounds *antevêr, prevêr,* and *revêr.*

The verb *provêr*, when it signifies *to provide for*, or, *to take care of*, is conjugated in the present indicative thus :

|                                             |                   |
|---------------------------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>eu provénho, I take care of, &amp;c.</i> | <i>provímos.</i>  |
| <i>provêns,</i>                             | <i>províndes.</i> |
| <i>provém,</i>                              | <i>provém.</i>    |

But when it signifies *to make provision*, it is conjugated thus :

|                                              |                  |
|----------------------------------------------|------------------|
| <i>eu provéjo, I make provision, &amp;c.</i> | <i>provêmos.</i> |
| <i>provês,</i>                               | <i>provéis.</i>  |
| <i>provê,</i>                                | <i>próvem.</i>   |

The conjugation of the auxiliary verb *dizêr*, to say.

Indicative.

Present.

|                             |                 |
|-----------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>digo, I say, &amp;c.</i> | <i>dizêmos.</i> |
| <i>dizes,</i>               | <i>dizéis.</i>  |
| <i>diz,</i>                 | <i>dizem.</i>   |

Preterimperfect.

*dizía, I did say, &c.*  
*dizías, &c.*

Preterperfect definite.

|                               |                   |
|-------------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>disse, I said, &amp;c.</i> | <i>dissêmos.</i>  |
| <i>dissêste,</i>              | <i>dissêstes.</i> |
| <i>disse,</i>                 | <i>dissêraõ.</i>  |



## Preterperfect.

*ténho ditto*, I have said, &c.  
*téns ditto*, &c.

## Future.

*diréi*, I shall or will say, &c.  
*dirás*, &c.

## Imperative.

|                     |               |
|---------------------|---------------|
| <i>dize tu,</i>     | say thou.     |
| <i>diga elle,</i>   | let him say.  |
| <i>digâmos nós,</i> | let us say.   |
| <i>dizei vós,</i>   | say you.      |
| <i>digaõ elles,</i> | let them say. |

## Optative.

*que eu diga,* that I may say, &c.  
*digas*, &c.

## Imperfect.

*que eu disséra* or *dissésse*, that I might say, &c.  
*disséras* or *dissesses*,  
*disséra* or *dissésse*,  
*disséramos* or *disséssemos*,  
*disséreis* or *dissésseis*,  
*disséraõ* or *disséssem*.

## Second Imperfect.

*diria*, I should say, &c.  
*dirias*, &c.

## Future.

*quando eu dissér,* when shall I say, &c.  
*disséres*  
*dissér*, &c.

## Infinitive.

*dizér*, to say.

## Gerund.

*dizendo*, saying.

## Participles.

*ditto*, *ditta*, said.



Observe, that the compounds *desdizêr*, to unsay, and *contradizêr*, to contradict, are in all points conjugated like *dizêr*.

*The Conjugation of the irregular Verb querêr, to be willing.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

|                  |                        |
|------------------|------------------------|
| <i>quero,</i>    | I will, or am willing. |
| <i>queres,</i>   | thou art willing.      |
| <i>quer,</i>     | he is willing, &c.     |
| <i>querêmos,</i> |                        |
| <i>querêis,</i>  |                        |
| <i>querem,</i>   |                        |

Imperfect.

|                         |                    |
|-------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>queria,</i>          | I was willing, &c. |
| <i>querias, &amp;c.</i> |                    |

Preterperfect definite.

|                   |                          |
|-------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>quíz,</i>      | I have been willing, &c. |
| <i>quixêste,</i>  |                          |
| <i>quíz,</i>      |                          |
| <i>quizêmos,</i>  |                          |
| <i>quixêstes,</i> |                          |
| <i>quizêraõ,</i>  |                          |

Future.

|                          |                         |
|--------------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>quererei,</i>         | I shall be willing, &c. |
| <i>quererás, &amp;c.</i> |                         |

Imperative.

|                       |                      |
|-----------------------|----------------------|
| <i>queiras tu,</i>    | be thou willing.     |
| <i>queira elle,</i>   | let him be willing.  |
| <i>queirâmos nós,</i> | let us be willing.   |
| <i>queirâis vós,</i>  | be you willing.      |
| <i>queiraõ elles,</i> | let them be willing. |

Optative and Subjunctive.

|                         |                            |
|-------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>que eu queira,</i>   | that I may be willing, &c. |
| <i>queiras, &amp;c.</i> |                            |



## Imperfect.

|                                            |                      |
|--------------------------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>que eu quizera</i> or <i>quizesse</i> , | that I were willing. |
| <i>quizeras</i> or <i>quizesseis</i> ,     | thou wert willing.   |
| <i>quizera</i> or <i>quizesse</i> ,        | he were willing.     |
| <i>quizeramos</i> or <i>quizessemos</i> ,  | we were willing.     |
| <i>quizeréis</i> or <i>quizesseis</i> ,    | you were willing.    |
| <i>quizerão</i> or <i>quizessem</i> ,      | they were willing.   |

## Second Imperfect.

|                           |                                          |
|---------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| <i>eu querería,</i>       | I should <i>or</i> would be willing, &c. |
| <i>quererías, &amp;c.</i> |                                          |

## Future.

|                          |                              |
|--------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>quando eu quizer,</i> | when I shall be willing, &c. |
| <i>quizeres, &amp;c.</i> |                              |

## Infinitive.

|                |                |
|----------------|----------------|
| <i>querer,</i> | to be willing. |
|----------------|----------------|

## Gerund.

|                  |                |
|------------------|----------------|
| <i>querendo,</i> | being willing. |
|------------------|----------------|

## Participle.

|                 |               |
|-----------------|---------------|
| <i>querido,</i> | been willing. |
|-----------------|---------------|

Note, that *quer* is sometimes a conjunction, when repeated in a sentence, and that it is rendered into English by *whether* and *or*; as, *quer vós o tenhâis feito, quer não*, whether you have done that or no. But when it is not repeated, and is joined to the particle *se*, it is sometimes rendered into English by *at least*; as, *hum se quer*, one at least; and sometimes by *however*, when joined in the particle *que*; as *cómo quer que seja*, however it be. In all which cases, it is not to be confounded with the third person singular of the indicative of the verb *querer*.

Take notice that the verb *querer* is sometimes used with the particle *se* instead of the verb *dever*; as, *as cousas não se querem feitas à prêssa*, things must not be done in a hurry.



*Of the irregular Verb valêr, to be worth.*

I shall put no other tenses of this verb than the present indicative, the imperative, and the present of the subjunctive, none but these being irregular.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

|                     |                 |
|---------------------|-----------------|
| <i>válho,</i>       | I am worth, &c. |
| <i>váles,</i>       |                 |
| <i>vále or val,</i> |                 |
| <i>valêmos,</i>     |                 |
| <i>valéis,</i>      |                 |
| <i>válem,</i>       |                 |

Imperative.

|                      |                    |
|----------------------|--------------------|
| <i>vále tu,</i>      | be thou worth.     |
| <i>válha êlle,</i>   | let him be worth.  |
| <i>valhámos nós,</i> | let us be worth.   |
| <i>valêi vós,</i>    | be you worth.      |
| <i>válhaõ êlles,</i> | let them be worth. |

Subjunctive.

|                      |                          |
|----------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>que êu válha,</i> | that I may be worth, &c. |
| <i>válhas,</i>       |                          |
| <i>válha,</i>        |                          |
| <i>valhámos,</i>     |                          |
| <i>valháis,</i>      |                          |
| <i>válhaõ,</i>       |                          |

*Of the irregular Verb perdêr, to lose.*

This verb changes the *c* before *o* of the present indicative into *d* in the other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses, if you except the imperative and present subjunctive; in which it is conjugated in the following manner:

Indicative.

Present.

|                |             |                  |
|----------------|-------------|------------------|
| <i>pérco,</i>  | I lose, &c. | <i>perdémos.</i> |
| <i>pêrdes,</i> |             | <i>perdéis.</i>  |
| <i>pêrde,</i>  |             | <i>pêrdem.</i>   |



## Imperative.

|                      |                |
|----------------------|----------------|
| <i>pérde tu,</i>     | lose thou.     |
| <i>pérca elle,</i>   | let him lose.  |
| <i>percâmos nós,</i> | let us lose.   |
| <i>perdei vós</i>    | lose you.      |
| <i>pércaõ elles,</i> | let them lose. |

## Subjunctive.

|                       |                      |
|-----------------------|----------------------|
| <i>que eu pérca,</i>  | that I may lose, &c. |
| <i>pércas,</i>        |                      |
| <i>pérca, &amp;c.</i> |                      |

The compounds of the verb *têr*, as, *conténho*, I contain; *deténho*, I detain, &c. are conjugated like it.

Some verbs of this conjugation are only irregular in the participle passive; as, *escrito*, from *escrever*; *absolto*, from *absolver*.

Those that have the *j* before *o* in the present indicative change the *j* into *g* in all tenses and persons, in which the *j* would otherwise meet with the vowels *i* or *e*; as, *elegêr*, to elect; *eu eléjo*, *tu eléges*, &c. I elect, &c.

Imperfect.  
*elegia*, &c.

Preter-def.  
*elegi*, *elegeste*, &c. I elected, &c.

The verbs ending in *éyo* in the present indicative, change that termination into *ía* in the imperfect, and into *i* in the preter-definite, and are so conjugated.

## Indicative.

## Present.

|                 |             |               |
|-----------------|-------------|---------------|
| <i>eu léyo,</i> | I read, &c. | <i>lêmos.</i> |
| <i>lês,</i>     |             | <i>lêdes.</i> |
| <i>lê,</i>      |             | <i>lêm.</i>   |

## Imperfect.

|                      |                 |
|----------------------|-----------------|
| <i>eu lia,</i>       | I did read, &c. |
| <i>lias, &amp;c.</i> |                 |



Preter definite.

*eu li,* I read, &c.  
*léste,* &c.

Imperative.

*leamos nós,* let us read.  
*lé tu,* read thou. *léde vós,* read you.  
*léa elle,* let him read. *léaõ elles,* let them read.

Subjunctive.

*que eu léa,* that I may read, &c.  
*léas,*  
*léa, &c.*

You may observe that they lose the *y* through all the other moods and tenses. The verb *crér*, to believe, is conjugated in the same manner.

Of the irregular Verbs in *ir*.

*Ir*, to go.

Indicative Mood.

Present tense.

*vou,* I go. *vamos,* we go.  
*vás,* thou goest. *ídes,* you go.  
*vai,* he goes. *vaõ,* they go.

Preterimperfect.

*hía,* I did go, &c. *híamos,*  
*hías,* *híeis.*  
*hía,* *híaõ.*

Preterperfect definite.

*fui,* I went. *fômos,* we went.  
*fôste,* thou wentest. *fôstes,* you went.  
*fôí,* he went. *fôraõ,* they went.

Preterperfect.

*ténho,* } *ído* { I have gone, &c.  
*téns, &c.*



Præterpluperfect.

*tinha,*  
*tinhas,*

{ *ido,* } I had gone, &c.

Future.

*iréi,*  
*irás, &c.*

I shall or will go, &c.

Imperative.

*vá tu,*  
*vá elle,*

go thou,  
let him go,

*vamos nós,*  
*ide vós,*  
*vão elles.*

let us go.  
go ye.  
let them go.

Optative and Subjunctive.

*que eu vá,*  
*vás,*  
*vá,*  
*vamos,*  
*vades,*  
*vão,*

that I may go, &c.

First Præterimperfect.

*que eu fôra or fôsse,*  
*fôras or fôsses,*  
*fôra or fôsse,*  
*fôramos or fôssemos,*  
*fôreis or fôsseis,*  
*fôraõ or fôssem,*

that I might go, &c.

Second Præterimperfect.

*iría,*  
*irías, &c.*

I should go, &c.

Præterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ido* and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *têr*.

Præterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ido* and the first præterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *têr*.



## Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ído* and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

## Future.

*quando eu fôr,* when I shall go, &c.

*fôres,*

*fôr,*

*fôrmos,*

*fôrdes,*

*fôrem,*

## Second Future.

*quando eu tivér,* { *ído* } when I shall have gone,  
*tivéres, &c.* { } &c.

## Infinitive.

## Present.

*ir,* to go.

## Gerund.

*índo,* going.

## Part.

*ído,* done.

*Vir*, to come.

## Indicative.

## Present.

*vénho,* I come, &c.

*véns,*

*vém,*

*vímos,*

*víndes,*

*vém.*

## Imperfect.

*vínha,* I did come, &c. *vínhamos.*

*vínhas,*

*vínha,*

*vínheis.*

*vínhaõ.*

## Preter definite.

*vím,* I came, &c.

*viéste,*

*viéo,*

*viémos.*

*viéstes.*

*viéraõ.*



## Preterimperfect.

*ténho vindo*, I have come, &c.  
*téns vindo*, &c.

## Future.

*viréi*, I shall come, &c.  
*virás*, &c.

## Imperative.

|                     |                       |                |
|---------------------|-----------------------|----------------|
|                     | <i>venhâmos nós</i> , | let us come.   |
| <i>vém tu</i> ,     | <i>vinde vós</i> ,    | come you,      |
| <i>venha elle</i> , | <i>venhaõ elles</i> , | let them come. |

## Optative.

## Present.

*que eu venha*.

## Imperfect.

*que eu viéra*, or *viésse*.

## Second Imperfect.

*viria*, *virias*, &c.

## Infinitive.

## Present.

*vir*, to come.

## Gerund.

*vindo*, coming.

## Part.

*vindo*, come.

The compounds of *vir* ; as *convir*, to be convenient ; *sobrevir*, to come unlooked for, are conjugated in the same manner.

Of the irregular Verbs, *mentir*, to lie, *sentir*, to feel ; *servir*, to serve ; *ferir*, to wound.

These verbs change the *i* of the first person singular of the present tense, indicative, into *e* in the



other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses and moods, except in the imperative and the present conjunctive, in which they are conjugated thus :

Indicative.

Present.

|                  |                   |                             |
|------------------|-------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>eu minto,</i> | <i>tu mêntes,</i> | <i>elle mên-te, &amp;c.</i> |
| <i>eu sinto,</i> | <i>tu sêntes,</i> | <i>elle sên-te, &amp;c.</i> |
| <i>eu sirvo,</i> | <i>tu sêrves,</i> | <i>elle sêr-ve, &amp;c.</i> |

Imperative.

*mên-te tu, mînta êlle, mîntâmos nós, mên-tí vós, mîntaõ êlles.*  
*sên-te tu, sînta êlle, sîntâmos nós, sên-tí vós, sîntaõ êlles.*  
*sêr-ve tu, sîrva êlle, sîrvâmos nos, sêr-ví vós, sîrvaõ êlles.*

Subjunctive.

|               |                        |
|---------------|------------------------|
| <i>mînta,</i> | <i>mîntas, &amp;c.</i> |
| <i>sînta,</i> | <i>sîntas, &amp;c.</i> |
| <i>sîrva,</i> | <i>sîrvas, &amp;c.</i> |

The compounds, *desmentír, assentír, consentír, dissentír, presentír*, are conjugated like *mentír* and *sentír*; and also the verbs *afferír, referír, conserír, deferír, differír, inferír*.

*Of the irregular Verbs affligír, to afflict; corrigír, to correct, fingír, to feign; ungír, to anoint; compungír, frigír, dirigír, tingír, cingír, &c.*

These verbs change the *g* of the infinitive mood into *j* in those tenses where the *g* would otherwise meet with the vowels *o*, as in the first person singular of the present indicative *afflijo*; or *a*, as in the third person of the imperative in both numbers, in the first plural of the same tense, and in the present subjunctive.

---

*Of the irregular Verb seguir, to follow.*

This verb changes the *e* of the infinitive mood into *i* in the first person singular of the present indi-



cative, *eu sigo*, I follow: in the present subjunctive *que eu siga*, that I may follow: and in the imperative, where it is conjugated thus: *séque tu, siga elle, sigamos nós, segui vós, sigaõ elles*.

Take notice that the *u* is lost in those tenses where it would otherwise meet with the vowels *o* and *a*, as you see in the examples; and this observation also takes place in the verbs *distinguir*, to distinguish; *extinguir*, to extinguish, &c.

The compounds are *perseguir*, to persecute; *conseguir*, to obtain; *proseguir*, to pursue.

*Of the irregular Verb ouvir, to hear.*

This verb changes the *v* of the infinitive mood into *ç* in the first person singular of the present indicative, *eu ouço*, I hear, *tu ouves*, &c. in the present subjunctive, and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus: *ouve tu, ouça elle, ouçamos nós, ouvi vós, ouçaõ elles*, hear thou, &c.

*Of the irregular Verb dormir, to sleep.*

This verb changes the *o* of the infinitive mood into *u* in the first person singular of the present indicative, thus, *eu durmo*, *tu dormes*, *elle dorme*, &c. I sleep, &c. In the present subjunctive, *que eu durma*, &c. that I may sleep; and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus; *dorme tu, durma elle, durmamos nós, dormi vós, durmaõ elles*, sleep thou, &c.

*Of the irregular Verb fugir, to fly away.*

This verb is irregular in the present indicative, and is thus conjugated: *fújo*, *foges*, *fóge*, *fugimos*, *fugís*, *fógem*, I run away, &c. It is also irregular in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus: *fóge tu*, *fúja elle*, *fujamos nós*, *fugí vós*, *fujão elles*. Finally, it is irregular in the present subjunctive; *que eu fúja*, *fújas*, &c.



It keeps the *u* in all other tenses and moods, as also the *g*.

The verb *surgir*, to arrive, or to come to an anchor, has the same irregularity, and makes *súrto*, in the participle passive.

The verbs *subir*, *cubrir*, *encubrir*, *descubrir*, *acudir*, *butir*, *sumir*, *consumir*, *cuspir*, *construir*, *tossir*, &c. have the same irregularity in regard to the letter *u*.

*Of the irregular Verb pedir, to ask.*

This verb is irregular in the first person singular of the present indicative and subjunctive, as well as in the imperative, in which it changes the *d* into *ç*.

Indicative.

|                             |                      |
|-----------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>eu péço</i> , I ask, &c. | <i>nós pedimos</i> . |
| <i>tu pédes</i> ,           | <i>vós pedís</i> .   |
| <i>elle péde</i> ,          | <i>elles pedem</i> . |

Imperative.

|                    |              |                      |               |
|--------------------|--------------|----------------------|---------------|
| <i>péde tu</i> ,   | ask thou.    | <i>peçâmos nos</i> , | let us ask.   |
| <i>péça elle</i> , | let him ask. | <i>pedí vós</i> ,    | ask you.      |
|                    |              | <i>péçaõ elles</i> , | let them ask. |

Subjunctive.

|                                          |                  |
|------------------------------------------|------------------|
| <i>que eu péça</i> , that I may ask, &c. | <i>peçâmos</i> . |
| <i>péças</i> ,                           | <i>peçâis</i> .  |
| <i>péça</i> .                            | <i>péçaõ</i> .   |

In like manner is conjugated the verb *medir*, to measure : *eu méço*, *tu médes*, &c.

*Of the irregular Verb vestir, to dress.*

Indicative.

Present.

|                   |              |                   |
|-------------------|--------------|-------------------|
| <i>eu visto</i> , | I dress, &c. | <i>vestimos</i> . |
| <i>véstes</i> ,   |              | <i>vestís</i> .   |
| <i>véste</i> ,    |              | <i>véstem</i> .   |



## Imperative.

|                    |                |                      |                 |
|--------------------|----------------|----------------------|-----------------|
| <i>vêste tu,</i>   | dress thou.    | <i>vistâmos nos,</i> | let us dress.   |
| <i>vista elle,</i> | let him dress. | <i>vesti vós,</i>    | dress you.      |
|                    |                | <i>vistaõ elles,</i> | let them dress. |

## Subjunctive.

## Present.

|                      |                       |                  |
|----------------------|-----------------------|------------------|
| <i>que eu vista,</i> | that I may dress, &c. | <i>vistâmos.</i> |
| <i>vistas,</i>       |                       | <i>vistâis,</i>  |
| <i>vista,</i>        |                       | <i>vistaõ.</i>   |

In all other tenses and moods it keeps the letter *e*; and in like manner is conjugated the verb *despir*.

*Of the irregular Verb sortir, to furnish, or stock.*

*Feyjó* says, that the *o* of this verb is to be changed into *u*, in those tenses where the *t* is followed by *e* or *a*, and that it is to be kept, when the *t* is followed by *i*; but in the *Fábula dos planêtas* we read, *surtio effeyto*, it took effect: and in *Andrade 2 part. Apologet.* we read, *naõ sortiraõ effeyto*, where the verb *sortiraõ* is in the same tense, viz. in the preterperfect definite; therefore nothing can be determined about the irregularity of this verb.

*Of the irregular Verb carpír, to weep.*

This verb is defective, and is only used in those tenses and persons where the *p* is followed by *i*; as *carpimos, carpís*, we weep, you weep. Preterimperfect, *carpia, carpías*, &c. I did weep, &c.

*Of the irregular Verb parír, to bring forth young as any female doth.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present.

|                  |                    |                 |
|------------------|--------------------|-----------------|
| <i>eu páiro,</i> | I bring forth, &c. | <i>parimos.</i> |
| <i>páres,</i>    |                    | <i>parís.</i>   |
| <i>páre,</i>     |                    | <i>párem.</i>   |

## Imperfect.

*paria, &c.*



## Imperative Mood.

|                                       |                  |
|---------------------------------------|------------------|
| <i>páre tu,</i> bring thou forth, &c, | <i>pairámos.</i> |
| <i>paíra élla,</i>                    | <i>parí.</i>     |
|                                       | <i>paíraõ.</i>   |

## Subjunctive.

## Present.

|                                          |                  |
|------------------------------------------|------------------|
| <i>que êu paíra,</i> that I may say, &c. | <i>pairámos.</i> |
| <i>paíras,</i>                           | <i>pairáís.</i>  |
| <i>paíra,</i>                            | <i>paíraõ.</i>   |

*Of the irregular Verb repetír, to repeat.*

## Indicative.

## Present.

|                              |                   |
|------------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>repíto,</i> I repeat, &c. | <i>repetímos.</i> |
| <i>repêtes,</i>              | <i>repetís.</i>   |
| <i>repête,</i>               | <i>repêtem.</i>   |

## Imperfect.

*repetía, repetías, &c.*

## Preterperfect definite.

*repetí, repetíste, &c.*

## Imperative.

|                                    |                           |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>repête tu,</i> repeat thou, &c. | <i>repitámos, &amp;c.</i> |
| <i>repíta êlle,</i>                |                           |

## Subjunctive.

## Present.

|                         |                        |
|-------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>que êu repíta,</i>   | that I may repeat, &c. |
| <i>repítas, &amp;c.</i> |                        |

## Imperfect.

*repetíra, or repetísse, that I might repeat.*

*Of the irregular Verbs sahír, to go out, and cahír, to fall.*

## Indicative.

## Present.

|                            |                 |
|----------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>sáyo,</i> I go out, &c. | <i>sahímos.</i> |
| <i>sáhes,</i>              | <i>sahís.</i>   |
| <i>sáhe,</i>               | <i>sáhem.</i>   |

## Preterimperfect.

*sahía, sahías, &c.*



Preterperfect definite,  
*sahí, sahíste, &c.*

Imperative.

|                   |                     |
|-------------------|---------------------|
|                   | <i>sahámos nós.</i> |
| <i>sáhe tu,</i>   | <i>sahí vós.</i>    |
| <i>sáya elle,</i> | <i>sáyaõ elles.</i> |

Subjunctive.

*que eu sáya, sáyas, &c.*

This is the common way of writing the irregular tenses of the verb *sahír* as well as those of the verb *cahír*, viz. *ou cáyo, tu cáhes, &c.* I fall, &c. according to *Feyjó*,

*Of the irregular Verb, ordír, to warp in a loom.*

*Feyjó* says that this verb changes the *o* into *u*, in those persons where it would otherwise meet with the syllables *da, de, do.*

*Of the irregular Verb advertír, to warn.*

*Advertír* is irregular in the following tenses, only by changing *vir* into *vér*.

Indicative.

Present.

|                                 |                    |
|---------------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>advírto, I warn, &amp;c.</i> | <i>advertímos.</i> |
| <i>advértés,</i>                | <i>advertís.</i>   |
| <i>advérte,</i>                 | <i>advértem.</i>   |

Imperative.

|                                       |                        |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>advérte tu, warn thou, &amp;c.</i> | <i>advirtamos nós.</i> |
| <i>advírta elle,</i>                  | <i>advertí vós.</i>    |
|                                       | <i>advírtaõ elles.</i> |

Subjunctive.

Present.

|                                                 |                    |
|-------------------------------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>que eu advírta, that I may warn, &amp;c.</i> | <i>advirtámos.</i> |
| <i>advírtas,</i>                                | <i>advirtáis.</i>  |
| <i>advírta,</i>                                 | <i>advírtaõ.</i>   |



*The Conjugation of the irregular Verb pôr, to place.*

## Indicative.

## Present.

|                           |                 |
|---------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>pônho</i> , I put, &c. | <i>pômos</i> .  |
| <i>põem</i> ,             | <i>pôndes</i> . |
| <i>põem</i> ,             | <i>põem</i> .   |

## Preterimperfect.

|                           |                   |
|---------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>púnha</i> , I did put. | <i>púnhamos</i> . |
| <i>púnhas</i> ,           | <i>púnheis</i> .  |
| <i>púnha</i> ,            | <i>púnhaõ</i> .   |

## Preterperfect definite.

|                         |                   |
|-------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>púz</i> , I put, &c. | <i>puzémos</i> .  |
| <i>puzéste</i> ,        | <i>puzéstes</i> . |
| <i>póz</i> ,            | <i>puzéraõ</i> .  |

## Preterperfect.

It is composed of the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *têr*, and the participle *pôsto*.

## Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pôsto*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *têr*.

## Future.

|                                         |                  |
|-----------------------------------------|------------------|
| <i>porêi</i> , I shall or will put, &c. | <i>porémos</i> . |
| <i>porás</i> ,                          | <i>poréis</i> .  |
| <i>porá</i> ,                           | <i>poráõ</i> .   |

## Imperative.

|                             |                       |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>põem</i> , put thou, &c. | <i>ponhámos nós</i> . |
| <i>pónha</i> elle,          | <i>pónde vós</i> .    |
|                             | <i>pónhaõ elles</i> . |

## Optative and Subjunctive.

## Present.

*que eu pónha*, that I may put, &c.  
*pónhas*, &c.

## First Preterimperfect.

*que eu puzera* or *puzesse*, that I might put, &c.  
*puzeras* or *puzesses*, &c.

H



## Second Preterimperfect.

*eu poria,* I should put, &c.  
*porias,* &c.

## Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pósto*, and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

## Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pósto*, and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

## Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pósto*, and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

## Future.

*quando eu pusér,* when I shall put, &c.  
*puséres,* &c.

## Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *pósto*, and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

## Infinitive.

## Present.

*pôr,* to put.

## Gerund.

*pôndo,* putting.

## Participle passive.

*pósto,* put.

After the same manner are conjugated the verbs derived from *por*; as *compôr*, to compose; *dispôr*, to dispose; *propôr*, to propose, &c.

Some verbs are irregular only in the participle passive; as *abérto*, from *abrír*; *escríto*, from *escrever*, &c.

---

*Of Verbs Neuter.*

Verbs neuter are those which make a complete sense of themselves, and do not govern any case af-



ter them, like the verbs active ; as *dormir*, to sleep ; *andar*, to go ; *tremér*, to tremble, &c. But you must take notice that we meet with some verbs neuter which may govern an accusative ; as *dormir hum sono profundo*, to sleep soundly ; *eu fui andando meu caminho, e não disse húma palavra*, I went my way, and said not a word. We may also say, that the verbs neuter are those which, in their compound tenses, are seldom or never conjugated with the verb *sér*, to be ; as, I sleep, I tremble, I speak, &c. We may indeed say, *eu tenho dormido*, I have slept ; *eu tenho tremido*, I have trembled ; but not, I am slept, &c. I said *seldom*, because sometimes the verbs neuter may be conjugated with the verb *ser* ; as, *sér bem fallado*, to have a good name.

It is necessary to be acquainted with the nature of a verb neuter, to avoid mistakes in the participle, as may be seen in the Syntax of Participles.

### *Of Reciprocal Verbs.*

The name of Reciprocal Verbs is given to such as return the action upon the agent, and are conjugated through all their tenses with the pronouns conjunctive *me, te, se, &c.*

#### Example.

| Indicative.                       | Present.          |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>eu me arrependo,</i>           | I repent, &c.     |
| <i>tu te arrependes,</i>          |                   |
| <i>elle se arrepende, &amp;c.</i> |                   |
| Imperfect.                        |                   |
| <i>eu me arrependia,</i>          | I did repent, &c. |

and so of the rest.

Yet we are to take notice that the pronouns conjunctive *me, te, &c.* may be placed either before or after the verb, in the indicative, and consequently we may say, *eu me lembro*, or *eu lembro-me*, I re-



member; *me lembréi*, or *lembréi-me*, I remembered, &c. But in the imperative they ought to be placed after the verb, as in the following

Example.

*lémbra-te tu*, remember thou, &c.  
*lémbre-se elle*,

*lembrémo-nos nós.*

*lembrái-vos vós.*

*lémbrem se elles.*

In which example you must observe also, that the first person plural, which in the other verbs is like the first person plural of the present subjunctive, has the last consonant, *s*, cut off; and so from *lembrémos* we cut off the *s* to make *lembrémo-nos*; and from *arrependámos* we make *arrependámo-nos*, &c. In regard to the infinitive, we may say, *hé necessário arrepender-se dos peccados*, it is necessary to repent sins; *he necessário lembrar-se*, it is necessary to remember; and not *se arrepender*, or *se lembrar*. In like manner we may say, *lembrando-me*, remembering, and not *me lembrando*. Yet you must take notice that the present infinitive may be preceded by the particle *pará*, (which forms the Portuguese supine) and then the pronoun conjunctive may be placed either before or after it; and so we may say, *para lembrar-se*, or *para se lembrar*, to remember, or in order to remember.

As for the subjunctive mood, you must put the pronoun conjunctive before the present: but you must carefully observe, that the pronouns conjunctive must be placed before it when preceded by the particles *se*, if, *que*, that; and so you may say, *que eu me lembrásse*, *se eu me lembrásse*, that I might remember, &c. but not *que eu lembrásse me*, &c. But when the first preterimperfect is not preceded by any particle, then you must place the pronoun conjunctive after it; as, *arrependerame eu disse*, I wish I repented it.

In the second preterimperfect we may place the pronouns conjunctive either before or after it, there-



fore you may say *arrependeria-me se*, &c. or *eu me arrependeria se*, &c. I should repent if, &c.

In the future you must always place the pronouns conjunctive before it; and so we may say, *quando eu me lembrar*, when I shall remember: but **not** *quando eu lembrar-me*.

Note, all the verbs active may become reciprocals.

Example.

*eu me amo*, I love myself.  
*tu te amas*, thou lovest thyself.  
*elle se ama*, he loves himself.  
*nos nos amamos*, we love ourselves, &c.

*The Conjugation of the reciprocal Verb ir-se, to go away.*

Indicative.

Present.

*eu me vou*, I go away.  
*tu te vas*, &c. thou goest away, &c.

Preterimperfect.

*eu me hia*, I did go away.  
*tu te hias*, &c. thou didst go away, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

*eu me fui*, I went away.  
*tu te foste*, &c. thou wentest away, &c.

Preterperfect.

*eu me tenho ido*, I am gone away, or I have gone away.  
*tu te tens ido*, &c. thou hast gone away, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

*eu me tinha ido*, I was gone away, or I had gone away.  
*tu te tinhas ido*, &c. thou hast gone away, &c.

Future.

*eu me irei*, &c. I shall or will go away.  
*tu te iras*, &c. thou shalt go away.

Imperative.

*vai-te*, go thou away.  
*va-se*, let him go away.  
*vamo-nos*, let us go away.  
*ide-vos*, go away, get away, or get you gone.  
*vao-se*, let them go away.



## Subjunctive.

## Present.

*que eu me vá,* that I may go away.  
*que tu te vás, &c.* that thou mayest go away, &c.

## First Preterimperfect.

*eu me fôra, or me fôsse,* I went away.  
*te fôras, or te fôsses, &c.* thou wentest away, &c.

## Second Preterimperfect.

*eu me iria,* I would, &c. go away.  
*tu te irias,* thou wouldst, &c.

## Preterperfect.

*que eu me ténha ido,* that I have gone away, &c.

## Preterpluperfect.

*que eu me tivéra, or me tivésse ido,* that I had gone away.

## Second Preterpluperfect.

*eu me teria ido,* I should have gone away, &c.

## Future.

*quando eu me fôr,* when I shall go away, &c.

## Second Future.

*quando eu me tiver ido,* when I shall have gone away, &c.

## Infinitive.

*ir-se,* to go away.

## Preterperfect.

*tér-se ido,* to have gone away.

## Participles.

## Present.

*que se vá,* that is gone away.



## Preterit.

*ído,* gone away.

## Future.

*que há de ir-se,* that is to go away.

## Gerunds.

*índo-se,* going away.*têndo-se ído,* having gone away.

## Supine.

*para ir-se,* to go, or in order to go away.

You must observe, that in the compound tenses the pronouns *me, te, &c.* are placed before the auxiliary verb.

2dly. This verb is also said of vessels to signify their being leaky; as *vái-se a cúba*, the tub leaks. It is also used before the gerunds; as, *a invérno vái-se acabádo*, the winter is drawing towards an end; *élles vaõ-se preparádo*, they are preparing themselves: in which examples and in the like, the verb is to be rendered into English by the verb *to be* itself, and without addition of the adverb *away*; and sometimes it is placed before the present infinitive; as, *ir-se deitár*, to go to bed.

*Of the reciprocal Verb vír-se, to come away.*

This verb is to be conjugated like the verb *vir*; but you must place the pronouns conjunctive, *me, te, &c.* according to the observations we have made above.

*Of the reciprocal Verb avír-se, to agree.*

This is a compound verb, which is to be conjugated by putting the particle *a* before the verb *vir* in all its tenses and moods; but you must always



make use of the observations already made about the pronouns conjunctive; and the same care must be had with the reciprocal verb *havér-se*, to behave; in the conjugation of which, you have nothing to do but to add the pronouns conjunctive to the verb *havér*.

### Impersonal Verbs.

There are three sorts of verbs impersonal, which have only the third person singular.

The first are properly impersonals of themselves; as,

|                 |                                      |
|-----------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>succéde,</i> | it happens.                          |
| <i>básta,</i>   | it is enough, <i>or</i> it suffices. |
| <i>chóve,</i>   | it rains.                            |
| <i>trovéja,</i> | it thunders.                         |

The second are derived from verbs active, followed by the particle *se*, which renders them impersonal; as, *áma-se*, they love; *diz-se*, they say; *nóta-se*, it is noted. They are also called passive impersonals.

The third, which have a great affinity with reciprocal verbs, are conjugated with the pronouns conjunctive, *me*, *te*, *lhe*, *nos*, *vos*, *lhes*; as *dóe me*, *dóe-te*, *dóe-lhe*, &c.

The impersonal verbs of themselves are,

|                     |                                     |
|---------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>convém,</i>      | it is convenient.                   |
| <i>succéde,</i>     | it happens, <i>or</i> it falls out. |
| <i>está-me bem,</i> | it becomes me.                      |
| <i>básta,</i>       | it is enough.                       |
| <i>há-se,</i>       | it is necessary.                    |
| <i>chovísca,</i>    | it misles.                          |
| <i>chóve,</i>       | <i>or cáhe pédra,</i> it hails.     |
| <i>géa,</i>         | it freezes.                         |
| <i>néva,</i>        | it snows.                           |
| <i>fuzila,</i>      | <i>or relampaguéa,</i> it lightens. |
| <i>impórta,</i>     | it matters, it concerns.            |
| <i>paréce,</i>      | it seems.                           |



and the like, which are conjugated with the third persons, singular of each tense; as,

Indicative.

Present.

*chóve,* it rains.

Imperfect.

*chovia,* it did rain.

Preterperfect definite.

*choveo,* it rained.

Preterperfect.

*tem chovido,* it has rained.

Preterpluperfect.

*tinha chovido,* it had rained.

Future.

*choverá,* it shall or will rain.

Imperative.

*chóva,* let it rain.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

*que chóva,* that it may rain.

Imperfect.

*que chovêra, or chovêsse,* that it might rain.

Second Imperfect.

*choveria,* it should rain.

Future.

*quando chovêr,* when it shall rain.

Second Future.

*quando tiver chovido,* when it shall have rained.

Infinitive.

*chovêr,* to rain.



The particle *se*, which composes the second sort of impersonal verbs, may be placed either before or after them; as *diz-se*, they say; *sábe-se*, it is known; *sabía-se*, it was known: *lôgo se sôube*, it was immediately known; *se diz*, it is said, &c. but sometimes they make no use of the particle *se*, and only put the verb in the third person plural; as, *dízem*, instead of *se diz*, they say.

In like manner all the verbs active may become impersonal.

In regard to these verbs, take notice, that when the noun that follows them is in the singular number, you must put the verb in the singular; if the noun be in the plural, you put the verb in the plural.

#### Example.

*Lôuva-se o capitão*, they praise the captain.

*Lôuvaõ-se os capitães*, they praise the captains.

*Vê-se hum hómem*, they see a man.

*Vêm-se homens*, they see men.

When *lhe* is used after the word *se*, then *lhe* is to be rendered into English by *his* or *her*; as, *lôuva-se-lhe o valôr*, they praise his or her courage.

The third sort of impersonal verbs are such as are conjugated with the pronouns personal, *me*, *te*, *lhe*, &c. with the third person singular.

#### Example.

#### Indicative.

##### Present.

*desagrâda-me,*

I am displeased, or it displeases me.

*desagrâda-te,*

thou art displeased.

*desagrâda-lhe,*

he or she is displeased.

*desagrâda-nos,*

we are displeased.

*desagrâda-vos,*

you are displeased.

*desagrâda-lhes,*

they are displeased.

##### Imperfect.

*desagradáva-me,*

I was displeased.



Preterperfect definite.

*desagradôu-me,* I was displeased.

Future.

*desagradár-me-há,* I shall be displeased.

Optative.

*que me desagrade,* that I may be displeased.

Imperfect.

*que me desagradára or me desagradásse,* that I were displeased.

Second Imperfect.

*desagradár-me-hía,* I should be displeased.

Conjugate after the same manner,

*succêde-me,* it happens to me.

*dôe-me,* it grieves or it pains me.

*parêce-me,* it seems to me.

*hé-me preciso,* it behoves me.

*agrada-me,* it pleases me.

*lembro-me,* I remember.

Many of these impersonal verbs have the third person singular and plural ; as,

*dôe me a perna,* my leg pains me.

*dóem-me os olhos,* I have sore eyes.

*o vósso vestido parêce-me nôvo,* your coat appears new to me.

*os vóssos sapátos me parêcem muito compridos,* your shoes seem to me too long.

*Of the Verb sêr, to be.*

The verb *ser* is also used as an impersonal, as it appears in the following examples: *hé têmpo de levantar-se,* it is time to get up; *éra têmpo de hîr,* it was time to go, &c. and particularly when it is conjugated with the adjectives *preciso* or *necessário* ; as, *he preciso or necessário fazer isto,* this must be done; *éra preciso or necessário escrevêr,* it was necessary to write; *eu iria, se fôsse preciso,* I would go, if it



should be necessary; *hé preciso que eu vá*, I must go; *hé preciso que eu léya*, I must read; *hé preciso que elle coma*, he must eat; *seria preciso que eu fósse*, I should go. You see by the last examples, that when the verb *ser* and the adjective are before the conjunctive mood, with the participle *que*, the conjunctive is rendered in English by the infinitive; but if the verb *ser* is followed by the relative or participle *que*, it must then be rendered in English in the following manner; as *eu hé que ténho feito aquillo*, 'tis I who have done that; *tu hé que téns*, &c. 'tis thou who hast, &c. *elle hé que tem*, &c. 'tis he who, &c. *nós hé que temos*, &c. 'tis we who have, &c. *vós hé que têndes*, &c. 'tis you who have, &c. *elles hé que têm*, &c. 'tis they have, &c. *a ley hé que o manda*, 'tis the law that prescribes it; *ella hé que o cré*, 'tis she who believes it; *elles hé que o fizeraõ*? is it they have done it? *eu hé que o fiz*, 'twas I who did it; *então hé que eu tomo as minhas medidas*, 'tis then I take my measures; *então he que eu vi*, 'twas then I saw, or only then I saw. You may observe that *que* is not relative in the last examples, and that it is left out in English.

*Of the Verb havêr, when it is impersonal.*

It is to be so conjugated.

Indicative.

Present.

*há*, or *naõ há*, there is, or there is not, or there are, or there are not.

Imperfect.

*havia*, there was, or there were.

Preterperfect definite.

*houve*, there was, or there were.



## Preterperfect.

*tem havido,* there has been *or* there have been.

## Preterpluperfect.

*tinha havido,* there had been.

## Future.

*haverá,* there shall be.

## Imperative.

*hája,* let there be.

## Optative and Subjunctive.

*que hája,* that there may be.

## Imperfect.

*que houvera or houveresse,* that there were.

## Second Imperfect.

*haveria,* there would be.

## Preterperfect.

*que ténha havido,* if there had been.

## Preterpluperfect.

*se tivésse havido,* if there had been.

## Future.

*quando houver,* when there will *or* shall be.

## Second Future.

*quando tiver havido,* when there shall have been.

## Infinitive.

*haver,* there to be.

## Pret.

*têr havido,* there to have been.

## Gerunds.

*havendo,* there being.

*tendo havido,* in there having been.

Those who learn Portuguese are greatly at a loss how to render the following expressions, *there is not* ;



*is there?* and though there is nothing so easy; however, I have explained them at large in the following conjugation.

*Conjugation of the Verb impersonal there is, há, when it marks the place, through all its tenses.*

|                                  |                                        |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------------|
| There is of it,                  | <i>há lá disso.</i>                    |
| There is not of it,              | <i>naõ há lá disso.</i>                |
| Is there of it?                  | <i>há lá disso?</i>                    |
| Is there not of it?              | <i>naõ há lá disso?</i>                |
| There was of it,                 | <i>havia lá disso.</i>                 |
| There was not of it,             | <i>naõ havia lá disso.</i>             |
| Was there of it?                 | <i>havia lá disso?</i>                 |
| Was there not of it?             | <i>naõ havia lá disso?</i>             |
| There was of it,                 | <i>houve lá disso.</i>                 |
| There was not of it,             | <i>naõ houve lá disso.</i>             |
| Was there of it?                 | <i>houve lá disso?</i>                 |
| Was there not of it?             | <i>naõ houve lá disso?</i>             |
| There shall be of it,            | <i>haverá lá disso.</i>                |
| There shall not be of it,        | <i>naõ haverá lá disso.</i>            |
| Shall there be of it?            | <i>haverá lá disso?</i>                |
| Shall there not be of it?        | <i>naõ haverá lá disso?</i>            |
| That there may be of it,         | <i>que haja lá disso.</i>              |
| That there may not be of it,     | <i>naõ haja lá disso. [disso.</i>      |
| That there were of it,           | <i>que houvéra or houvesse lá</i>      |
| That there were not of it,       | <i>naõ houvéra or houvesse lá</i>      |
| There would be of it,            | <i>haveria lá disso. [disso.</i>       |
| There would not be of it,        | <i>naõ haveria lá disso.</i>           |
| Would there not be of it?        | <i>naõ haveria lá disso?</i>           |
| If there had been of it,         | <i>se tivésse havido lá disso.</i>     |
| If there had not been of it,     | <i>se naõ tivésse havido lá disso.</i> |
| Had there been of it?            | <i>teria havido lá disso?</i>          |
| Had there not been of it?        | <i>naõ teria havido lá disso?</i>      |
| There would have been of it,     | <i>teria havido lá disso.</i>          |
| There would not have been of it, | <i>naõ teria havido lá disso.</i>      |
| Would there have been of it?     | <i>teria havido lá disso?</i>          |
| Would there not have been of it? | <i>naõ teria havido lá disso?</i>      |
| When there will be of it,        | <i>quando houver lá disso.</i>         |
| When there will not be of it,    | <i>quando naõ houver lá disso.</i>     |



|                                             |                                                      |
|---------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------|
| When there will have been<br>of it,         | <i>quando tiver havido lá disso.</i>                 |
| When there will not have<br>been of it,     | <i>quando não tiver havido lá<br/>disso.</i>         |
| Will there have been of it?                 | <i>terá havido lá disso?</i>                         |
| Will there not have been too<br>much of it? | <i>não terá havido lá disso?</i>                     |
| For there having been too<br>much of it,    | <i>por têr havido lá demasiada-<br/>mente disso.</i> |
| In there having been too little<br>of it.   | <i>têndo havido lá muito pouco<br/>disso.</i>        |

Most ways of speaking beginning with *some*, and the verb *to be*, are expressed in Portuguese by the impersonal *há*; as, some friends are false, *ha amigos falsos*; some Christians are unworthy of that name, *há Christãos que não são dignos de tal nome*.

Observe that *há* comes before a substantive even of the plural number.

The impersonal *ha* is besides used to denote a quantity of time, space, and number; as, *há dez annos que morréo*, he has been dead these ten years; or, he died ten years ago; *ha trinta milhôens d'almas em França*, there are thirty millions of souls in France; *de Páris a Lóndres ha 120 légoas*, Paris is 120 leagues from London.

The question of space is asked thus, *quanto há de Paris a Londres?* how far is Paris from London?

*Of the impersonal Verb há-se, it is necessary, or must.*

This verb answers to the Italian *bisogna*, and to the French *il faut*, and always requires after it the particle *de*, and the infinitive. It denotes the necessity of doing something, and is Englished by *must*, and sometimes by the verb *to be*, through all its tenses, with some of these words, *necessary, requisite, needful*: and as it denotes the necessity of doing something in general, without specifying who *must*, therefore the subject coming before *must* may be either *I* or *we*, *he*, or *she*, or *any body*, according to the sense of the speech; as,



*Há-se de fazer aquillo*, one, or we, or you, or he, or somebody must do that.

*Há-se de hír*, I or you, or we or somebody must go.

Sometimes the verb coming after this impersonal, is Englished by the passive voice; as, *há-se de fazer isto*, this must be done.

It is very often joined with *mistér*; as, *há-se de mistér dinheiro para demándas*, one must have money to go to law; *há-se de mistér hum bóm amigo para fazer fortuna no mundo*, to push one's fortune in the world, one must have a good friend.

As for the conjugation of this verb, you must make use of the verb *to be* with *necessary*, as I have already said.

#### Example.

Present, *há-se*, it is necessary. Imperfect, *havía-se*, it was necessary; and so through all the tenses and moods.

You must take notice, that sometimes the infinitive that follows the particle *de* is placed between this impersonal and its particle *se*; as, *há-de achár-se*, it will be found, and sometimes the infinitive precedes the impersonal, and this follows the particle *se*; as, *achár-se-há*, it will be found; and in this case you must not join the particle *de* to it. Observe, that the infinitive may be also placed between the imperfect tense of this impersonal verb and its particle *se*; as, *havía de achár-se*, it was to be found; but when the infinitive precedes both the impersonal and its particle *se*, then you must put the particle *se* before the impersonal, and make use of the imperfect *hía*, and not *havía*; so you may say, *achár-se hía*, and not *achár-se-havía*.



*Of the defective Verbs carpír, to weep, and soêr, to be wont.*

The verb *carpír* is used only in those tenses and persons where the *p* is followed by an *i*; as, *carpí-mos, carpís*, we weep, you weep. Preterimp. *carpía, carpías*, &c. I did weep, &c.

The verb *soêr* is only used in the third persons of the present indicative of the preterimperfect of the same mood, and in the gerund; as, *êlle sóe*, he is wont; *êlles sóem*, they are wont. Imperf. *êlle soía*, he was wont; *êlles soíão*, they were wont. Gerund, *soêndo*, being wont.

## CHAP. V.

### *Of the Participles.*

THE participle is a tense of the infinitive, which serves to form the preterperfects and preterpluperfects of all the verbs; as, *ténho amádo*, I have loved; *tinha amádo*, I had loved.

*Amádo* is a participle, and all the verbs in *ar* form the participle in *ádo*; as, *amádo, cantádo*, &c.

*Amádo* is likewise a noun adjective. Example. *Hômem amádo, molhêr amáda; livros amádos, lêtras amádas.*

Some participles are frequently abridged; as, *envólto*, or *envolvído*, *corrúpto* or *corrompído*, *enxúto* or *enxugádo*; and several others, which the use of authors will point out to you.

The regular verbs ending in *er* or *ir* form the participle in *ido*; as, *vendído, recebído, luzído, nutrído*, &c.



There are three sorts of participles; namely, active, passive, and absolute.

The active participles are composed of the verb *têr*; as, *tênho amado*, *tinha amado*, &c.

The passive participles are preceded by the verb *sêr*, to be; as, *sôu amado*, *sêndo louvado*, &c.

The passive participles are of the same nature as those called *absolute* in Latin; and you must observe, that *having* and *being* are often left out in Portuguese.

#### EXAMPLE.

*Feito isto*, having done this.

*Dito isto*, having said so.

*Acabada a cea*, after he or they have supped.

The auxiliary and participle are not always immediately joined together in compound tenses; as, *Nós têmos, com a graça de Deos, vencido os nossos inimigos*, we have, by the grace of God, overcome our enemies.

## CHAP. VI.

### *Of the Adverbs.*

**T**HE adverb is that which gives more or less force to the verb.

The adverb has the same effect with the verb as the adjective with the substantive: it explains the accidents and circumstances of the action of the verb.

There are a great many sorts; as, adverbs of time, place, quantity, &c.

Adverbs of time; as, at present, *presentemente*; now, *agóra*; yesterday, *ontem*; to day, *hoje*; never,



*nunca*; always, *sémpre*; in the mean time; *entretanto*.

Adverbs of place; as, where, *onde*; here, *aqui*; from whence, *dónde*; there, *alí*; from hence, *daquí*; above, *em cima*; below, *em báxo*; far, *lônge*; near, *perto*.

Adverbs of quantity; as, how much, *quânto*, how many, *quântos*; or *quântas*; so much, *tânto*; much, *muito*; little, *pouco*.

A great many adverbs are formed from adjectives, changing *o* into *amente*; *santo*, *santamente*, holily; *rico*, *ricamente*, richly; *douto*, *doutamente*, learnedly.

From adjectives in *e* or *l* we likewise form adverbs, by adding *mente* to them; as,

*Constante*, *constantemente*, constantly.

*Diligente*, *diligentemente*, diligently.

*Prudente*, *prudentemente*, prudently.

*Fiel*, *fielmente*, faithfully.

In order to assist the memory of those who are learning the Portuguese language, I have here collected a large number of adverbs, which, by frequent repetition, may be easily retained, especially those terminated in *mente*.

#### A Collection of Adverbs.

*Abundantemente*, abundantly.

*Com razão*, justamente, justly.

*Absolutamente*, absolutely.

*A Escachapernas*, or *a cavalleiro*, a-straddle.

*Agóra*, or *por hora*, now at this time.

*Já para já*, now, immediately.

*Com condição*, upon condition.

*De parte*, aside.

*De travéz*, askew, askint;

as, *olhar de travéz*, to look askew, or askint.

*Atualmente*, actually.

*De propósito*, purposely.

*Adêos*, farewell.

*Admiravelmente*,

*Maravilhosamente*,

*A's mil maravilhas*,

*Astutamente*, cunningly.

*Atreiçoadamente*, treacherously.

*De maravilha*, very seldom.

*A miúdo*, often.

*Assim*, so.

*Tão*, so.

*A'prêssa*, in haste.

*Facilmente*, easily.

*A'o avêssô*, or *às avéssas*, the wrong side outward.

} admirably.



*De improvizo, or improvisa-  
mente, at unawares.*

*Antigamente, anciently.*

*Quási, pretty near, almost.*

*Então, then.*

*Dêsde então, since that time.*

*Dêsde quando? since when?*

*De quando ha? from what  
time? how long?*

*De quando em quando, now  
and then, ever and anon.*

*Quando bem, or ainda quando,  
albeit, although it should  
be.*

*Quando muito, at the most.*

*Quando menos, at least.*

*Cá, here, or hither.*

*Lá, there.*

*Alí, there, in that place.*

*Ahi, { there, expresses the  
place where stands the  
person spoken to; as,  
ahi onde estás, there  
where you are.*

*Acolá, there.*

*Tráz, or detrás, behind.*

*Para trás, backward.*

*Isto hé, to wit.*

*Em vez, instead.*

*Também, also.*

*Tanto que, } as soon as.  
Logo que, }*

*De pensádo, wilfully.*

*Acáso, by chance.*

*Fixamente, stedfastly.*

*Finalmente, finally.*

*Livremente, freely.*

*Muito, much.*

*Depréssa, quickly.*

*Aquí, here.*

*Até aquí, as far as here, or  
till now, or hitherto.*

*D'aquí em diante, hencefor-  
ward, or hereafter.*

*Bem, well.*

*A' manhãa, to-morrow.*

*A' manhãa pela manhãa, to-  
morrow morning.*

*Depois d' a' manhãa, after  
to morrow.*

*Ultimamente, lastly.*

*Cômo, as.*

*Cômo? how?*

*Cêdo, soon.*

*Târde, late.*

*Primeiro que, before that.*

*Primeiro que tudo, before all,  
or in the first place.*

*Fôra, abroad, out.*

*Já, already.*

*De salto, at one jump.*

*De quando em quando, from  
time to time.*

*Antes, before.*

*Depois, afterwards.*

*Juntamente, together.*

*Enteiramente, entirely.*

*Ao redór, or em tôrno, about.*

*De bálde, in vain.*

*Loucamente, madly.*

*Muito, very.*

*Atrevidamente, boldly.*

*Felicemente, happily.*

*Vergonhósamente, shamefully*

*Nunca, never.*

*Nunca mais, never since.*

*Lógo, immediately.*

*Ainda, yet; as, ainda não  
véio, he is not come yet.*

*Ainda, even; as, seria ver-  
gónha ainda o fallár nisso,  
it were a shame even to  
speak of it.*

*Nem se quer, even.*

*Vilmemente, basely.*

*Mal, ill.*

*Máis, more.*

*Ménos, less.*

*Até, until or even.*

*Sim, yes.*



*Naõ*, no, not.

*O'nde*, where.

*De cór*, by heart.

*A's vêzes*, sometimes, [from  
time to time.

*Quando*, when.

*Náda*, nothing.

*Verdadeiramente*, truly.

*Dêntro*, within.

*Devagár*, softly.

## CHAP. VII.

### *Of the Prepositions.*

**P**REPOSITIONS are a part of speech indeclinable, most commonly set before a noun, a pronoun, or verb.

Every preposition requires some case after it, as you will see in the following collection:

#### Genitive.

*Antes do día*, before day-break.

*Diãte de Deos*, before God.

*Dêntro da igrêja*, within the church.

*De trás ao palácio*, behind the palace.

*Debáxo da mêsa*, under the table.

*Em cima da mêsa*, upon the table.

*Além*, besides.

*Além dos mares*, on that side of the seas.

*Além disso*, besides that, moreover.

*Além de que*, idem.

*Aquem, or dáquem dos mares*, on this side of the seas.

*Ao redór, or em contórno da cidade*, round about the city.

*Pérto de Lóndres*, near London.

*Acêrca da quêlle negócio*, concerning that affair.

*Fora da casa*, out of the house.

*Fóra de perigo*, out of danger.

*Fóra de si*, out of one's wits.

*This preposition governs also a nominative; as, fóra seu irmão, except his brother, or his brother excepted.*

*De frônte de minha casa*, over-against my house.

*De frônte da igrêja*, facing the church.

*Despóis de cea*, after supper.

#### Dative.

*Quânto áquillo*, with respect to that.

*Pegádo á murálha*, close to the wall.



*Dêsde o bico do pé até a cabeça*, from top to toe.

Accusative.

*Perânte o juíz*, before the judge.

*E'ntre*, between, among, or amongst.

*E'ntre os homens*, among men.

*Sôbre a mēsa*, upon the table.

*Confôrme*, or *segúndo a lēy*, according to the law.

*Por amôr de Dēos*, for God's sake.

*Pelo mûndo*, through the world.

*Pela rúa*, through the streets.

*Pelas térras*, through the lands.

*Por grânde que sēja*, let it never be so great.

*Côntra elles*, against them.

*Tráz do tēmplo*, behind the temple.

*Durânte*, during ; as, *durânte o invérno*, during the winter.

We shall be more particular about prepositions when we examine their construction.

\* *A Conjunction*

## C H A P. VIII.

### *Of the Conjunctions.*

\* **A CONJUGATION** is an indeclinable part of speech which serves to join the members and parts of speech together, in shewing the dependency of relation and coherency between the words and sentences.

Some <sup>\*</sup>conjunctions are copulative, which join, and, as it were, couple two terms together ; as, *e*, and : *Portuguêses e Inglêses*, Portuguese and English.

Some are disjunctive, which shew separation or division ; as, *nem*, nor, neither ; *ou*, either, or. Example ; *nem este, nem aquêlle*, neither this, nor that ; *ou este, ou aquêlle*, either this or that ; *nem mais, nem menos*, neither more nor less ; *quer o faça, quer não, tudo para mim hé o mesmo*, it is all one to me whether he does it, or no ; *quer sēja verdade, quer não*, whether it be true, or not ; *nem se quer hum*, not even one.



The adversative denote restriction, or contrariety; as, *mas*, or *porém*, but; *contúdo*, yet, however; *mas ántes*, or *péllo contrário*, nay.

The conjunctions conditional suppose a condition, and serve to restrain and limit what has just been said; as, *se*, if; *com condiçám que*, *com isto que*, *dádo caso que*, provided that, or upon condition that, or in case that, &c.

The concessive, which shew the assent we give to a thing; as, *embóra*, or *séja embóra*, well and good; *está feito*, done, agreed.

The causal shew the reason of something; as, *porqué*, for, or because, or why.

The concluding denote a consequence drawn from what is before; as, *lógo* or *por consequência*, therefore, then, or consequently.

The transitive, which serve to pass from one sentence to another; as, *além disso*, moreover, or besides that; *sóbre tudo*, or *em súmma*, after all, upon the whole, in the main; *a propósito*, now I think on't, or now we are speaking of that.

There are others of a different sort; as, *se quér*, or *ao ménos*, at least; *aíndaque*, although; *de sorte que*, so that; *ántes quero pedir que furtár*, I'll rather ask than steal; *ántes morreréi que dizêr-volo*, I'll rather die than tell you; *já que*, since, &c.

To the above-mentioned parts of speech grammarians have added *Interjections*, which are particles serving to denote some passion or emotion of the mind; but there is another sort, which may be called demonstrative; as, *aquí* and *lá*; Ex. *éste hómem aquí*, this man; *aquélla molhér lá*, that woman, &c. and some others continuative, because they denote continuation in the speech; as, *com effeito*, in effect; *álem disso*, besides; *óra vejámos*, now let us see; *finalmente fômenos embóra*, and so, sir, we went away. To which we may add those invented to imitate the sounds of dumb creatures, and the noise which is occasioned by the clashing of bodies against one another; as, *záz*, *tráz*, thwick-thwack, &c.



*Interjective Particles.*

Of Joy.

*Ha, ha, ha! Ha, ha, ha!**Oh que gosto! Oh joy!*

Of Grief.

*Ay! Alas! ah!**Ay de mim! Woe is me! lack!**Mêu Déos! My God!*

Of Pain.

*Ay! Ay!**Oh! Oh!*

To encourage.

*A'nimo!**O'ra vámos! } Come, come on!*

To call.

*O, olá, Ho, hey, hip!*

Of admiration or surprise.

*O, O lá, ahi! Lack-a-day!**A'pre! Heyday!*

Of aversion.

*I'rra!**Náda! } Away, away with, fye!**Fóra!*

For making people go out of the way, or stand away.

*Gúardem-se, or arrédem-se! Have a care, clear the way, or stand away!*

For shouting.

*Viva! Huzza!*

Of silence.

*Caláivos! Hush! Peace!*

Of cursing and threatening.

*Ai, guái! Woe!*

For derision.

*Ah! Ah! oh! oh! oh!*

Of wishing.

*O' provéra a Déos! Would to God!*



*Oxalá!* or *hah!* O that!

*O se!* Would!

The interjection *O* serves for different emotions of the mind, as admiration, grief, wish, &c. and sometimes is used ironically, but differently uttered, according to the emotion which it expresses.

*Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese Language.*

|                                     |                            |                         |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------|-------------------------|
| An <sup>to</sup>                    | <i>António</i>             | Anthony                 |
| Seb <sup>am</sup>                   | <i>Sebastião</i>           | Sebastian               |
| B <sup>mo</sup> Pe                  | <i>Beatíssimo Pádre</i>    | The most blessed Father |
| Cap <sup>m</sup>                    | <i>Capitão</i>             | Captain                 |
| Comp <sup>a</sup>                   | <i>Companhia</i>           | Company                 |
| Corr <sup>o</sup>                   | <i>Carrêio</i>             | Post                    |
| D.                                  | <i>Dom or Dona</i>         | Don or Dona             |
| Dr, D <sup>or</sup>                 | <i>Doutor</i>              | Doctor                  |
| D <sup>s</sup>                      | <i>Déos</i>                | God                     |
| D <sup>o</sup> , D <sup>a</sup>     | <i>Ditto, ditto,</i>       | Said                    |
| Ex <sup>mo</sup> , Ex <sup>ma</sup> | <i>Excellentíssimo, ma</i> | Most excellent          |
| V. E.                               | <i>Vossa excellência</i>   | Your Excellence         |
| V. S.                               | <i>Vossa senhoria</i>      | Your Lordship           |
| V. A.                               | <i>Vossa altêsa</i>        | Your Highness           |
| V. M. or V <sup>mse</sup>           | <i>Vossa mercê</i>         | You                     |
| V. P.                               | <i>Vossa paternidade</i>   | Your Paternity          |
| V. Mag <sup>de</sup>                | <i>Vossa magestade</i>     | Your Majesty            |
| S.                                  | <i>Santo</i>               | Saint                   |
| Fran <sup>co</sup>                  | <i>Francisco</i>           | Francis                 |
| G <sup>de</sup>                     | <i>Guarde</i>              | Save                    |
| J. H. S.                            | <i>Jesús</i>               | Jesus                   |
| M <sup>s</sup> a <sup>s</sup>       | <i>Muitos annos</i>        | Many Years              |
| Me                                  | <i>Mestre</i>              | Master                  |
| S <sup>or</sup> , S <sup>ra</sup>   | <i>Senhór, óra,</i>        | Sir, Lady               |
| R <sup>mo</sup>                     | <i>Reverendissimo</i>      | Most Reverend           |
| Pa                                  | <i>Para</i>                | For                     |
| Q <sup>e</sup>                      | <i>Que</i>                 | That                    |
| Q <sup>do</sup>                     | <i>Quando</i>              | When                    |
| Q <sup>m</sup>                      | <i>Quem</i>                | Who                     |
| Q <sup>to</sup>                     | <i>Quanto</i>              | How much                |
| Supp <sup>te</sup>                  | <i>Supplicante</i>         | Petitioner              |
| Gen <sup>al</sup>                   | <i>General</i>             | General                 |
| Tent <sup>e</sup>                   | <i>Tenente</i>             | Lieutenant              |
| V. G.                               | <i>Vérbi grátia</i>        | For Example.            |

And many others, that must be learned by use.



---

A NEW  
PORTUGUESE  
GRAMMAR.

---

---

PART II.

---

CHAP. I.

*Of the Division of Syntax.*

**SYNTAX** is a Greek word, by the Latins called *construction*; and it signifies the right placing and connecting of words in a sentence. It is divided into three sorts; the first, of Order or Arrangement; the second, of Concordance; the third of Government. The Syntax of Order or Arrangement, is the fit disposition of words in a sentence. The Syntax of Concordance, is when the parts of speech agree with one another, as the substantive with the adjective, or the nominative with the verb. The Syntax of Government, is when one part of speech governs another.

For the sake of those who, perhaps, have not a grammatical knowledge of their own language, I shall lay down some general rules of Portuguese construction.



*Of the Order of Words.*

1. The nominative is that to which we attribute the action of the verb, and is generally ranged in the first place; it may be either a noun or pronoun, as, *Francisco escreve*, Francis writes; *eu fállo*, I speak.

2. When the action of the verb is attributed to many persons or things, these all belong to the nominative, and are ranged in the first place, together with their conjunction; as, *Pédro e Páulo lém*, Peter and Paul read.

3. The adjectives belonging to the nominative substantive, to which the action of the verb is attributed, are put after the substantive, and before the verb; as, *os estudántes morigerádos e diligêntes estúdaõ*, the obedient and diligent scholars do study.

4. If the nominative has an article, this article always takes the first place.

5. Sometimes an infinitive is put for a noun, and stands for a nominative; as *o dormir faz bem*, sleeping does one good: and sometimes a verb with its case; as, *he ácto de humanidáde ter compaixáo dos afflíctos*, to have compassion on the afflicted is an act of humanity.

6. The nominative is sometimes understood; as, *ámo*, where you understand *eu*; and so of the other persons of the verb.

7. After the nominative you put the verb; and if there is an adverb, it is to be placed immediately after the verb, whose accident and circumstances it explains; as, *Pédro áma por extrêmo a gloria*, Peter is extremely fond of glory.

8. The cases governed by the verb are put after it; they may be one, or many, according to the nature of the action; as, *eu ámo a Pédro*, I love Peter. *Fáço presênte de hum lívro a Páulo*, I make a present of a book to Paul.



9. The preposition is always put before the case it governs ; as, *pérto de casa*, near the house.

10. The relative is always placed after the antecedent ; as, *Pédro o qual estúda*, Peter who studies.

## II. *Of Concordance.*

1. The adjectives agree with their substantives in gender, number, and case ; as, *hómem virtuoso*, a virtuous man ; *bélla molhér*, a handsome woman ; *sumptuosos palácios*, &c. sumptuous palaces, &c.

2. When two or more substantives singular come together, the adjective belonging to them must be put in the plural ; as, *tánto el réy cômo a rainha montádos a cavállo parêcem bem*, both the king and the queen look well when they ride.

3. If the substantives happen to be one in the singular and the other in the plural, or to be of different genders, the adjective common to both agrees in number and gender with the last ; as, *élle tinha os ólhos e a bôca abérta*, or *élle tinha a bôca e os ólhos abertos*, his eyes and mouth were opened. *As lagôas e ríos estávaõ congeládos*, the ponds and rivers were frozen.

4. But when there is one or many words between the last noun and the adjective, that adjective (common to all) agrees with the noun masculine, though the last noun be feminine ; and if the nouns are in the singular, then the adjective common shall be put in the plural number and masculine gender ; as, *o río e a lagôa estávaõ cogeládos* ; the pond and river were frozen. *O trabálho, a indústria, e a fortúna unídos* ; pains, industry, and fortune joined together.

5. Every verb personal agrees with its nominative, expressed or understood, both in number and person.

6. The relative *qual* with the article agrees entirely with the antecedent ; but without the article



and denoting an absolute quality, it agrees with what follows; as, *aquêlle coraçãõ o qual*, &c. that heart which, &c. *Considerãdo quães seriaõ as condiçõens*, &c. considering which would be the conditions, &c.

7. The question and answer always agree in every thing; as, *a que senhõra pertence v<sup>m</sup>ce?* *êlle respondêo*, *pertênço à rainha*: To what lady do you belong, sir? and he answered, I belong to the queen.

### III. *Of the Dependence of the Parts of Speech on one another.*

1. The nominative being the basis of the sentence, the verb depends on it, as the other cases depend on the verb. The adjective depends on the substantive that supports it; and the adverb on the verb whose accidents it explains.

2. The genitive depends on a substantive, expressed or understood, by which it is governed.

3. The accusative depends either on a verb active, or on a preposition.

4. The ablative depends on a preposition by which it is governed; as, *párto de Rôma*, I go from Rome.

5. The dative and vocative have, strictly speaking, no dependence on the other parts: the dative is common, as it were, to all nouns and verbs; the vocative only points out the person to whom you speak.

I now come to the Construction of the several parts of speech.



## CHAP. II.

*Of the Syntax of Articles.*

**B**EFORE we come to the syntax of the articles, remember that *o, a, os, as,* are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns, but not when joined to the verbs.

Those who understand Latin will quickly perceive the difference, if they take notice that every time they render *o, a,* by *illum, illam, illud;* or by *eum, eam, id;* and *os, as,* by *illos, illas, illa;* or by *eos, eas, ea;* they are relative pronouns.

1. The article is used before the names of the species or things which can be spoken of; therefore nouns of substances, arts, sciences, plays, metals, virtues, and vices, having no article before them in English, require the article in Portuguese; as,

*O ouro e a prata não podem fazer feliz ao homem,*  
gold and silver cannot make the happiness of man.

*A virtude não hé compatível com o vício,* virtue cannot agree with vice.

*A philosophia he húma sciência muito nóbre,* philosophy is a very noble science.

*Joguêmos as cârtas,* let us play at cards.

2. The article is not placed before a substantive which is followed by the adjective of number that stands for a surname, or meet with a proper or Christian name; as, *Joseph Primeiro,* Joseph the First.

3. When a book or some part of it, as chapter, page, &c. is quoted, the adjective of number may come either before or after the substantive; but if it comes after, the two words are construed without article; as, *livro primeiro, capítulo segundo, &c.* book i. chapter ii. If the adjective of number



comes before the substantive, it takes the article; as, *o primeiro livro*, the first book.

4. *O* placed before *que* signifies *what* or *which*; as, *fáça o que quisér*, let him do what he likes; *o que eu fiz*, which I did.

5. The article is never made use of before proper names of men, women, gods, goddesses, saints.

6. The article is not used in Portuguese before the pronouns possessive relative; as, *de quem he ésta casa?* *he minha*, *he tua*, &c. whose house is this? it is mine, it is thine, &c.

7. When a mount's, mountain's or hill's name, is preceded by the word *monte*, it takes neither article or preposition; as, *Monte Atlánte*, Mount Atlas; *Montes Pireneos*, the Pirenean Mountains; but after the word *serra*, a ridge of hills, it takes the article; as, *a Serra da Estrella*, Mount-Strella; *Serra do Potósi*, Mount Potosi; however, they say, also, *Serra Liba*.

8. The noun of the measure, weight, and the number of the things that have been bought, requires the articles; as, *o trigo vende-se a tanto o alqueire*, what is sold so much a peck, three quarts and one pint.

*A manteíga vende-se a tanto o arrátel*, butter cost so much a pound.

*Os ovos vendem-se a tanto a dúzia*, eggs are sold so much a dozen.

9. No article is used with proper names of persons and planets, except *a terra*, the earth; *a sól*, the sun; *a lúa*, the moon.

10. When proper names are used in a determinate sense, that is, when they are applied to particular objects, then they take the article; *o Déos dos Christãos*, the God of Christians; *o Archimédes de Inglaterra*, the Archimedes of England. The proper names of renowned poets and painters keep also the article; as, *o Camóens*, *o Pópe*, *o Táso*, *o Ticiáno*, &c.



11. The indefinite article *de* is used before nouns following one of this, *sôrte*, *espécie*, *género*, and any other noun of which they express the *kind*, *character*, *quality*, and *nature*: which sort of nouns are usually Englished by an adjective, or even by the substantive itself placed adjectively, and making together, as it were, but a word compound; as, *Dor de cabeça*, the head ach; *húma sôrte de fruto*, a sort of fruit; *fallár de tôlo*, a foolish speech.

Sometimes the English adjective may be made by an adjective too in Portuguese, as in the last example *húm fallár tôlo*, a foolish speech; but sometimes too the Portuguese express the English adjective by a substantive of the same signification with *de* before the other noun, though they have an adjective of the same nature as the English adjective; as, *o diábo de minha molhér*, my devilish wife; and sometimes the adjective is used by them substantively, or the substantive is understood; as, *o velháco de meu fílho*, my rascally son; *a velháca de sua mãy*, his or her rascally mother. Finally they also make use of the definite article; as, *o diábo do hómem*, or *da molhér*, the devilish man or woman; *a póbre da molhér*, the poor woman, &c.

12. Nouns are used without article in the following cases:

1st. At the title of a performance, and in the middle of sentences, where they characterise in a particular manner the person or thing spoken of, in which case the English use especially the particle *a*; as,

*Discúrso sôbre as obrigacôens da religião natural*, a discourse concerning the obligations of natural religion.

*Priméira páрте*, the first part.

*O Conde de Clermont, príncipe do Sângue, morréo*, &c. the count of Clermont, a prince of the blood, died, &c.



*O S.<sup>to</sup> Antorio, não de noventa peças,* the St. Anthony; a ninety gun ship.

2dly. In sentences of exclamation; as,

*As más bellas flôres são as que menos duraõ; qualquer chuva as desmaia, o vento as murcha, o sol as queima, e acaba de secar; sem fallar numa infinidade de insectos que as perséguem e deitaõ a perdêr; natural e verdadeira imagem da bellêza das senhôras!* the handsomest flowers last but a very short time; the least rain tarnishes them, the wind withers them, the sun scorches them, and completes the drying of them; without mentioning an infinite number of insects that spoil and hurt them: a natural and true image of the ladies beauty!

3dly. When they meet with a noun of number in an indefinite sense; as, *mil soldádos de cavállo contra cem infântes,* a thousand horse against an hundred foot.

*Ténho lido dous poétas,* I have read two poets, that is, any pair out of all that ever existed.

But before a noun of number, in a definite sense, it would take the article; as,

*Ténho lido os dous poétas,* I have read both poets; because this plainly indicates a definite pair, of whom some mention has been made already.

*Os cem infântes que combatêraõ contra os mil de cavállo, que, &c.* the hundred foot that fought with the thousand horse, that, &c.

4thly. After the verb *sêr*, when it signifies *to become*, and after *sêr tomado por*, to be accounted; *passár por*, to pass for; as, *êlle será doutôr com o tempo*, he will become a doctor in time; *êlle pássa por marinheiro*, he passes for a sailor.

When the adjective is used substantively, then it must have the neuter Portuguese article *o* before it;

*O vêrde offênde menos a vista que o vermélho,* green hurts the eye less than red.

There are also some adverbs preceded by the neu-



tral article *o* ; as the following, *o melhor que eu pudér*, the best I will be able ; *o ménos que fôr possível*, the less it will be possible.

Articles are repeated in Portuguese before as many nouns (requiring the article) as there are in the sentence ; as,

*O ouro, a prata, a saúde, as honras, e os deleites não podem fazer feliz ao homem que não tem sciência nem virtude*, gold, silver, health, honours, and pleasures, cannot make a man happy without wisdom and virtue.

The article *o* is put before the word *senhór*, sir, or my lord ; as,

*O senhór duque*, my lord duke ; *o senhór presidente*, my lord the president ; *os senhores*, the gentlemen ; *dos senhores*, of the gentlemen.

You must observe the same rule for the feminine article *a*, which is to be prefixed to *senhóra*, my lady, or madam ; as, *a senhóra duquesa*, or *condessa de*, &c. my lady duchess, or countess of, &c.

The article is never used in Portuguese as it is in English, before *máis* more, or *ménos* less, in the following sentences, *quanto máis vivêmos, tanto máis aprendêmos*, the longer we live, the more we learn ; *quanto máis hum hydrópico bebe, máis sede tem*, the more an hydropick drinks, the more thirsty he is ; *quanto máis hum homem he póbre, quanto ménos cuidados tem*, the poorer people are, the less care they have, &c.

Sometimes the English particle *to*, before infinitives, is rendered in Portuguese by the article *o* ; as, *he fácil o dizér, o vér*, &c. it is easy to say, to see, &c.

In a word, *the natural associators with articles* are those *common appellatives*, which denote the several genera and species of beings, or those words which, though indefinite, are yet capable, through the article, of becoming definite. Therefore *Apollonius*



makes it part of the pronoun's definition, to refuse coalescence with the article; and it would be absurd to say *o eu*, the I; or *o tu*, the thou; because nothing can make those pronouns more definite than they are.

N. B. When the adjective *hum*, *húma*, is used as an article in Portuguese, it respects our primary perception, and denotes individuals as unknown; but the articles, *o*, *a*, respect our secondary perception, and denote individuals as known. To explain by an example: I see an object pass by which I never saw till then; what do I say? *Alí vai hum póbre com húma bárba comprida*, there goes a beggar with a long beard. The man departs and returns a week after; What do I say then? *Alí vai o póbre da bárba comprida*, there goes the beggar with the long beard.

### CHAP. III.

*Of the Syntax of Nouns; and first, of the Substantives.*

WHEN two or more substantives come together without a comma between them, they all govern each the next in the genitive, the first governing the second, the second the third in the same case, and so on; (that is, the first is always followed by the preposition *de*, or by the article before the next noun) but that genitive can never come in Portuguese before the nouns that governs it, as in English:

*A philosophia de Newton*, Newton's philosophy.

*As guárdas do príncipe*, the prince's guards.

*A porta da casa*, the house-gate.



*Eis aqui a casa do companheiro do irmão de minha molhér,* here is my wife's brother's partner's house.

When two substantives singular are the nominative of a verb, this must be put in the plural; as, *mêu irmão e meu pai estão no campo*, my brother and my father are in the country.

If the nominative is a collective name, the verb is always put in the singular; as, *tôda a cidade assistio*, all the city was present.

### *Of the Syntax of Adjectives.*

Of adjectives, some are put before the noun, and some after; and others may be put indifferently, either before or after.

The pronouns adjective possessive, *mêu, teu, seu*, &c. and adjectives of number, come before the substantive as in English. Ex. *Mêu pai*, my father; *a sua casa*, his house; *dúas peçoas*, two people; *o primeiro homem*, the first man.

But when the adjective of number stands for a surname, or meets with a proper or Christian name, it comes after the substantive, without the article; as, *João V.* John the fifth.

*These following Adjectives come after the Substantive.*

1st. Verbal adjectives and participles; as, *hum homem divertido*, a comical, a merry man; *huma molhér estimada*, a woman esteemed.

2dly. Adjectives of names of nations; as, *hum mathematico Inglês*, an English mathematician; *hum alfaiate Francês*, a French taylor; *música Italiana*, Italian music.

3dly. Adjectives of colour; as, *hum vestido negro*, a black suit of clothes; *hum capote vermêlo*, a red cloak, &c.



4thly. Adjectives of figure; as, *húma mēsa redonda*, a round table; *hum câmpo triangulár*, a triangular field, &c.

5thly. Adjectives expressing some physical or natural quality; such are *quēte*, hot; *frío*, cold; *húmido*, wet; *corcovádo*, hunch-backed, &c.

Most other adjectives are placed before or after the substantive; as, *sáento*, holy; *verdadeíro*, true, &c.

If the substantive has three or more adjectives belonging to it, they must absolutely be put after it with the enclitic *e* before the last, which must likewise be observed, even when there be but two adjectives; for the Portuguese don't say, *húma desagradável enfadónha óbra*, &c. but *húma óbra desagradável e enfadónha*, &c. a disagreeable, tedious work.

Of adjectives, some always require after them either a noun or verb, which they govern; as, *digno de louvôr*, praise-worthy; *digno de sêr amádo*, worthy to be loved; *capáz de ensinár*, capable to teach; and these have always the particle *de* after them.

Some will be used absolutely without being ever attended by any noun or verb; as, *prudēte*, wise; *incurável*, incurable, &c.

Others may be construed both with and without a noun, which they govern; *élla he húma molhér insensível*, she is a woman without any sensibility; *élla he insensível ao amôr*, she is insensible and a stranger to the passion of love.

The following adjectives, which require the preposition *de* before the next infinitive, govern the genitive case. Observe, that some of them require in English the preposition *at* or *with* before the next noun.

*Digno*, worthy: as, *élla he digno de louvôr*, he is worthy of praise. This adjective is sometimes followed by *que*; as, *digna que sêu nôme fôsse*, &c. her name deserved to be, &c.



*Indigno*, unworthy; as, *indigno da estimação que faço d'elle*, unworthy of the esteem which I have for him.

*Capáz*, capable; *incapáz*, incapable; as, *capáz, ou incapáz de servir a própria pátria*, capable or incapable to serve one's country.

*Notádo*, charged; as, *notádo de avarêza*, charged with avarice.

*Contênte*, glad; as *estôu contênte do succêso que elle teve*, I am glad or overjoyed at his success.

*Cançado*, tired; as, *cançado de estudar*, tired of studying.

*Dezejôso*, greedy; as, *dezejôso de glória*, greedy of glory, &c. as likewise adjectives signifying fullness, emptiness, plenty, want, desire, knowledge, remembrance, ignorance, or forgetting.

All adjectives signifying inclination, advantage and disadvantage, profit or disprofit, pleasure or displeasure, due, submission, resistance, likeness, govern the dative case; as, *insensível ás affrôntas*, insensible of affronts; *ser inclinádo a alguma coisa*, to be inclined to something; *nocivo á saúde*, hurtful to health.

These adjectives signifying dimensions, as, *álto*, high, tall; *largo*, wide, broad; and *comprido*, long, come after the words of the measure of magnitude, both in English and Portuguese; but they are preceded by *de* in Portuguese; as, *dês pés de largo*, ten feet broad; *séis pés de comprido*, six feet long, &c. they also turn the adjective of the dimension into its substantive, with the word of the measure before: but the word of the dimension is always preceded by *de*; as, *séis pés de altúra*, six feet high; *déz pés de largúra*, ten feet broad.

The adjectives signifying experience, knowledge, or science, require *em*, or *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*, after them; as, *versádo nos livros*, versed in books; *experto na medicina*, expert in medicine.

The cardinal nouns require the genitive case after them; as, *hum dos dous*, one of the two.



The ordinal nouns, as well as the collective and proportional, likewise require the genitive after them; as, *o primeiro dos réys*, the first of the kings, *húma dúzia de óvos*, a dozen of eggs, &c.

*Of the Syntax of the Comparatives and Superlatives.*

The comparative is not made of the positive in Portuguese, as in Latin and English, but by adding *máis* more, or *ménos* less, which govern *que*, signifying *than*; as, *o todo hé mayor que a parte*, the whole is greater than the part; *o seu amante he máis bello, máis móço, e máis rico que ella*, her lover is handsomer, younger, and richer than she is; *eu ácho-o agora ménos bello do que quando o compréi*, I now find it less handsome than when I brought it.

The simple comparatives *máis*, and *ménos*, meeting with a noun of number, are attended by *de*; as, *aínda que elle tivésse máis de cem homens*, though he has above an hundred men; *elle tem máis de vinte annos*, he is above twenty.

When the comparison is made by *so as*, *as much as*, they must be rendered by *cómo*.

Example.

*O meu livro he tão bello cómo o vósso*, my book is as handsome as yours; *hum príncipe não he tão poderoso cómo hum réy*, a prince is not so powerful as a king.

They put sometimes *muíto* and *pouco* before the simple comparatives *máis* and *ménos*; as, *elle hé muíto máis grande*, he is taller by much; *elle hé pouco máis grande*, he is taller by little, &c.



## C H A P. IV.

*Of the Syntax of Pronouns.*

**W**E have sufficiently explained the pronouns in the first part; and to avoid any further repetition, I shall only observe, that,

1st. The English make use of the verb *to be*, put impersonally through all its tenses in the third person, before the pronouns personal, *I, thou, he, she, we, you, they*; it is I; it is he, &c. In Portuguese the verb *to be*, on this occasion, is not impersonal; and they express, it is I, by *sôu eu*; it is thou, *ês tu*; it is he, *he elle*; it is we, *somos nós*; it is ye, *sóis vós*, it is she, *he ella*; it is they, masc. *são elles*; it is they, fem. *são ellas*; and in like manner through all the tenses; as, it was I, *era eu*; it was we, *éramos nós*, &c.

2dly. The Portuguese seldom make use of the second person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends, or speaking to God, or a father and mother to their children, or to servants; thus, you are in the right of it, is expressed by *vm<sup>ce</sup> tem razão*, instead of *têndes razão*; *cómo está vm<sup>ce</sup>?* how do you do? In the plural they say *vm<sup>ces</sup>*.

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after *vm<sup>ce</sup> V. S. V. E. &c.* it does not agree in gender with *vm<sup>ce</sup> V. S. &c.* but with the person we speak to or we speak of, therefore they speak to a lady or woman thus; *vm<sup>ce</sup> he muito bella*, you are very beautiful; and to a man they say, *vm<sup>ce</sup> he muito bom*, you are very good.

3dly. *Nos* is generally used by the king, a governor, or a bishop, in their writings, and then it signifies in English *we*; as, *nós mandâmos*, or *mandâmos*, we command; but *nos* before or after a verb in Por-



tuguese signifies *us* in English; as, *elle nos disse*, he told us; *dá-nos tempo*, give us time.

4thly. *Vós* is also applied to a single person, but only speaking to inferiors, or between familiar friends, to avoid the word thou, *tu*, which would be too gross and unmannerly.

5thly. The pronouns conjunctive are joined to verbs, and stand for the dative and accusative cases, as, *dêu me*, he gave me; *âma-me*, love me; but the pronouns personal are used instead of them when they are preceded by a preposition, and not immediately followed by a verb; *elle fallôu contra mim*, he spoke against me.

6thly. When *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, are joined to the present infinitive mood, they change the last *r* of it into *lo*, *la*, &c. thus; *para âma-lo*, to love him; *para vê-la*, or, *vê las*, to see her, or them, &c. and when they are joined to the preterperfect indicative of the verb *fazêr*, and some others that have that tense ending in *iz*, they change the last *z* of them into *lo*, *la*, &c. as *fi-lo*, I did it; *elle fé-lo*, he did, or made it, &c. but when they are joined to the future indicative of any verb with the auxiliary verb *havêr*, then they change the terminations *rêi*, *rás*, &c. of the futures into *lo*, *la*, &c. as *fá-lo-hei*, I'll do it; *ama-lo-hei*, I'll love him, &c.

#### *Remarks on the Pronouns.*

1st. *Him*, or *it*, which follow the verb in English, must be expressed in Portuguese, as in the following examples:

When *him* or *it* in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it must be expressed in Portuguese by *o* before or after the verb. Exam. I call him or it, *eu o chamo*, or *eu chamo-o*.

When *him* or *it* in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or



*lo* after it, making an elision of the last consonant of the verb. Exam. Thou callest him *or* it, *tu o chamas*, or *tu chama lo*.

When *him* or *it* is joined with the third person singular of a verb, it may be expressed by *o* before or after the verb. Ex. He calls him *or* it, *elle o chama*, or *elle chama-o*.

When *him* or *it* is with a verb in the first person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *lo* after it, making an elision as in the second case. Ex. We call him *or* it, *nós o chamamos*, or *nós chamamo-lo*.

When *him* or *it* is after a verb in the second person plural, it is expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *lo* after it, making an elision, &c. Ex. You call him *or* it, *vos o chamais*, or *vos chamái-lo*.

When *him* or *it* follows the verb in the third person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *no* after it. Examp. They call him *or* it, *elles o chamaõ*, or *elles chamaõ-no*.

2dly. *Her* or *it* after a verb in English is expressed in Portuguese by *a*, according to the rules just now proposed.

3dly. *Them* after a verb is expressed in Portuguese by *os* for the masculine, and by *as* for the feminine, according to the gender and the rules proposed.

4thly. The words *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, must always be put after the gerunds, but not before the infinitives. Examp. Seeing him, we must not say, *o vendo*, but *vêndo-o*, because *vêndo* is a gerund. To see him, instead of saying *para vêr-o*, you must say *para o-vêr*, is in the infinitive.

5thly. The words *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, must always be put after the verbs. Examp. To see him, you must say, *para vê-lo*, or *para o vêr*, and not *para lo vêr*. The same words must follow also the adverb *éi*;



and so you must say, *éi-lo aquí*, here he is; *éi-lo alí*, there he is; *éi-los aquí*, here they are; *éi-la alí*, there she is; *éi-las alí*, there they are. They follow likewise the persons of the verbs; *éu fi-lo*; *tu fizés-te-lo*; *élle fê-lo*; *nos fizémo-lo*, &c. I made it, &c.

Note, that I have been speaking of the words *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, and not of the articles *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*; because when those words precede, and sometimes when they follow the verbs, they are not articles, but pronouns relative. They are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns.

## C H A P. V.

*Of the Syntax of Verbs.*

**T**HE verbs through every tense and mood (except the infinitive) ought to be preceded by a nominative case, either expressed or understood, with which they must agree in number and person. The nominative is expressed when we say, *éu ámo*, *tu cántas*; understood when we say, *cánto*, *dígo*, &c.

The Portuguese, as well as English, use the second person plural, though they address themselves but to a single person.

## Example.

*Méu amígo, vós não têmdes razão*, my friend, you are in the wrong.

And if we would speak in the third person, we must say, *vom<sup>ce</sup> tem razão*, sir, you are in the right.

The verb active governs the accusative; as, *ámo a virtúde*, I love virtue.



The verb passive requires an ablative after it; as *os doutos são envejados pelos ignorantes*, the learned are envied by the ignorant.

You must observe, that there is in Portuguese another way of making the passive, by adding the relative *se* to the third person singular or plural; as *ama se Deus*, God is loved.

When there are two nominatives singular before a verb, it must be put in the plural number.

When a noun is collective, the verb requires the singular, not the plural; as, *a gente está olhando*, the people are looking.

### *Syntax of the auxiliary Verbs.*

The verb *tér* is made use of to conjugate all the compound tenses of verbs; as, *tenho amado, tinha amado*, I have loved, I had loved.

*Tér* signifies also to possess, to obtain; as *tenho dinheiro*, I have money; *tem muita capacidade*, he has a great deal of capacity.

*Havér*, in account books and trade, expresses credit or discharge.

*Havér* is also taken impersonally in Portuguese, and it signifies in English *there be*; as *ha muito ouro no México*, there is a great quantity of gold in Mexico.

*Havér-se*, made reciprocal, is the same as *to behave, to act*; as *houve-se o governador com tal prudência que*, &c. the governor behaved with such wisdom, that, &c.

We have already observed the difference betwixt *sér* and *estár*.

The verb *estár* is also used to conjugate the other verbs, chiefly expressing action; as *estou lendo, estou escrevendo*, I am reading, I am writing.

*Estár*, with the preposition *em*, in, or with *no, na, nos, nas*, signifies *to be present in a place*; as, *estou no campo*, I am in the country.



*Estár*, with the preposition *para* denotes the inclination of doing what the following verb expresses, but without a full determination; as, *estou para ir me para Londres*, I have a mind to go and live in London.

*Estár*, with the preposition *por*, and the infinitive of the verb following, means, that the thing expressed by the verb is not yet done; as, *isto está por escrever*, this is not yet written; *isto está por alimpár*, this is not yet cleaned; *estár por alguém* signifies to agree with one, or to be of his opinion.

N. B. See in the Third Part the different significations of the verbs *estár* and *haver*.

When *sér* signifies the possessive of one thing, it governs the genitive; as, *a rua hé d' el-réy*, the street belongs to the king; *esta casa hé de meu páy*, this house belongs to my father.

*Em ser* is taken for a thing to be whole or entire, without any alteration or mutilation; as, *as fazendas estão em sér*, the goods are not sold.

#### *Of the Syntax of Verbs active, passive, &c.*

When two verbs come together, with or without any nominative case, then the latter must be in the infinitive mood; as, *quer v<sup>me</sup> aprender a fallár Inglês?* will you learn to speak English?

All verbs active govern the accusative; but if they are followed by a proper name of God, man, or woman, or any noun expressing their qualities or title, then it governs the dative case; as, *conheço a seu páy*, I know his father; *Acháraõ a João no caminho*, they found John in the road.

All verbs of gesture, moving, going, resting, or doing, as also the verbs that have the word that goes before, and the word that comes after, both belonging to one thing, require the nominative after them; as, *Pédro vái errádo*, Peter goes on wrong;



*o póbre dórme descançado*, the poor sleeps without care. Also the verb of the infinitive mood has the same case, when verbs of wishing and the like come after them ; as, *tódos dezéjaõ ser ricos*, every body wishes to be rich ; *ántes quiséra ser dóuto que parecêlo*, I had rather be learned than be accounted so.

After verbs the Portuguese express *yes* and *no* by *que sim* and *que não*, Example, *crêyo que sim*, I believe yes ; *crêyo que não*, I believe not ; *dígo que sim*, I say yes ; *cuído que não*, I think not ; *apósto que sim*, I lay yes ; *queréis apostár que não ?* have you a mind to lay not ?

Verbs signifying *grief*, *compassion*, *want*, *remembrance*, *forgetting*, &c. will have the genitive ; as, *pésame muito da morte de seu irmão*, I am very sorry for the death of your brother ; *élle morre de fome*, he perishes by hunger ; *lêmbre-se do que me disse*, remember what you said to me ; *compadeçi-me das suas desgraças*, I pitied him for his misfortunes ; *esqueci-me de tudo isto*, all this I forgot.

The reciprocals of *jeering*, *boasting*, and *distrusting*, govern also the genitive ; as, *jactár-se*, *gloriár-se*, *picár-se*, *envergonhár-se*, &c.

All the verbs active govern the dative only when the substantive represents a person ; as, *eu conheço a v<sup>m</sup><sup>ce</sup>*, &c. I know you, &c.

The following verbs belong to this rule of the dative :

*Jogár*, to play ; as, *jogár cartas*, to play at cards ; *jogár aos céntos*, to play at picquet ; *jogár ao xadrez*, to play at chess, &c.

*Obedecér*, *desobedecér*, *agradár*, *comprazér* ; as, *eu obedêço a Deos e a réy*, I obey God and the king ; *comprazêo em tudo aos soldádos*, in all he pleased the soldiers.

*Mandár*, when it signifies to command an army, company, &c. requires the accusative, but, when other things, the dative ; as *élle mandáva a cavallaria*, he commanded the horse ; *o governadór man-*



*dou a todos os moradores que se retirassem para suas casas*, the governor ordered all the inhabitants to retire into their houses.

*Ir*, to go ; as, *vou a Paris*, I go to Paris.

*Assistir*, *ajudar*, *socorrer*, to help ; as, *assistir ao officio divino*, to assist at divine service.

*Saudar*, to salute or greet ; as, *elle sauda a todos*, he salutes every body.

*Fallar*, to speak ; *satisfazer*, to satisfy ; *servir*, to serve ; *favorecer*, to favour ; *ameaçar*, to threaten.

The verbs of pleasing, displeasing, granting, denying, pardoning, will have the person in the dative case.

The impersonals *acontecer*, *succeder*, *importar*, *pertencer*, and the like to these, will have often two datives, of person ; as, *a mim me succedeo*, it happened to me ; *a elle lhe convem*, it suits him, or it is convenient for him ; *a elle não lhe importa*, it does not concern him, &c.

All the active verbs require an accusative ; and the Latin verbs which govern the accusative of the things, and the dative of the person, govern generally the same in Portuguese ; as, *escrevei o que digo a vósso irmão*, write to your brother what I do say.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying, will have an accusative of the doer or sufferer, and sometimes verbs neuter will have an accusative of the thing ; as, *gozar saúde*, to enjoy health ; *péço este favor*, I ask this favour ; *elle toca muito bem flauta*, he plays very well on the flute ; *curar huma doença*, to cure a sickness.

Verbs passive, and the greatest part of the reciprocals require the ablative, with *de*, *do*, *da*, *dos*, *das*, *por*, or *pello*, *pella*, *pellos*, *pellas* ; as, *fuí chamado por el réy*, I was called by the king ; *retirei-me da cidade*, I retired from the city ; *elle foi amado do povo*, he was loved by the people. But you must except *acostar-se*, which requires a dative preceded by *a* ; *encostar-se*, which sometimes will have a da-



tive, and sometimes an ablative preceded by *em*, *no*, *na*, *nos*, or *nas*; *metêr-se*, which requires an ablative; *sentâr-se*, *introduzír-se*, &c. which must have the ablative with the preposition *em*, *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*.

The verbs joined with a noun which they govern, must have the infinitive with *de*; as *ténho vontade de rír*, I am near laughing.

The price of any thing bought or sold, or bartered, will have the accusative with *por*.

The verb *pôr se*, when it signifies *to begin*, must have the infinitive, with the particle *a*; as, *pôr-se a chorár*, to begin to cry.

Verbs of plenty, filling, emptying, loading, unloading, will have the ablative; as, *ésta terra abunda de trigo*; this country abounds with corn; *élle está carregado de misérias*, he is loaded with calamities.

Verbs denoting custom, help, beginning, exhortation, invitation, require the infinitive with the particle *a*; as, *ajudár a semeár*, to help sowing; *convidou me a ceár*, he invited me to supper.

Verbs that signify distance, receiving, or taking away, will have the ablative; as, *a Madéira dista de Marrócos 320 milhas*, Madeira lies 320 miles from Morocco.

Note, that the verbs signifying receiving, or taking away, generally require the ablative of the person; but they sometimes require an accusative: particularly the verb *recebêr*, when it signifies *to welcome*, or *to entertain*: as, *élle recebe todos com muito agrádo*, he gives his company a hearty reception, he makes them very welcome.

Verbs denoting obligation, govern the following infinitive with the preposition *a*; as, *eu o obrigarei a fazer isto*, I will oblige him to do it.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. will have the ablative with *com*; as, *pelejou mais de húma hora com seu irmão*, he quarrelled more than one hour with his brother.



After the verb substantive *sêr*, to be, *para* is made use of as well as *a*: the first is employed to denote the use or destination of any thing; as, *ésta penna he para escrevêr*, this pen is to write with. But the particle *a* is used to denote only the action; as, *elle fôí o primeiro a fugir*, he was the first to run away.

The verbs of motion to a place always govern the dative; as, *vôu á comédia*, I go to the play. Though the verb *voltár*, to return, may also have an accusative, with the preposition *para*. But the verbs of motion from a place govern the ablative with *de*, *do*, *da*, *dos*, *das*; as, *vénho do câmpo*, I come from the country. If the motion is through a place, then the verbs govern the accusative, with *por*; as, *passaréi por Lóndres*, I will come by the way of London.

### *Of the Use and Construction of the Tenses.*

Though we have spoken at large upon the tenses in the First Part, you must, however, take notice.

1. That they make use of the infinitive and the auxiliary verb *havêr*, together with the pronouns *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, instead of the future indicative; as, *ouvir-lo-hei*, I will hear him; and then the *r* of the infinitive is changed into *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*; and sometimes they make use of the infinitive mood and the auxiliary verb *havêr*, with the pronouns conjunctive *me*, *te*, *se*, &c. instead of the same future; as, *dar-lhe-hei*, I will give him; *agastar-se-há*, he will be angry.

2. That when we find the particle *if*, which in Portuguese is expressed by *se*, before the imperfect indicative, we must generally use the imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese; example, *se eu tivêsse*, if I had; *se eu pudêsse*, if I could. But sometimes they use the imperfect indicative; as, *dísse-lhe que se queria*, &c.; he told him that if he was willing, &c.



3. That the first imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese is also used in a sense that denotes the present, especially in sentences of wishing; as, *quizéra que Domíngo fizésse bom tempo*, I wish it would be fine weather on Sunday. But if the same tense is preceded by *ainda que*, although, then it must be rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive, or by the imperfect indicative; as, *eu não a quizéra, ainda que tivésse milhões de seu*, though she was worth several millions, I would not have her; *ainda que elle consentísse nisso, não se podia fazer*, although he would consent to it, that could not be done. Lastly, when the first imperfect subjunctive is preceded by *se*, it is sometimes rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive; as, *se elle viesse*, if he should come.

The English are apt to put the first imperfect of the subjunctive where the Portuguese make use of the second; as, I had been in the wrong, *não teria tido razão*; and though they may say *não tivéra tido razão*, they may not say *não tivésse tido razão*, to express the English of, *I should have been in the wrong*, or *I had been in the wrong*.

Note, that to express in Portuguese, *though that should be*, we must say, *quando isso fósse*, and not *seria*.

The Portuguese use the future tense subjunctive after the conjunction *if*, when they speak of a future action, but the English, the present indicative: example, to-morrow, if I have time, *amanhã se tiver tempo*, and not *se tenho*; if he comes, we shall see him, *nós o veremos, se elle vier*.

A conjunction between two verbs obliges the last to be of the same number, person, and tense as the first: example, the king wills and commands, *el rei quer e ordéna*; I see and I know, *eu vejo e conheço*.

Sometimes the present is made use of, instead of the preter definite in narrations, as, *no mesmo tempo que hia andando, o encontra, o despe, e o áta a huma*.



*árvore*, as he was going, he meets him, strips him, and ties him to a tree.

When the Portuguese use the infinitive with a third person in the plural, they add *em* to it, and it is generally preceded by *por*, for, and *para*, in order to, that, or to the end that; as *élles fôraõ enforcádos por furtárem*, they were hanged for robbing; *para sêrem enformádos*, that, to the end that they may be informed; *para poderem dizêr*, that they may be able to say.

Observe, that when the Portuguese put *por*, before the first future subjunctive, they speak of a time past; as, *por fallárdes*, because you have spoken. But when they put *para* before it, then they speak of a time to come; as *para fallármos*, that, or to the end that we may speak, in order to speak.

### Of Moods.

All the tenses of the indicative mood may be employed without any conjunction before them; but they admit also of some. Besides the conjunction *que*, those that may be made use of are *se*, *cómo*, and *quándo*; with some distinction in respect to *se* because this conjunction is seldom used before the future tense, and then it is governed by a verb signifying ignorance, doubt, or interrogation; as, *naõ sei se haõ de vir*, I do not know if they shall come! *estôu em dúvida se os inimigos passarão o rio*, I doubt if the enemies will pass the river; *naõ pergunto se partirá*, I do not ask if he will set out.

The optative or subjunctive in Portuguese has always some sign annexed; as, *oxalá, prouvéra a Deos, ò se!* would to God, I pray God, God grant; &c.; *que, para, que, &c.* that, &c.

The particle *que* is not expressed in the present of this mood; but it is understood in sentences of wishing or praying; as, *Déos o faça bom*, let God amend him.



When *que* is between two verbs, the last is not always put in the subjunctive, because, though some say *crêyo que vénha*, I believe he comes; I think it is better to say *crêyo que vem*; but when there is a negation, the verb following *que* must be put in the subjunctive; as, *naõ crêyo que vénha*, I do not believe he will come, *naõ crêyo que vénha taõ cedo*, I do not believe he will come so soon.

When the verbs *crêr*, to believe, *sabêr*, to know, are used interrogatively, and followed by the particle *que*, the next verb is put in the indicative, when the person that asked the question makes no doubt of the thing which is the object in question; as, if knowing that peace is made, I want to know if the people whom I converse with know it too, I will express myself thus, *sabêis vós que está feita a paz?* do you know that peace is made? But if I have it only by a report, and doubt of it, and want to be informed of it, I must ask the question thus, *sabêis vós que a paz estéja feita?* and by no means *sabêis vós que está feita a paz?*

You must observe also, that the present subjunctive of *sabêr* is elegantly used when it is attended by a negative, and the particle *que* in this phrase, *naõ que eu saíba*, not that I know of.

All the verbs used impersonally with the particle *que* require the subjunctive; as, *he preciso que elle vénha*, he must come; *convém que isto se faça*, it is convenient that this be done. You must only except such sentences as express any positive assurance, or certainty; as, *he certo que vem*, it is certain that he comes; *sei que está em casa*, I know he is at home.

From these observations it follows, that all the verbs not expressing a positive assurance, or believing, but only denoting *ignorance, doubt, fear, astonishment, admiration, wishing, praying, pretension, or desire*, govern the subjunctive mood after *que*; as, *duvido que possa*, I doubt it is in his power; *têmo que morra*, I am afraid he will die; *admíro-me*



*que consinta nísso*, I wonder he agrees to it, &c.; to all which they add *oxalá*, an Arabic word, signifying *God grant*, which is used in Portuguese before all the tenses of the optative or conjunctive, as well as *práza a Déos*, may it please God; or, *prouvéra a Déos*, might it please God.

When *que* is relative, and there is a verb in the imperative or in the indicative, with a negative or interrogation before it, it governs likewise the subjunctive; as *naõ ha cousa que maís me inquiête*, there is nothing that disturbs me more; *ha cousa no mûndo que me póssa dar tanto gôsto?* is there any thing in the world that may give me more pleasure? *allegáilhe tantas razões que o póssaõ persuadir*, give him so many reasons that he may be persuaded.

The present subjunctive is sometimes rendered into English by the second preterimperfect subjunctive, when it is followed by a verb in the future tense; as, *ainda que eu trabálhe, nunca hei de cançar*, though I should work, I never would be tired.

The Portuguese use specially the same present subjunctive for the future; as in these sentences, and others like:

*Naõ duvído que vénha*, I do not doubt but he will come.

*Duvído que o fáça*, I doubt that, or whether he will do it.

Therefore avoid carefully those faults which foreigners are so apt to make, in considering rather the tense which they want to turn into Portuguese, than the mood which the genius of the language requires.

The present indicative is also used for the future, as well as in English: example, *jantáis hoje em cása?* do you dine at home to-day?



*Of the Particles governing the Optative or Subjunctive.*

The conjunction *que*, that, generally requires the subjunctive after it; but *antes que*, *primeiro que*, before that, always requires it.

Take notice, that *que* makes all the words to which it is joined become conjunctives, as, *para que*, to the end that; *bem que*, *ainda que*, &c. *Pósto que*, although; *até que*, till; *quando*, *cómo quérquê*, which commonly govern the subjunctive. But *com que assim* governs the indicative; as, *com que*, or *com que assim virá amanhã*, so he will come to-morrow.

In Portuguese you must take care how you express *though*, or *although*; if it is by *ainda que*, you may put either the subjunctive or indicative after it: example; *ainda que seja homem honrado*, though he is an honest man; *ainda que elle faz aquillo*, though he does that. But if you render *although* or *though* by *naõ obstante*, then you must use the infinitive; example, though he is an honest man; *naõ obstante ser elle homem honrado*; though he does this, *naõ obstante fazer elle isto*.

The impersonal verbs generally govern the subjunctive with *que*; but with this distinction, when the impersonal is in the present tense or future, of the indicative mood, then it requires the present subjunctive mood; but when the impersonal, or any other verb taken impersonally, is in any of the preterites indicative, then it governs the imperfect, perfect, or pluperfect of the subjunctive, according to the meaning of speech; as, *impórta muito que el-rey veja tudo*, it is of great moment that the king may see all; *foi conveniente que o príncipe fôsse com elle*, it was convenient that the prince should go with him.

The present subjunctive is likewise construed, when the particle *por* is separated from *que*, by an adjective; as, *por grande*, *por admirável*, *por douto* *que seja*, though he be great, admirable, learned.



An imperative often requires the future of the subjunctive; as *succêda o que succedêr*, or *sêja o que fôr*, happen what shall happen, at all events.

The imperfect subjunctive is repeated in this phrase, and others like, *succedêsse, o que succedêsse*, let happen what would.

The future of the subjunctive mood follow generally these, *lôgo que, quando, se, cômô, &c.*; as, *lôgo que chegár irêmos a passeár*, as soon as he comes, we will go and take a walk; *quando viêr, estarêmos prômptos*, when he comes we will be ready.

Observe, that *quando* and *lôgo que* may also be construed with the indicative mood; as, *quando el rêy vê tudo, não o engánaõ*, when the king sees every thing, he is not deceived; *lôgo que chegôu, fallêi com êlle*, as soon as he came, I spoke with him.

### *Of the Infinitive Mood.*

In Portuguese there is not a general sign before the infinitive, as in English the particle *to*; but there are several particles used before the infinitive, denoting the same as *to* does in English, and they are governed by the preceding verbs or nouns. These particles are the following: *a, para, de, com, em, por, até, despôis de*; and the article *o*, when the infinitive serves as a nominative to another verb; as, *o dizêr e o fazêr são dúas côusas*, saying and doing are two different things.

*A* coming between two verbs, notes the second as the object of the first; as, *a tardança das nôssas esperanças nos ensína a mortificár os nôssos dezêjos*, the delay of our hopes teaches us to mortify our desires; *êlle comêça a discorrêr*, he begins to reason.

*Para* notes the intention or usefulness; as, *a adversidade sêrve para experimentár a paciência*, adversity serves to try one's patience. *Para* after an adjective denotes its object; as, *está prômpto para obedêr*, he is ready to obey.



*De* is put between two verbs, if the first governs the genitive or ablative; and when the substantive or adjective governs either of these two cases, *de* must go before the following verbs, or infinitive; as, *vénho de vêr a meu páy*, I have just seen my father; *he ténpo de hír-se*, it is time to go away; *el-réy foi servído de mandár*, the king has been pleased to order.

The infinitive is on several occasions governed by prepositions or conjunctions; as, *sem dizêr palavra* without speaking a word; where you may observe it is expressed in English by the participle present; as *núnca se cânça de jugár*, he is never weary of playing; *divérte-se em caçar*, he delights in hunting; *élle está doênte por trabalhár demasiadamênte*, by working too much he is sick; *pérde o sêu ténpo em passeár*, he loses his time in walking; *héi-de ir-me sem me despedir?* shall I go away without taking my leave?

The infinitive is also used passively; as, *naô há que dizêr, que vêr, &c.*; there is nothing to be said, seen, &c.

The gerund of any verb active may be conjugated with the verb *estár*, to be, after the same manner as in English; as, *estôu escrevêndo*, I am writing; *élle estava dormíndo*, he was asleep, &c.

## CHAP. VI.

### *Of the Syntax of Participles and Gerunds.*

**T**HE participle in the Portuguese language generally ends in *do*, or *to*; as, *amádo, vísto, dító, &c.*

The active participles that follow the verb *ter*, to have, must end in *o*; as,

*Ténho vísto el réy*, I have seen the king.



*Ténho visto a rainha*, I have seen the queen.

*Eu tinha amado os livros*, I had loved books.

*Eu tinha levado as cartas*, I had carried the letters.

We meet with authors who sometimes make the participles agree with the thing of which they are speaking; as, in *Camoens*, Canto 1, Stanza xxix.

*E porque como vistes, tem passados,*

*Na viagem tão ásperos perigos,*

*Tantos climas, e céos experimentados, &c.*

And Canto 2, Stan. lxxvi.

*São offerecimentos verdadeiros,*

*E palavras sinceras, não dobradas,*

*As que o réy manda a os nobres cavaleiros,*

*Que tanto mar e terras tem passadas.*

If it be a verb neuter, the participle ought always to terminate in *o*: example,

*El réy tem jantado*, the king has dined; *a rainha tem ceado*, the queen has supped; *os vossos amigos tem rido*, your friends have laughed; *minhas irmãs tem dormido*, my sisters have slept.

When the active participle happens to precede an infinitive, it must be terminated in *o*; as *o juiz lhe tinha feito cortar a cabeça*, the judge has caused his head to be cut off.

The passive participles which are joined with the tenses of the verb *ser*, to be, agree with the substantive that precedes the verb *ser*; *o capitão foi louvado*, the captain was praised; *a virtude he estimada*, virtue is esteemed; *os preguiçosos são censurados*, the lazy are blamed; *as vossas jóyas foram vendidas*, your jewels were sold.

The Portuguese generally suppress the gerunds *having* and *being* before the participles; as, *dito isto*, having said so; *acabado o sermão*, the sermon being ended. This manner of speaking is called by grammarians *ablatives absolute*.

The participle of the present tense in Portuguese has singular and plural, but one termination serves for both genders; as *hum homem temente a Deos*, a



man fearing God; *húma molhér temênte a Dêos*, a woman fearing God; *hómens temêntes a Dêos*, people fearing God.

There are in Portuguese a great many participles which are used substantively; as, *ignoránte*, *amánte*, *ouvínte*, *estudánte*, &c.; an ignorant, a lover, an auditor or hearer, a scholar, &c.

It is better to place the nominative after the gerund than before; as *estándo el rêy na comédia*, the king being at the play.

## C H A P. VII.

### OF PREPOSITIONS.

**A** PREPOSITION is a part of speech, which is put before nouns, and sometimes before verbs, to explain some particular circumstance.

Prepositions may be divided into separable and inseparable. An inseparable preposition is never found but in compound words, and signifies nothing of itself. A separable preposition is generally separated from other words, and signifies something of itself.

The inseparable prepositions are,

*Ab* and *abs*; as *abrogár*, to abrogate; *abstêr-se*, to abstain.

*Arce*, or *archi*; as, *arcebíspo*, an archbishop; *archidúque*, an archduke.

*Ad*; as, *adventício*, adventitious.

*Am*; as, *ambíguo*, ambiguous; *ampáro*, protection, shelter.

*Circum*; as, *circumstância*, circumstance.

*Co*; as, *cohabitár*, to live together, to cohabit.

*Des*, serves to express the contrary of the word it is joined to; as, *desacérto*, mistake; *desfazêr*, to



undo ; *desenganár*, to undeceive ; are the contrary of *acérto*, *fazér*, and *enganár*.

*Dis* ; as, *dispór*, to dispose ; *distinguír*, to distinguish ; *distribuír*, to distribute.

*Ex* ; as, *extrahír*, to extract.

*In*, has commonly a negative or privative sense, denoting the contrary of the meaning of the word it precedes ; as, *incapáz*, unable ; *infelíz*, unhappy ; *inacção*, inaction, &c. ; but sometimes it is affirmative, as in Latin.

Observe, that *in* before *r* is changed into *ir* ; as, *irregulár*, irregular ; *irracional*, irrational : before *l*, into *il* ; as *illegítimo*, illegitimate ; before *m*, *in* is changed into *im* ; as, *immaterial*, immaterial.

*Ob* ; as, *obviár*, to obviate.

*Pos* ; as, *pospór*, to postpone, or to postpone.

*Pre* ; as, *precedér*, to go before ; *predecessór*, an ancestor.

*Pro* ; as, *propór*, to propose ; *prometér*, to promise.

*Re*, is a borrowed particle from the Latins, which generally denotes iteration, or backward action ; as, *reedificár*, to rebuild ; *repercutír*, to repercute, or strike back.

*So* ; as, *socorrér*, to help, to succour.

*Sor* ; as, *sorrír*, to smile.

*Sos* ; as, *sostér*, to support.

*Sóto* ; as, *sotopór*, to put or lay under.

*Sub* ; or *sob* ; as, *subaltérno*, subaltern ; *subscrevér*, to subscribe ; *sobpêna*, *sobcolór*, &c.

The Arabic article *al*, which is common to all genders and both numbers, is found in the beginning of almost all the words that remain in the Portuguese language from the Arabic, and it is the surest way to distinguish them. But the Portuguese articles are added to the Arabic nouns, without taking off their article, *al*, as *a almofáda*, the cushion ; *o Alcoraão*, the Coran, &c.



The Greek preposition *anti* enters into the composition of a great many Portuguese words, which cannot be set down here. It is enough to observe, that it signifies generally opposite; as in *Antípodas*, Antipodes; *antipápa*, antipope; and sometimes it signifies before; as in *antiloquio*, a preface, a speaking first; but in this last sense it is derived from the Latin preposition *ante*.

*Of separable Prepositions.*

It is absolutely impossible ever to attain to the knowledge of any language whatever, without thoroughly understanding the divers relations denoted by the prepositions, and the several cases of nouns which they govern; both which relations and cases being arbitrary, vary and differ much in all languages. This only instance will evince it: the English say, *to think of a thing*; the French, *to think to a thing*; the Germans and Dutch, *to think on, or upon a thing*; the Spaniards and Portuguese, *to think in a thing*, &c. Now it will avail an Englishman but little to know that *of* is expressed in Portuguese by *de*, if he does not know which relations *em* and *de* denote in that language; since the Portuguese say, *to think in a thing*, and not *of a thing*; therefore we will treat here of each of them, and of their construction separately.

1st. *A*, or rather *ao, as, aos*, (at, in, on, &c.) denote the place whither one is going; as,

*Eu vou a Londres*, I go to London.

*Voltar a Portugal*, to return, or go back to Portugal.

*A*, in this sense, is a preposition, but in the next observations, it is a particle.

2dly. *A* denotes time; as, *chegar a tempo*, to arrive in time; *a todo o tempo*, at all times.

3dly. *A* denotes the way of being, or of doing of people; as also their posture, gesture, or action; as



*Estár á sua vontade*, to be at one's ease.

*A direita*, on the right hand; *á esquérda*, on the left hand.

*Vivér á sua vontade*, to live to one's mind, as one likes.

*Andár a pé ou a cavállo*, to go on foot, or on horseback.

*Montár a cavállo*, to ride on horseback.

*Corrér á rédea solta*, to ride full speed.

*Trajár á Francêsa*, to dress after the French way.

*Vivér á Inglêza*, to live after the English fashion.

*Andár a grandes pássos*, to walk at a great rate.

*Andár a pássos léntos*, to walk very slowly.

4thly. *A* denotes the price of things; as, *a oito xelins*, at eight shillings. It denotes also the weight: but as the nouns signifying weight are generally used in the plural number, hence it is that they add *s* to *a*, when it is placed before nouns of the feminine gender, and *os* when it precedes nouns of the masculine gender: so they say, *ás onças*, by the ounce; *aos arráteis*, by the pound, &c. *A* denotes also the measure; as, *medir a pálmos*, to span or measure by the hand extended.

When *a* is preceded by *daquí*, and followed by a noun of time, it denotes the space of time after which something is to be done: as, *el rey partirá daqui a tres días*, the king will set out three days hence.

5thly. *A* denotes the tools used in working, as likewise the games one plays at; as, *abrír ao buríl*, to grave; wherein you see they add *o* to *a*; *trabalháa á candêa*, to do any thing by candle-light; *á agúlha*, with the needle.

*Andár á véla*, to sail, or to be under sail.

*Jogár a péla*, to play at tennis.

*Jogár as cártas*, to play at cards; wherein you see they add *s* to *a* when the noun is of the feminine gender, and placed in the plural number.



*Jogar aos cêntos*, to play at piquet; wherein you see they add *os* to *a* when it precedes nouns signifying games, when they are of the masculine gender and put in the plural number.

6thly. *A* signifies sometimes *as*. Examp. *Está isto a seu gosto?* Is this as you like it? And sometimes it signifies after; as, *a seu modo*, after his or her way. It signifies also *in*; as, *ao princípio*, in the beginning; but then they add *o* to it.

7thly. *A* is also put before the infinitives, preceded by another verb; as, *ensinar a cantar*, to teach to sing. It is also placed between two equal numbers, to denote order; as, *dôus a dôus*, two by two; *quátro a quátro*, four by four: and sometimes it is preceded by a participle or adjective, and followed by an infinitive mood.

8thly. *A* is a particle of composition, serving to many nouns, verbs, and adverbs, of which it often increases the meaning; as, *adinheirado*, very rich, that has a great deal of money; but it generally expresses in verbs the action of the nouns they are composed of; as, *ajoelhar*, to kneel down, which is formed from *a* and *joelho*, knee; *abrandar*, to appease; *alargar*, to enlarge; from *brando*, soft; *largo*, wide, &c.

9thly. *A*, when it is preceded by the verb *ser*, and followed by the pronouns personal, signifies *in the stead of*; as, *se eu fôsse a vós, faria aquilo*, if I was you (in your place) I would do that.

10thly. When *a* is placed before *câsa*, and the sense implies *going to*, it is Englished by *to*, but the word *câsa* is left out; as, *êlle fôí a câsa do governadôr*, he went to the governor's. You must observe, that *a* in this sense is a proposition.

11. *A'o pé* signifies *near*; as, *pônde hum ao pé do outro*, place, put, or set them near one another, Sometimes *mêsmo* comes before *ao pé*, to express still more the nearness of a thing, and *mêsmo ao pé*



is Englished by *hard by, just by, &c.*; as, *a sua casa está mesmo ao pé da minha*, his house is just by mine.

12th. When the noun *respeito* is preceded by *a*, it is used in the same tense as *em comparação*, but requires one of these particles, *do, da, dos, das*, after it, and signifies *in comparison of, in regard to, in respect of*; as, *isto he náda a respeito do que posso dizer*, this is nothing to other things that I can say.

13th. When *a* comes before a verb neuter, it marks a dative; and after a verb active, an accusative case.

*A* before the verb *propósito* is used in familiar discourses; as, *a propósito, esquecime de dizer-vos o outro dia*; now I think on't, I forgot to tell you t'other day.

14th. *Ao revéz*, or *as avéssas*, are also used as prepositions, attended by, *de, do, da, &c.*; and it signifies *quite the reverse, or, contrary*; as, *elle faz tudo ao revéz, or as avéssas do que ouvêra de ser, ou do que lhe dizem*, he does every thing quite the reverse of right, or contrary to what he is bid.

15th. *A* before *trôco* signifies *provided that*. It is also used before the word *tiro*, as, *a tiro de peça*, within cannon shot.

16th. *Cara a cara, corpo a corpo*, signify face to face, body to body. *Tomar húma coisa a boa ou a má parte*, signifies to take a thing well or ill.

Such are the chief relations denoted by the particle *a*. The others must be learned in construing and reading good Portuguese books.

1st. *De*, or rather *do, da, dos, das*, (of, from, &c.) denote, first, the place one comes from; as, *sahir de Londres*, to go out of London; *vir de França, das Indias, &c.*; to come from France, from the Indies, &c.

2d. *De* between two nouns denotes the quality of the person expressed by the first noun; as, *hum homem de honra*, a man of honour; or the matter which the thing of the first noun is made of; as,



*Húma estatua de mármore*, a statue of marble.

*Húma ponte de madeira ou de pédra*, a wood or stone bridge.

Note, that two nouns so joined with *de* are commonly Englished by two nouns likewise, but without a preposition, or rather by a compound word, whose first noun (whether substantive or adjective) expresses the matter and quality, manner, form, and use of the other; as a stone-bridge, *húma ponte de pédra*; a dancing-master, *hum mēstre de dança*.

3d. *De, do, da, dos, das*, are used in Portuguese after the participles of the preterite, with *ser*; as, *ser amado, ou bem visto do povo, dos sábios, &c.*; to be beloved by the people, by the learned, &c.

Note, that *do* serves for the masculine, *da* for the feminine, and *de* for both.

4th. *De* sometimes signifies *by*; as, *de noite*, by night; *de dia*, by day.

5th. *De* before *em*, and many nouns of time denotes the regular interval of the time after which something begins again; as, *eu vou vê-lo de dois em dois, dias*, I go to see him every other day; and before nouns of place and adverbs repeated with *em* or *para* between, *de* denotes the passing from one place or condition to another; as, *corrêr de rua em rua*, to run from street to street; *de mal para peôr*, worse and worse.

6th. *De* after some verbs, signifies *after* or *in*; as, *elle portou-se d'esta sorte*, he behaved in or after this manner.

7th. *De* is used before an infinitive, and is then governed by some preceding noun or verb; as, *capaz de ensinar*, capable to teach; *digno de ser amado*, worthy to be loved, &c.; *procurár de fazer*, to endeavour to do; *authoridade de prégár*, the power or authority of preaching, &c.

8th. *De* is sometimes Englished by *on*; as, *pôr-se de joelhos*, to kneel down *on* one's knees.



9. *De* between two nouns denotes the use which a thing is designed for ; as, *azêite de candêa*, lamp-oil ; *arma de fogo*, a fire arm, *moínho de vento*, a windmill.

Note, that this relation is expressed in English by two nouns, making a compound word : the first of which signifies the manner, form, and use, denoted by the Portuguese preposition ; as, *cadeira de braços*, an arm-chair, or elbow-chair ; *vêla de cêra*, a wax-candle, &c.

10. *De* denotes sometimes the quality of things ; as *mêyas de tres fîos*, stockings with three threads. Sometimes it denotes also the price ; as, *pânno de dezóito xelîns*, eighteen shilling cloth.

11. *De* is sometimes Englished by *upon* ; as, *vivêr ou sustentâr se de peixe*, to live upon fish. Sometimes it is Englished by *with* ; as, *morrêr de frio*, to starve with cold.

12. *De* sometimes signifies *for* or *out of* ; as, *saltâ de alegria*, to leap for joy ; *de modêsto*, out of modesty.

13. *De* signifies sometimes *at* ; as, *zombâr de alguêm*, laugh at one.

14. *De* is sometimes left out in English ; as, *gozâr de húma còusa*, to enjoy a thing.

15. *De* followed by two nouns of number and the preposition *até* between them, is Englished by *between* ; as, *hum hómem de quarênta até cincoênta ánnos*, a man between forty and fifty.

16. *De*, preceded by the preposition *diânte*, is left out in English ; as, *diânte de mim*, before me ; *diânte de Déos*, before God.

17. *De* when it is placed before *casa*, and the sense implies *coming from*, is Englished by *from* ; but the word *cása* sometimes is left out in English, and sometimes not ; as, *vênho de cása* (meaning my house) I come from home, from my house : but when they say, *vênho da cása da Senhora C*, we must



render it in English thus, *I am returning from Mrs. C.'s*

Finally, *de* is used before several words ; as, *de brúços*, lying all along on the ground ; *de madrugada*, soon in the morning ; *de véras*, in earnest, seriously ; *de verão*, in summer ; *hómem de palavra*, a man as good as his word ; *de costas*, backwards, or on one's back ; *andár de pé*, to be sickly without being bed-ridden : and many others which must be learnt by use.

#### *A'ntes.*

III. *Antes*, before, shews a relation of time, of which it denotes priority ; and is always opposite to *depóis*, after ; as, *antes da criação do mundo*, before the creation of the world.

*Priméiro* is also a preposition ; as, *élle chegou primeiro que eu*, he arrived before me.

#### *Diánte.*

IV. *Diánte*, before, shews a relation of place, and it is always opposite to *detráz*, behind. It signifies also sometimes *em*, or *na presença* ; as, *ha árvores diánte de sua casa*, there are trees before his house ; *pónde aquillo diánte do fogo*, set or put that before the fire ; *prégár diánte del-rêi*, to preach before the king.

*Diánte* is also sometimes an adverb, and may be used instead of *adiánte* ; as, *ir diánte* or *adiánte*, to go before : but in the following phrase you must say, *não vádes tanto adiánte*, and not *diánte*, don't go so far ; *por diánte* is to be Englished by *on* in the following phrase, *íde por diánte*, go on.

#### *Depóis.*

V. *Depóis*, after, denotes posteriority of time, and it is used in opposition to *antes* ; as, *depóis do dilúvio*, after the deluge : *depóis do meio dia*, after noon.

*Depóis* also is used with an infinitive ; as, *feito aquillo*, or *tendo feito aquillo*, or *depóis de fazer aquillo*,



after having done that; and it is also made a conjunction with *que*, governing the indicative; as, *depois que teve feito aquillo*, after he had done that.

*Detrás.*

VI. *Detrás*, behind, denotes posteriority both of place and order, and it is said in opposition to *diante*; as, *a sua casa está detrás da vossa*, his house is behind yours; *élle vinha detrás de mim*; he walked after me.

*Em.*

VII. *Em*, or *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*, (in, into, within, &c.) denote a relation both of time and place. The many various significations in which these prepositions are used, must be accurately observed, and much regard had to them in the practice.

*No* and *na* are sometimes rendered into English by *a*; as, *dúas vêzes no dia*, *na semana*, &c. twice a day, a week, &c.

*No*, *na*, &c. are always used before nouns denoting the place wherein something is kept; as, *está no gabinete*, it is in the closet; *na papelêira*, in the bureau; *nas gavêtas*, in the drawers; *na rua*, in the street, &c. but sometimes they are Englished by *upon*; as, *cahir no chão*, to fall upon the ground.

*Em*, *no*, *na*, &c. signifies commonly *in*; as, *em Londres*, in London; *está na graça del réy*, he is in favour with the king; but in some cases it has a very particular meaning; as, *estar em corpo*, which signifies literally *to be in body*; but the true sense of it is *to be without a cloak*; so that the body is more exposed to view without an upper garment. *Estar em pernas*, literally, *to be in legs*, signifies *to be bare-legged*; that is, the legs exposed without stockings. *Estar em camisa* is said of one that has only the shirt on his back.

When this preposition *em* is before an infinitive in Portuguese, then it is an English gerund; as, *consiste em fallar bem*, it consists in speaking well;



but when it is found before a gerund, it signifies *as soon as*; as, *em acabándo iréi*, as soon as I have done, I will go.

*Nos nósos témpos* is Englished by *now a-days*.

*Em* is used in sentences that imply a general sense; as, *E'lle está em miserável estado*, he is in a wretched condition; and not *no miserável*: but if the sentences imply a particular sense, you must make use of *no*, *na*, &c. as, *no miserável estado em que elle está*, in the wretched condition wherein he is; and not *em miserável*. You must observe in this last example and the like, that you ought to make use of *em* before *que*, and not of *no*, *na*, &c. which are to be placed only before *qual*; therefore you must not say, *no miserável estado no que elle está*; but you may say, *no miserável estado no qual elle está*.

Note, that *em* construed with pronouns without an article, makes a sort of adverb, rendered into English by a preposition and a noun; thus in this sentence, *nós iremos em côche*, we shall go in a coach, *em côche* is an adverb of manner, which shews how we shall go: but *no coche* denotes something besides; as if a company were considering how they shall ride to a place, somebody would say, *vós iréis na cadeirinha, e nós no côche*, you shall go in the chair, and we in the coach; *no côche* would be said in opposition to *na cadeirinha*, and both respectively to some specified chair and coach; or else they should say, *vós iréis em cadeirinha, e nós em côche*. But in this other sentence, *eu deixei o meu chapéo no côche*, I left my hat in the coach, it would be improper to say *em côche*, because some particular coach is meant, to wit, that which has drove me here or there, or which has been spoken of.

We say *de verão no verão* or *em o verão*; *de inverno, no inverno*, &c. in summer, in winter, &c.

*Em* is also rendered into English by *at*; as, *em todo o tempo*, at all times.



*Em* is used, and never *no*, *na*, &c. before proper names of cities and authors; as, *elle está em Lóndres*, he is in London; *nós lémos em Cícero*, we read in Cicero. But they say *no Pôrto*, in Oporto.

*Em*, and *no*, *na*, &c. are construed with the names of kingdoms; as, *em* or *na*, *Inglaterra*, in England: but *no*, *na*, is most commonly construed with names of provinces; as, *no Alentéjo*, *na Beira*, &c. in Alentejo, in Beira, &c.

*Em* is sometimes rendered into English by *into*: as *Narciso fô transformádo em flôr*, Narcissus was metamorphosed into a flower: and sometimes by *to*; as *de rua em rua*, from street to street.

*No*, *na*, are sometimes rendered into English by *against*; as, *dar co' a cabeça na paréde*, to dash one's head against the wall.

*No*, *na*, &c. are also rendered into English by *in*, and sometimes by *into*; as, *ter hum menino nos braços*, to hold a child in one's arms; *entregár alguma coisa nas mãos de alguém*, to deliver a thing into somebody's hands.

*Em* is used before the word *travéz*, as in this phrase, *por-se de mar em travéz com alguém*, to fall out together.

*Em* before a noun of time, denotes the space of time that slides away in doing something; as, *el-rêy foi a Hanóver, em tres días*, the king went to Hanover in three days; that is, he was no longer than three days in going.

*Em* is sometimes used after the verb *hír*, to go; as, *vai em quatro mêses que eu aquí cheguei*, it is now going on four months since I came hither.

*Em* before *quanto*, and sometimes without it, is rendered into English by *while* or *whilst*; as, *em quanto vós fazéis aquillo, eu farei isto*, while you do that, I shall do this: but if they are followed by a noun of time with an interrogation, then they must be rendered into English by *in how much*, or *many*; as, *em quanto tempo?* in how much time? You must



observe, that *em quanto a mim, a ti, a elle, &c.* are rendered into English by *for what concerns me, thee, him, &c.*

You must observe that *no* serves for the masculine, *na* for the feminine, and *em* for both.

*Em* signifies *as*; as, *em sinal da sua amizade*, as a token of his friendship; *em prêmio*, as a reward.

The prepositions *em, no, na, &c.* and *dentro*, have very often the same signification, therefore they may sometimes be used one instead of the other; as *está na gavêta*, or *dentro da gavêta*, it is in the drawer; *está na cidade*, or *dentro da cidade*, he is in town.

*Em* before the words *favôr, utilidade, consideração, razão*, and the like, signifies *in behalf of, for the sake of, on account of, &c.* as, *em razão das bellas acções que elle tem feito*, in consideration of the great things he has performed.

Observe, that they very often make an elision of the last vowels, *o, a*, of the preposition *no, na*, when there is a vowel in the beginning of the next word; *n' ágoa*, instead of *na ágoa*; they also cut off the *e* of the preposition *em*, and change the *m* into *n*, as you may see in *Camoens*, Canto 2. Stanza xxxii. *n' algum pôrto*, instead of *em algum porto*, wherein you must observe that *n'* is to be Englished by *to, or into*.

### Com.

VII. This preposition signifies *with*, and it denotes conjunction, union, mixing, assembling, keeping company; as, *casar húma donzella com hum homem honrado*, to marry a maid with an honest man; *hir com alguém*, to go with one; *com a ajuda de Déos*, by God's help, &c.

Observe that most of the adverbs formed of the adjectives are turned in Portuguese by the preposition *com* and the substantive; as, *atrevidamente*, boldly, *com atrevimento*, with boldness; *elegante-*



*mênte*, elegantly; *com elegância*, with elegance; *cortezmênte*, politely, *com cortezia*, with politeness, &c.

You must observe, that the last consonant *m* is very often cut off, even before the noun of number *hum*, one; and so they say, *cum*, instead of *com hum*, as you may see in *Camoens*, Cant. 2. Stanza xxxvii.

Note, that *with me*, *with thee*, *with himself*, &c. are rendered into Portuguese by *commigo*, *contigo*, or *convôco*, *comsigo*, *convôco*, *comsigo*.

When *com* is preceded by *para*, it signifies *towards*, and sometimes *over*, in English; as, *sejâmos piedôcos para com os pôbres*, let us be merciful towards the poor. *Ter grãde poder para com alguém*, to have a great influence over somebody's mind.

*Com* before the word *capa* is used metaphorically, and then it signifies *under colour*, or *pretext*.

### *Para.*

VIII. *Para* is rendered into English by *for*; but it signifies also *to*, when it is found before the infinitive, and denotes the intention, or purpose in doing something; as, *êste livro he para meu irmão*, this book is for my brother; *êsta penna he para escrevêr*, this pen is to write; *Dêos nos fêz para amálo*, God made us for to love him; *o comêr he necessário para conservár a vida*, eating is necessary for preserving life.

*Para que* is rendered into English by *for what*; as, *para que he isto?* for what is this? and sometimes by *that*, or *in order that*; as, *para que vênha vêrme*, that he may come and see me. But *porque* signifies *why*, *for what*, *upon what account*, as, *porquê não vîndes?* why don't you come? but when it is not followed by an interrogation, it signifies *because*.

*Para* serves likewise before the verbs, to denote what one is able to do in consequence of his present disposition; as, *êlle hé bastantemênte fôrte para andár a cavállo*, he is strong enough to ride; *elle tem bas-*



*tânte cabedál para sustentár-se*, he has means enough to maintain himself; *a occasiãõ he muito favorável para nos não servir-mos délla*, the occasion is too favourable to let it slip.

*Para* expresses also the capacity or incapacity of doing any thing; as, *élle hé hómem para isto*, he is the proper man wanted for this; *hé hómem para pouco*, he is good for little; *he hómem para náda*, he is good for nothing.

This preposition is also used to denote the end or motive of doing any thing; as, *trabálho para o bem público*, I work for the public good; *hum hospitál para os póbres*, an hospital for the poor.

*Para* is a preposition of time; as *isto me bástá para tódo o áнно*; this is sufficient to me for all the year; *estão unidos para sêmpre*, they are united for ever; *para dous mêses éra muito pouco*, for two months it was too little.

*Para* is sometimes preceded by the adverb *lá*, and followed by a noun of time, and then it is Englished by *against* or *towards*; as, *lá para o fim da semana*, against the end of the week, or towards the end of the week.

*Para* is sometimes Englished by *considering*, or *with respect to*; as, *êste menino está muito adiantádo para a idáde que tem*, or *para o pouco têmpo que aprênde*, this child is very forward for his age, or considering the little time he has learned; *para Inglês fállá demasiadamênte*, he talks too much considering that he is an Englishman.

*Para* signifies sometimes *just* or *ready to*; as, *élle está para partír*, he is just going away, he is ready to go.

*Para* is also used before the word *gráças*; as, *élle não he para gráças*, he takes no jest; *élle não está para gráças*, he is out of humour, or he is in an ill humour.

*Para onde?* signifies *whither?* to what place?



*Para que?* or *para que fim?* signifies *to what end* or *purpose?* *Para cima* signifies *upward*.

*Para húma e outra páрте*, signifies *to both sides*, *places*, or *parts*.

*Para* is also Englished by *towards*, and is said of places; as, *para o oriénte*, *towards*, or *to the east*.

*Para onde quer que*, signifies *whether*, or *to what place thou wilt*, *any whither*.

*Para outra páрте*, signifies *towards another place*.

*Para comigo*, *towards me*.

*Para o diánte*, signifies *for the time to come*.

*De mim, para mim*, signifies *for what concerns me*.

*Para* is used by Camoens. Cant. 2. Stanza xxiv. before the preposition *detráz*, and signifies *backwards*.

*Para* between two nouns of number is Englished by *or*, and sometimes by *and*; as, *hum hómem de quarênta para cincoênta ánnos*, a man between forty and fifty; *dista quátro para cinco légoas*, it is about four or five leagues distant.

### *Por.*

IX. *Por, pello, pella, pellos, or pellas*, signifies *for*; as *por amor de vós*, *for your sake*; *por seis semanas*, *for six weeks*; *palávra por palávra*, *word for word*.

*Polo* and *pola* instead of *pello* and *pella*, are out of use.

*Por* sometimes denotes that the thing is not yet done; as, *ésta óbra está por acabar*, *this work is not yet finished*.

*Por*, by, for, over, or through; as, *alcancêi-o por empénho*, I obtained it by protection; *eu vou por dinheíro*, I am going for money; *passêio pellos câmpos*, I walk through the fields; *por tôdo o reíno*, all over the kingdom.

When *por* is before an infinitive, and followed by a negative, in the latter part of the sentence, it is Englished by *although* or *though*; as, *por ser devóta, or por devóta que seja, não deixa de ser molhér*, *though*



she is a religious woman, yet she is a woman; *por ser póbre*, or *por póbre que seja, não deixa de ser soberba*, though she has no fortune, she is nevertheless, or for all that, proud. Wherein you see, that the negative with the verb *deixar*, are rendered into English by the verb *to be*, and the particles *nevertheless*, *yet*, &c. You must observe that they sometimes put the words *nem por isso* before the verb *deixar*, but the sense is the same, and you may as well say, *por ser póbre, nem por isso deixa*, &c.

*Por* followed by an adjective and the particle *que* with a verb in the subjunctive mood, is rendered into English by *never so*; as, *por grande que elle seja*, let him be never so great; *por pouco que seja*, never so little.

*Por*, before *menos*, signifies *far less than*, or *under*; as *vm<sup>ce</sup> não o terá por menos de vinte libras*, you shall not have it under twenty pounds.

*Por* before *quanto*, with an interrogation, signifies *for how much*, *at what rate*? But if there is no interrogation, as in the following and the like sentences, then it is to be Englished by *for never so much*; as, *não o faria por quanto me dessem*, I would not do it for never so much.

*Por* before *cima* signifies *upwards*, and before *báxo* is Englished by *downwards*; as, *o remédio obra por cima e por báxo*, the medicine operates, or works, upwards and downwards.

*Por* before *pouco*, *muíto*, *bem*, &c. and followed by *que*, makes a sort of conjunction governing the subjunctive, and is Englished by *if*, followed by *ever* or *never so little*, *much*, *well*, &c. as, *por pouco que erréis*, if you do amiss never so little; *por bem que eu faça*, if I do never so well, &c.

*Por* before *mim* signifies sometimes *as for*, or *for all*; as, *por mim estou prômpto*, as for me, or, for my part I am ready; *por mim podéis dormir se quizerdes*, you may sleep for all me.



*Por, pello, pélla, &c.* denote the efficient cause of a thing, as also the motive and means, or ways of doing; in all which significations they are Englished by *by, through, out of, at, &c.* as,

*A Asia foi conquistada por Alexandre,* Asia was conquered by Alexander.

*Vós falláis nisso só por envêja,* it is out of envy only you speak of it.

*E'lle entrôu pélla pórtã, mas sahio pélla janélla,* he got in at the door, but he got out at the window, &c.

*Por* denotes place, after the verbs *ir* and *passár*; as, *por onde iréis vós?* which way shall you go?

*Eu passarêi por França,* I'll go through France; *por onde passôu elle?* which way did he go?

*Por* construed with nouns without an article, denotes most times *distribution of people, time, and place*; and it is Englished by *a, or every*, before the noun; as,

*E'lle dêu tanto por cabeça,* he gave so much a head.

*Tanto por soldádo, por áнно, por mês, por semana, &c.* so much a soldier, a year, a month, a week; *a razão de vinte por cento,* at the rate of twenty per cent.

*E'lle péde tanto por légoa,* he asks so much a league, or every league.

*Por*, between two nouns without an article, or between two infinitives without a preposition, denotes the choice which one makes between two things, alike in their nature, but different in their circumstances; as,

*Cása por cása ántes quero ésta que aquélla,* since I must have one of these two houses, I like this better than that; *morrêr por morrêr, melhor,* he *morrêr combatêdo que fugíndo,* when a man must die, it is better to die in fighting than in running away.

*Pello méyo* is rendered into English by *through*; as, *pello méyo dos câmpos,* through the fields.

*Por méyo* is rendered into English by *by*; as, *elle alcançôu o seu intênto por méyo de astúcias,* he has compassed his ends by devices.



*Por túrno* signifies *in one's turn*.

*Por* before the infinitives is used instead of *para* by the best Portuguese writers; and *porque* instead of *para que*; as you may see particularly in *Camoens*, Canto 2. Stanza vii. and viii. and in the following example, *por não*, or *para não repetir o que já temos dito*, not to repeat what we have already said.

*Por* is sometimes Englished by *for*, upon the account of, for sake, &c. as, *élle fará isto por amor de vós*, he will do this upon your account, or for your sake; *deixárao-o por morto*, he was left for dead; *en ténho-o por meu amigo*, I take him to be my friend; *tódos os homens de bem são*, or *estão por élle*, all honest people are for him, or are on his side; *por quem me tomáis vós?* who do you take me for?

We have already observed, that *porque* without an interrogation signifies *because*; but it has the same signification in the following sentence, and the like; *porque élle hé mentiróso ségue-se que também eu o seja*; because he is a liar, does it follow therefore that I am one?

*Por isto*, or *por ésta razão*, signifies *therefore*.

*O porque* signifies the reason, the cause, or the subject; as, *sábe-se o porque?* is it known upon what account?

*Por módo de dizer* signifies *as one may say*, if I, or we, may say, &c.

*Por diante* signifies *before*; and *por detrás* signifies *behind*.

*Por ventúra* signifies *perhaps*.

*Pétlo passádo* signifies *formerly*, in time past, heretofore.

*Por nenhúm caso*, by no means.

*Por mar e por terra*, by sea and land.

*Hum por hum* signifies *one by one*.

*Por* is sometimes Englished by *in*; as, *élles são vinte*, *por todos*, they are twenty in all.

When the verb *passár* is followed by *por*, then the word *álto*, signifies *to forget*; as, *passou-lhe aquillo por*



*alto*, he forgot that ; but speaking of goods it signifies to *smuggle*.

*Por* joined with the verb *ir* signifies to *fetch*, and *seek after* ; as, *vai por vinho*, go fetch some wine ; *vai pello medico*, go see for the physician.

*Por* is commonly used before the substantives ; as, *pór exêmplo*, for example ; *por commodidade*, for convenience ; *por costume*, for custom sake ; and many others, that may be learned by use.

You must observe, that *pello* serves for the masculine, *pella* for the feminine, and *por* for both.

### Contra.

X. *Contra*, (against, contrary to,) denotes opposition ; as, *que diz v<sup>me</sup> contra isto?* what do you say against this ? It signifies also *over against*, *opposite to*.

*Pró e contra* signifies in English *pro* and *con*.

### Desde.

XI. *Dêsde*, denotes both time and place, and enumeration of things, and is commonly followed in the sentence by the preposition *até* (*to*) ; then *dêsde* denotes the term *from whence*, and *até* that of *hitherto* ; as,

*Dêsde o princípio até o fim*, from the beginning to the end.

*E'lle fôí a pé dêside Windsor até Lôndres*, he walked from Windsor to London.

*E'ú ténho visto tôdos dêside o primeiro até o último*, I have seen them all from the first to the last ; *fôraõ tôdos môrtos dêside o primeiro até o último*, they were all slain to a man.

*Dêsde a criação do mûndo*, from or since the creation.

*Dêsde o bérço, ou infância*, from the cradle, from a child.



*Dêsde já*, even now ; as, *dêsde já prevêo*, I even now foresee.

*Dêsde agora*, from this time forward.

*Dêsde então*, from that time ever since.

*Dêsde que*, as soon as, when.

*Dêsde quando?* how long since, or ago?

*Rio navegável dèsde o seu nascimêto*; a river navigable at its very rise.

### *Até.*

XII. *Até* signifies *till, even, to, &c.* as you may see in the following examples.

*Até onde?* how far?

*Até Rôma*, as far as Rome.

*Até quando?* till when, or how long?

*Até que eu viva*, as long as I live.

*He hum homem de tanta bondade, que até os seus inimigos são obrigados a estimá-lo*, he is so good a man that even his enemies have a value for him.

*Até os mais vis homens tomavaõ a liberdade de, &c.* the very worst of men took such a liberty as to, &c.

*Até que*, until, till.

*Até as orêlhas*, up to the ears.

*Elle vendêo até a camisa*, he has sold the very shirt off his back.

*Até agora*, or *até aqui*, till now, or hitherto.

*Até aqui*, (speaking of a place) to this place, hither, so far.

*Até lá*, to that place, so far.

*Até que isto se faça*, till it be done.

*Até então*, till then, till that time.

*Até* is also used before an infinitive; as, *gritar até enrouquecer*, to bawl one's self hoarse.

*Rir até arrebentar pellas ilhargas*, to split one's sides with laughing.

*Dar de comer a alguém até arrebentar*, to fill, or cram one with victuals till he bursts.



*Até á priméira*, till our next meeting, till we meet again.

*Por cima.*

XIII. *Por cima* (above, over), denotes superiority of place; as,

*Morar por cima da alguém*, to live or lodge above somebody.

*A bálle lhe passou por cima da cabeça*, the ball went over his head.

*Por cima de tudo*, upon the whole.

*Para cima.*

XV. *Para cima* (above) denotes superiority of age, and is sometimes put at the end of the sentence; as,

*E'lles alistáraõ todos que tínhaõ de dez ánnos para cima*, they enlisted every body above ten.

*A cima.*

XV. *A cima*, (above) denotes rank, and some moral subjects; as,

*A cima d'elle*, above him, or superior to him.

*Estár a cima de tudo*, to be above the world.

*Húma molhér que está a cima de tudo, não se lhe dá do que o mundo diz d'ella*, a woman who is above the public censure, don't care what people say of her.

*Em cima.*

XVI. *Em cima* (upon); as *em cima da mēsa*, upon the table.

*Em cima de tudo isto*, or only *em cima*, signifies and besides all that, over and above all that.

*De cima.*

XVII. *De cima*, when it is an adverb, signifies from above; but when a preposition, it is Englished by *from*, *off*, or *from off*; as,



*Tirái aquillo de cima da mēsa*, take that from off the table.

*Elle núnca tiróu os séus ólhos de cima délla*, he never turned his eyes from her.

*Cahír de cima das árvores*, to fall off the trees.

### *Debáxo.*

XVIII. The preposition *debáxo*, (*under, below, or from under*) denotes the time and place; I say the time of a denomination of a reign, or government; as, *debáxo do império de Augústo*, under the empire of Augustus.

*Debáxo*, as a preposition of place, marks out inferiority of position; as,

*Tudo o que há debáxo dos céos*, all there is under heaven.

*Tér húma almofáda debáxo dos joéllhos*, to have a cushion under the knees.

*Estár debáxo da chave*, to be under lock and key.

*Debáxo* is sometimes rendered into English by *upon*; as, *affirmár húma cóusa debáxo de juramênto*, to swear a thing, to declare upon oath.

### *Abáxo.*

XIX. This preposition is rendered into English by *under, inferior, or next*; as, *assentóu-se abáxo délles*, he sat inferior, or under them; as, *assentóu-se abáxo de mim*; he sat next, inferior to me, or he was next man to me: *abáxo del-réi elle hé o priméiro*, he is the next man to the king.

This preposition is sometimes put at the end of the next phrases, *de télhas abáxo*, here below, in this lower world, *de cabeça abáxo*, headlong.

### *Fóra.*

XX. *Fóra*, (*out, without, except, but,*) denotes exclusion, and exception. It requires generally a genitive before a noun of time, or place; but it governs also the nominative; as,



*Fóra do rêyno*, out of the kingdom.

*Fóra da cidade*, out of town.

*Fóra de tẽmpo*, out of season.

*Procurái-o fóra de casa*, look for him without doors.

*E'les sahíraõ tãdos, fóra dous ou três*, they all went out except, or but two or three.

*E'lle lhe permite tudo, fóra o ir às assembleas*, he indulges her in every thing, but in going to assemblies.

*E'lle tem tãdos os poderes, fóra o de concluir*, he has full powers, except of concluding.

*Fóra* is sometimes preceded by *taõ*, and then it is to be rendered into English by *so far*; as, *elle está taõ fóra de socorrer os seus alliados, que se declara contra elles*, he is so far from assisting his allies, that he declares himself against them.

*Fóra* is sometimes rendered into English by *besides*; as, *fóra daquêlles que*, &c. besides those that, &c. and sometimes by *beyond*; as, *fóra de medida*, beyond measure.

*Fóra de horas* signifies *beyond the hour*, or *very late*.

*Pôr alguêm fóra da pórtã*, or *mandar alguêm pella pórtã fóra*, to turn one out of doors.

### *De frõte*, or *frõte*.

This preposition governs the genitive, and signifies *over against*. It is followed by *de*, *do*, *da*, &c. as,

*De frõte da sua casa está hum outeiro*, over against his house is a hill.

*Eu estava de frõte d'elle*, I was over against him.

### *Sem*.

*Sem* signifies *without*; as,

*Sem dinheiro*, without money.

*Sem dúvida*, without end.

*Sem dar a entender*, or *sem fazer conhecer*, without giving to understand.



*Sem mais, nem menos*, without any reason or provocation.

*Estár sem âmo*, to be out of place.

*Sem que algum acto precedente possa derogar o presente*, any former act to the contrary of the present notwithstanding.

*Sem* governs also the infinitive, which is rendered into English with the participle; as, *fallár sem sabêr*, to speak without knowing.

It is also a conjunction with *que*, governing the subjunctive; as,

*Enfada-se sem que lhe digaõ nada*, he is angry without any body saying any thing to him.

*Naõ era eu já bastantamente infeliz, semquê procurásseis de acrescentar a minha infelicidade?* was I not miserable enough before, but you must still labour to make me more so?

*Lembro-me sem que me digáis*, I remember without your telling.

*E'le virá sem que mandem por elle*, he will come without sending for.

*Confôrme*, or *segúndo*.

XXIII. *Confôrme* or *segúndo* (according to, conformable to), govern the nominative, and never the dative as in English: as,

*E'le foi tratado confôrme o seu merecimêto*, he was treated according to his deserts.

*Confôrme o meu parecêr*, in my judgment, in my opinion.

In common conversation *confôrme* is used adverbially, and Englished as follows:

*I'sso he confôrme*, or only *confôrme*, it is as it happens; may be yes; may be not; that is according.

*Confôrme a occasiaõ o pedir*, according as there shall be need.

*Sobre*.

XXIV. *Sobre* signifies upon; as, *sobre a mēsa*, upon the table; *sobre o rio*, upon the river.



*Sobre tudo*, or *sobre todas as cousas*, over all, above all, above all things, above any thing, especially; as, *sobre tudo tênde cuidado na saúde*, but howsoever the matter be, mind your health.

*Pôr alguém sobre si*, or *dár lhe o primeiro lugar*, to place one above himself.

*Ir sobre húma cidade*, to march against a town.

*Ir sobre alguém*, to fall, or to rush upon one.

*Ir sobre seguro*, to go upon sure grounds.

*Sobre a noite*, about or towards the evening.

*Sobre o verde*, somewhat green.

*Sobre a minha palavra*, upon my word.

*Sobre palavra*, upon parole.

*Mandar carta sobre carta*, to send letter upon letter.

*Elle recebeu a carta sobre o jantar*, he had just dined when he received the letter.

*Elle dorme sobre o jantar*, he sleeps presently after dinner.

*Sobre isto*, or *sobre estas cousas*, is sometimes Englished by *more than that*, or *besides that*; as,

*Elle roubou-o, e sobre isto matou-o*, he robbed him, and more than that, he killed him.

*Sobre que*, is rendered into English by *though* or *although*; as,

*E' ste negocio sobre que he difficultoso, não hé impossível*, altho' this is a hard affair, yet it is not impossible.

*Sobre* is Englished sometimes by *besides*; as,

*Sobre as misérias da guerra, elle teve a desgraça*, &c. besides the miseries of the war, he had the misfortune of, &c.

*Estár sobre si*, or *andar sobre si*, signifies to stand upon one's guard.

*Eu vos escreverei sobre esta matéria*, I will write to you about this matter.

#### *A'cerca.*

XXV. *A'cerca* signifies *about*; as, *ácerca d'isto lhe disse*, about this I told him; *ácerca de lá ir lhe respondi*, about going there I answered him.



*Pérto, junto, ao pé, pegado.*

XXVI. *Pérto*, (near by, about) denotes proximity of place and time, and governs the genitive case; as *aquillo está muito pérto do lume*, that is very near the fire; *pérto das oito horas*, about eight o'clock.

*Pérto do rio*, near the river.

*Estámos pérto do Natal*, we are near Christmas.

*Ao pé* requires also the genitive case; as,

*Assentáivos ao pé de mim*, sit down by me, or near me; *ao pé do rio*, near the river, &c.

Note, that *junto* (near or by) and *pegado*, (hard by) require the dative case; as,

*Junto a cidade*, near the town.

*Pegado ao palácio*, hard by the palace.

*Lônge.*

*Lônge*, far, a great way off, governs the genitive, and the particle *de*, or *do*, *da*, &c. as,

*Lônge de casa*, far from home.

*Lônge daqui*, far from hence.

*De longo*, or *ao longo*.

This preposition requires the genitive case; as,

*Ao longo da praya*, along the shore.

*Ao longo da costa*, *do prado*, &c. along the coast, the meadow, &c.

*Of further Particles.*

*Ainda*, *ainda que*, *pôstoquê* or *quando bem*, *ainda assim* or *com tudo*.

*Ainda* signifies yet; as, *êlle ainda não vêyo*, he is not come yet. It signifies also even; as, *seria vergonha ainda o fallar nisso*, it were a shame even to speak of it; *nem ainda por cem libras*, no not for a hundred pounds.

*Ainda que* signifies, though, or although; as, *ainda que vós sôis mais velho do que êlle*, though you be older than he; *ainda que assim fôsse*, though it were so.



*Ainda que*, is very often followed by *com tudo*, yet for all that; as, *ainda que elle não tivésse necessidade disso, com tudo, &c.* though he had no need of it, yet, &c.

*Ainda assim*, or *com tudo*, is sometimes Englished by *nevertheless*, or *for all that*; as, *ainda assim sempre elle foi louvável*, he was praise-worthy for all that.

*Ja desde, já que* and *já por que*.

*Ja desde* is rendered into English by *even from*; as, *ja desde o principio*, even from the beginning.

*Já que*, signifies *since*; as,

*Ja que isso assim he*, since it is so.

The particle *que* sometimes is not placed immediately after *ja*; as, *ja há dous annos que morreo*, he died two years since or ago.

*Já ha muito tempo que sahistes de casa*, it is a long time since you went from home.

*Já por que*, is repeated in the same sentence, and then the first is rendered into English by *first, because*; and the second by *secondly, because*; as, *ja por que era cego, ja por que era côxo*, first because he was blind, and secondly because he was lame.

*Depois que*.

*Depois que* is rendered into English by *after*; as, *Depois que eu tinha entrado*, after I was gone in.

*Com que*.

*Com que* is only a note either of introduction, or connexion; as,

*Com que havia hum homem enfermo, &c.* now a certain man was sick; sometimes they add to it the particle *assim*, and then it is to be rendered into English by *and so*.

*Ou*.

*Ou* signifies *or, or either*; as, *ou bom, ou máo*, either good or bad; *mais ou menos*, more or less; *ou elle queira ou não*, whether he will, or no.



*Quer.*

*Quer*, when a particle, must be repeated, and the first is rendered into English by *either* or *whether*, and the second by *or*; as, *quer elle queira quer não*, whether he will or no; *quer vós o tenháis feito, quer não*, whether you have done that, or no.

*Se quer or ao ménos.*

*Se quer or ao ménos*, &c. signifies *at least, however*; as, *se vós não queréis sêr por elle não sejáis se quer contra elle*, if you don't chuse to be for him, at least don't oppose him; *dái-lhe se quer com que sustentár-se*, give him at least a subsistence; *o nosso primêiro fim hé de livrárnos de tôdos os máles, ao ménos dos mayóres*, our chief end is to be freed from all, however the greatest evils.

*Nem se quer hum*, is rendered into English by *never a one, so much*, or in the following manner; as, *fôraõ tôdos mórto, e nem se quer hum escapôu*, they were all slain to a man.

*Quândo muito.*

*Quândo muito*, (at most, at farthest, at long run), is generally used before the nouns of time and price; as, *elle estará aquí dêntro em hum mêz quândo muito*, he will be here in a month at farthest; *dez libras quândo muito*, ten pounds at most.

*Tânto.*

*Tânto*, so much, is sometimes followed by *cómo*, and then it is rendered into English by *as well as, as much as*, &c.

*A'mo-te tânto cómo a mim mêsmo*, I love thee as well as myself.

*E'lle tême tânto cómo qualquér de vós, que lhe resulte algúm dâno*, he is afraid of a harm as much as any of you.



*Cuidêi que a estimasse tanto como a si mesmo*, I thought he made as high account of her, as of himself.

*Elles vem tanto de dia como de noite*, they can see as well by day as by night.

*E'u tive tanto como vós*, I had as much as you.

*Outro tanto* is rendered into English by *the double, twice as much*, or *as much* ; as,

*E'u alcancêi outro tanto mais por isso*, I had as much more for it ; *eu posso fazer outro tanto*, I can do as much.

*Tanto* followed by *assim*, is a particle merely expletive ; as,

*Tanto assim que lhe posso eu fazer ?* how can I help it ; *váite, tanto assim não ha nada para ti*, go away, here is nothing for you.

*Tanto assim* followed by *que* without an interrogation, is sometimes rendered by *so that, in so much that* ; as, *tanto assim que elle não quer ouvir mais fallar nisso*, so that he will hear no more of it.

*Tanto mais* is followed by *que*, and Englished by *and the more so as* ; as,

*E'u estôu prômpto para ir com v<sup>me</sup> hum dia dêstes á comédia, se v<sup>me</sup> quizer, tanto mais que se deve representár huma nova peça*. I am ready to go with you some day or other to the play, if you'll give me leave ; and the more so, as a new piece is to be acted.

*Tanto que*, or *logo que*, is rendered into English by *as soon as* ; as, *tanto que eu o ví*, as soon as I saw him.

*Tanto melhor* is rendered into English by *so much the better*.

*Tanto* is sometimes preceded by *com*, and followed by *que*, and is Englished by *so, provided that* ; as *com tanto que o façais*, provided that you do it ; *com tanto que me não faça mal*, so he do me no hurt.

*Tanto quanto* is Englished by *as much as* ; as,

*Tanto quanto posso*, as much as I can.

*Tão*.

*Tão*, so, is generally followed by *como* ; as,



*Este não he tão bom como o outro*, this is not so good as the other; *eu sei isso tão bem como vós*, I know it as well as you.

*Tão* is sometimes followed by *que*, and Englished by *so, such, to that degree*; as,

*E'le he tão prudente que não tem iguál*, he is so wise that he has not his match; *não sou tão louco que o creya*, I am not so simple, or I am not such a fool as to believe it; *fáz tão grande vento que*, &c. the wind is so high that, &c. or the wind blows to that degree, &c.

### *Cômo.*

*Cômo*, is Englished by *as, like, how, &c.* as you may see in the following expressions.

*Cômo?* how?

*Dizêime como lhe hei de fallar?* tell me how I may speak to him.

*Cômo assim?* how so?

*Cômo!* what!

*Cômo quer que*, whereas,

*Cômo quer que seja*, howsoever, in what manner, or fashion soever.

*Sêja como fôr*, be it as it will.

*Cômo isto assim he*, since it is so.

*Cômo*, as it were, or almost.

*Cômo se*, as if, or even as if; as, *como se elles tivessem já vencido*, as if they had already overcome.

*Cômo também*, as well as.

*Rico como elle he*, as rich as he is.

*Cômo sois meu amigo, quero, &c.* as (or because) you are my friend, I'll, &c.

*Dizêime o como*, tell me how.

*Eu sei como fazer para que elle venha*, I know the way I shall take to make him come.

*Cômo elle lá não estéja, eu iréi*, provided he is not there, I will come.



*Assim.*

*Assim*, so, thus, is rendered into English as you may see in the following expressions,

*Pôis he assim de véras ? de véras que assim he*, is it even so? it is even so.

*Assim seja*, or *seja assim*, so be it, or be it so.

*Assim hé*, it is so.

*Para assim dizer*, as it were.

*Assim sou eu louco, que, &c.* I am not so foolish as to, &c.

*Assim Deus me salve*, as I hope to be saved.

*Tanto assim*, so that.

*Assim he que vós, &c.* is this your way, &c.

*Assim como assim*, after all, nevertheless, or for all that; as, *em vão dilatais a vossa jornada, assim como assim he preciso que vádes*, it is in vain for you to put off your journey, you must go thither nevertheless, or for all that, you must go after all.

*Assim como*, as well as, or as soon as.

*Basta assim por agora*, thus much for this time.

*Assim na paz, como na guerra*, both in time of peace and war.

*Assim, assim*, so so, indifferent.

*Assim queira elle como póde*, he can if he will.

*Assim* is sometimes preceded by *e*; as, *e assim que quer isto dizer?* how now? what do you mean by this? And sometimes *assim* is followed by *como*; as, *assim como o sol eclipsa os outros planetas, da mesma sorte, &c.* as the sun eclipses the other planets, so, &c.

*Se.*

*Se*, if; as *se elle vier*, if he comes; *se me amasses*, should you love me; *se elle fosse homem de honra*, were he but an honest man: *se soubessem quem eu sou, todos diriaõ, &c.* were it told who I am, every one would say, &c. *se he verdade que, &c.* if so be that, &c.



The reciprocal verbs, as well as those that are used impersonally, may have two *se* joined together; as, *se se fôr*, if he goes away; *se se fälla nísso*, if they speak to it.

*Se* is sometimes rendered into English by *whether*; and when it is repeated, the second is Englished by *or*; as,

*Quiséra sabér se a culpa he nóssa, se vóssa*, I would know whether it is your fault, or ours.

*Aliás.*

*Aliás*, is sometimes rendered into English by *else*; as, *entrái, porque aliás fecharêi a pórtã*, come in, or else I'll shut the door; *porquê aliás seriaõ os vóssos filhos immúndos*, else were your children unclean. And sometimes it is rendered into English by *otherwise*, in other things, or respects.

*Embóra.*

*Embóra* is sometimes rendered into English by *prosperously*, *auspiciously*; but sometimes it is a particle merely expletive, and answers to the Italian *pure*; as, *dizêi muito embóra o que quizerdes*, say what you please: the Italian says, *dite pur quel che vi piace*.

*Muito embóra seja assim*, well, let it be so.

*Embóra* is sometimes Englished by *away*; as, *vãite embóra*, go away.

*Senáo.*

*Senáo* signifies *if not*, *did not*, *were it not that*, *but that*; as,

*Senáo tivésse mêdo de meu pay*, but that I fear my father.

*Se elle não tivésse vergónha de confessár*, but that he was ashamed to confess.

Note, that the following expressions, in which they make use of this particle, may be Englished by *but*, *for*, and some other variations.

*Se não fósse por elle*, but for him, or had it not been for him, or had he not been.



*Senão fosse por vós*, had you not been, or had it not been for you, without you, without your help, hindrance, &c.

*Senão fosse por mim, elle morreria de fome*, were it not for me, he would starve.

*Senão* is sometimes Englished by *but*: as, *nem elles tem outro intento, senão*, &c. nor do they aim at any thing else but, &c.

*Ninguém disse assim senão Cícero*, nobody said so but Cicero.

*Senão* may be also expressed in Portuguese by *mais que* in the following sentence, and the like.

*Elle não faz senão jogar*, or *elle não faz mais que jogar*, he does nothing but play.

*Não, não porque.*

*Não*, not, or no, when followed by *porque*, is Englished by *not that*, *not but that*; as, *não porque lhe faltasse engenho*, not but that he had wit; *não porque não fosse justo, mas porque*, &c. not but that it was right, but because, &c. *não porque a coisa seja impossível, mas porque*, &c. not that the thing is possible, but because, &c.

*Também, or outrosi.*

*Também*, or *outrosi*, signifies also, too, likewise; as, *vós assim o queréis e eu também*, you'll have it so, and I too.

*Para que, porque.*

See the prepositions *para* and *por*.

*Pois.*

This particle is very much used by the Portuguese, and it is rendered into English several ways, as you may see in the following examples:

*Pois ide, e vinde logo*, go then and come back presently.

*Pois não sou eu capaz de fazê-lo?* what, am I not capable to do it?



*Póis, or póis então que quér dizer isto?* Well, and what of all this.

*Póis, or póis então que hei de fazer?* What shall I do then?

*Póis eu digo que elle está dentro,* why, he is here within, I say.

*Póis porque me vigiáis!* Why then do you watch me?

*Elle tem cabeça; póis também hum alfinete a tem,* he has got a head, and so has a pin.

*Póis* before *naõ*, and preceded by an interrogation, denotes a strong assertion, and is Englished by *without doubt, yes, surely, to be sure, &c.* as, *virá elle? póis naõ!* will he come? yes to be sure.

*Antes, or mais depressa.*

These particles are sometimes rendered into English by *rather* or *sooner*; as, *antes* or *mais depressa quizera morrer*, I would rather die; *antes quizera viver só que na vossa companhia*, I would sooner live alone than be in your company. Sometimes *antes* is Englished by *before*; as, *I de-vos antes que elle venha*, go away before he comes; *antes que eu morra*, before I die.

*Mas antes, pelo contrario, mas pelo contrario.*

These particles are rendered into English by *on the contrary, on the other hand, nay*; as, *mas antes, mas pelo contrario, or pelo contrario isto he muito diferente*, nay it is quite another thing, *mas antes, pelo contrario, &c. elle he avarento*, nay, or on the contrary, he is a covetous man.

*Para melhor dizer.*

This phrase is rendered into English by *nay*; as, *elle tem ja bastante, ou para melhor dizer, mais do necessario*, he has already enough, nay too much; *A isto he que nós chamamos direito das gentes, ou para melhor dizer, da razão*, this is what we call the law of



nations, which may be called more properly the law of reason.

*Que.*

We have already observed that *que* is a particle which most conjunctions are composed of; as, *ainda que*, although; *de sorte que*, so that, &c.

The particle *que* sometimes is the sign of the third persons of the imperative, as *let in English*; as, *que fálle*, let him speak; *que ríão*, let them laugh.

*Que* is used between two verbs, to determine and specify the sense of the first, as *eu vos assegúro que assim he*, I assure you that it is so; *duvído que assim seja*, I doubt whether it is so or no.

*Que* is used also after *hóra* in the beginning of a sentence, and followed by a verb in the subjunctive, to denote by exclamation one's surprize, aversion, and reluctance of something; in which case there is a verb grammatically understood before *que*; as, *hóra que se esquecésse elle de si mesmo!* I wonder, or is it possible for him to have forgot himself!

The exclamation, or admiration, is sometimes expressed without any verb; as, *que gósto; e ao mesmo tempo, que péna!* how much pleasure and trouble at once!

*Que* is sometimes repeated; as,

*Que bellos livros que têndes*; what fine books you have got! *que bella que he a virtúde!* how beautiful is virtue!

*Que* is sometimes followed by *de*; as, *que de lóucos ha no múdo!* how many fools there are in the world!

*Que* is used after nouns denoting time, and is sometimes Englished by *when* or *since*, &c. and sometimes left out; as

*O día que elle partío*, the day when he set out.

*Quanto tempo há que estáis em Lóndres?* how long have you lived in London? How long is it since you lived in London?

*Ha dez annos que faz a mesma coisa*, he has done the same thing these ten years.



*Há dez annos que morréo*, he died ten years ago.

*Que* is sometimes rendered into English by *because*, as you may see in Camoens, canto 2. stanza xvi. *que levemente hum animo*, and sometimes by *that, to the end that, in order to*; as you may see *ibid.* stanza xvii. *que cómo vissem, que no rio, &c.*

*Que* before *se* in the beginning of a sentence, is a redundancy not expressed in English; as *que se vós dizéis que*, if you say that, &c.

*Que* is used after the conjunction *a penas* (scarce or hardly) and is Englished by *but*; as, *apenas acabou de fallar que logo morréo*; he had hardly done speaking but he expired.

*Que* sometimes is preceded by *desórte, de maneira, de géito*, and then it is Englished by *so that, in such a manner, insomuch that*; as *eu o farei de sorte que fiqueis contente*, I will do it so that, or in that manner that, you shall be contented.

#### *De véras.*

*De véras* signifies *in earnest*; but sometimes it is Englished by *no sure*; *de véras! não o posso crêr, no sure!*

#### *Hóra.*

*Hóra*, or *óra*, is an interjection that serves to encourage, as we have seen above; but when it is repeated, it is Englished by *sometimes, one while, another while*; as, *ora está bem, óra está mal*, sometimes he is well, sometimes ill, *elle óra está de hum parecêr, e ora de outro*, he is now of one opinion, and next moment of another. *Por óra*, signifies *now, for the present*.



## CHAP. VIII.

*Of the Portuguese Orthography; and first of Capitals and Stops.*

I. **T**HE proper names, as well as the surnames, always begin with a capital.

II. The names of nations, kingdoms, and provinces, also begin with a capital; as, *Francêz*, French; *Inglêz*, English, &c.

III. All names of dignities, and degrees, and honours, require a capital; as *Rêy*, *Bispo*, &c. King, Bishop, &c.

IV. At the beginning of a period, as well as of a verse, the first letter is always a capital.

V. The names of arts and sciences, as well as those of kindred, begin with a capital.

*Of Stops.*

The use of stops, or points, is to distinguish words and sentences.

The Portuguese have six stops, or pauses, viz.

1. The *pônto final*, the same as our period or full stop (.), and is used at the end of a period, to shew that the sentence is completely finished.

2. The *dôus pôntos*, which is our colon (:), and is the pause made between two members of a period; that is, when the sense is complete, but the sentence not ended.

3. The *pônto e vírgula*, our semicolon (;), and denotes that short pauses which is made in the subdivision of the members or parts of a sentence.

4. The *pônto de interrogaçám*, the point of interrogation thus (?).

5. *Pônto de admiraçám*, the point of admiration thus (!).

6. The *vírgula*, the same with our comma (,) and is the shortest pause or resting, in speech, being used chiefly to distinguish nouns, verbs, and adverbs, as also the parts of a shorter sentence.



The conjunction *e*, the relative *qual*, and the disjunctions *ou* and *nem*, require a comma before them.

The Portuguese make use also of a parenthesis, thus ( ); but they do not make use of the diæresis, called by their printers *créma* (·); they make use also of the *ângulo*, thus  $\Delta$ , called by the printers *caret*.

The apostrophe, or, as they call it, *viracento*, likewise takes place in this as in other languages, being designed only for the more pleasant and easy pronunciation of words, by cutting off an antecedent vowel; as, *d'ármas*, *d'élvás*, and not *dármas*, *délvas*, &c. But this is somewhat excusable in cases wherein, by use, they seem to be one word; as *néstá-néste*, *déstá*, *déste*, *nalgúm*, *daquélla*, *nélla*, *nélla*, *daquí*, *dalí*, *atequí*, *ategóra*; and not *em élle*, *de élle*, &c.

#### *Of the Accents.*

The accent, which is the very soul of articulated words, is a sound of the voice by which we pronounce some syllables shorter, others longer.

I intend to speak here only of the accents the Portuguese ought to make use of, according to *Madureira*, in his *Portuguese Orthography*,

The Portuguese indeed are acquainted with three accents, but they ought to make use of two only, namely, the acute, which descends from the right to the left (´), and the circumflex, thus (^).

1. The acute serves to prolong the pronunciation, and is put, according to *Madureira*, on the third person singular of the future tense; as *amará*, *lerá*, &c.

2. On the penultima of the preterpluperfect tense of the indicative mood; as, *amára*, *ensinára*, &c.

3. The acute accent ought to be put also on the penultima of the third persons of the present tense of the verb *renunciár*, *pronunciár*, *duvidár*, &c. thus *renuncia*, *pronuncia*, *duvida*, &c. that they may



be distinguished from the nouns *renúncia*, *pronúncia*, *dúvida*, &c. The same accent is also put on *está*, *nó*, to distinguish them from *ésta*, this, and *no*, in the.

The vowel *o* has two sounds, according to the two accents that may be put on it; one open, when it is marked with the acute accent, and is pronounced like *o* in *store*; the other close, when it is marked with the circumflex accent, and then is pronounced like *u* in *stumble*.

There are many nouns, both substantive and adjective, which are accented in the singular with the circumflex, and in the plural with the acute; and the adjectives that have two terminations, particularly those ending in *oso*, *osa*, must be accented (in the singular) with the circumflex in the masculine, and with the acute in the feminine; as,

*Fôgo*, fire; plural, *fôgos*.

*Fôrno*, oven; plural, *fornos*.

*ôlho*, eye; plural, *ôlhos*.

*ôvo*, egg; plural, *ôvos*.

*ôsso*, bone; plural, *ossos*.

*Pôço*, well; plural, *pôços*.

*Pôrco*, hog; plural, *porcos*.

*Rôgo*, prayer; plural, *rôgos*. And so *fôjo*, *tôrno*, *formôso*, *sequiôso*, *suppôsto*, *pôvo*, *tôrto*, *tôrta*, *copiôso*, &c.

The following keep the circumflex accent in both numbers; *bôlo*, *bôlos*; *bôjo*, *bôjos*; *bôto*, *bôtos*; *côco*, *côcos*; *chôro*, *chôros*; *côto*, *côtos*; *fôrro*, *fôrros*; *gôrdo*, *gôrdos*; *gôsto*, *gôstos*; *gôzo*, *gôzos*; *lôbo*, *lôbos*; *môço*, *môços*; *nôjo*, *nôjos*; *pôtro*, *pôtros*; *tôlo*, *tôlos*; *ferrôlho*, *ferrôlhos*; *rapôso*, *rapôsos*; *arrôz*, *arrôzes*; *algôz*, *algôzes*, &c.

On the contrary, the following keep the acute accent in both numbers: *côpo*, *côpos*; *môdo*, *môdos*; *nôssô*, *nôssos*; *vôssô*, *vôssos*, &c.

When the accent circumflex is put on the *é*, then the *e* is pronounced like the French masculine *e*; but when *e* is accented with the acute accent, then



the *e* is to be pronounced like the *e* open in French, and it is exceeding sonorous and long. See the pronunciation of the vowel *e*.

Nouns ending in *az*, *iz*, *oz*, *uz*, must have the acute accent on the vowel before the *z*; as, *rapáz*, a boy; *nóz*, a walnut; *alcaçúz*, licorice; but you must except *arróz*, rice; *algóz*, a hang-man.

Nouns ending in *ez* generally have the circumflex accent; as *mêz*, a month; *marquêz*, a marquis; &c. except the surnames; as, *Alvarez*, *Antúnez*, *López*, *Henríquez*, *Gonçalves*, *Rodríguez*, *Pérez*, *Núnez*, *Téllez*, &c.

*Some Observations upon the Portuguese  
Orthography.*

Both the Portuguese orthographers and best authors vary so much in their rules and ways of writing, that it is a hard matter, and quite out of any grammarian's way, to clear up this part of the Portuguese grammar: since it requires no less authority than that of the Royal Portuguese Academy. However, not to omit such a material part of the Grammar, I shall present the learners with the following observations.

I. When the Latin words from which the Portuguese are derived, begin with a *b*, the Portuguese likewise must begin with it; therefore you must write and pronounce the *b*, in the following words, *bom*, *bondade*, *bem*, *bêto*, &c. because they are derived from *bonus*, *bonitas*, &c. But you must except *báinha*, *bexiga*, *báirro*, which begin with a *b*, though they are derived from *vagina*, *vesica*, *vicus*.

II. Likewise if the Latin words begin with a *v*, the Portuguese words derived from them must also begin with it; as *vida*, *vivér*, *varrér*, *vér*, *vínho*, &c. from *vita*, *vivere*, *verrere*, *videre*, *vinum*, &c.

Though *b* ought to be pronounced only by closing the lips, and *v* by touching the superior teeth with the inferior lips; yet, by a certain affinity between



these two letters, in speaking there is a great confusion in the pronunciation of them in the province of *Entre Douro e Minho*: and this confusion has not been peculiar to the Portuguese language, because *Nebrixa* says, in his *Castilian Orthography*, that in his time some Spaniards could hardly make any distinction between these two letters.

III. The *p* found in some words originally Latin, is changed in Portuguese into a *b*; as, *cábra*, *cabéllo*, *cabêça*, &c. from *capra*, *capillus*, *caput*, &c.

IV. The Portuguese generally make use of the *y* in the following words: *ay*, *rêy*, *frêy*, *lêy*, *mãy*, *páy*, *máyo*, *mêyo*, and some others.

*Bluteau* says, that we must make use of the *y* in words having a Greek origin; as, *sy'llaba*, *Chrysopéia*, *pyrámide*, *poly'gono*, *hydrographía*, *hydrópico*, *phý'sica*, *hypérbole*, *hypócrita*, *Apócrypho*, &c.

V. The *ph* are used by the Portuguese in some words taken from the Greek; as, *philosophía*, *philología*, *Philadélphia*, *epitáphio*, &c.

VI. The *r* in Portuguese has two pronunciations, one soft, expressed by a single *r*, as in *arádo*, a plough; and after the consonants, *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *p*, *t*; and another hard, in which two *rr* are used; as in *bárro*, *cárro*, &c. But you must observe,

1. That in the beginning of a word two *rr* must never be used, because then the *r* is always pronounced hard in Portuguese; as in the words *rêmo*, *ríco*, *róda*, &c.

2. When the consonants *l*, *n*, *s*, are before the *r*, either in a single word, or a compound one, this letter must never be doubled, because then its sound is always strong; as in *abalroár*, *enriquecér*, *hônra*, *desregrádo*, *Henríque*, *Israelíta*, &c.

3. The *r* after a *b*, is also pronounced hard in compounds with the prepositions *ab*, *ob*, *sub*, and yet is not doubled; as in *abrogár*, *obrepçaõ*, *subrepçaõ*.

VII. The *s* is never doubled in the beginning of words, nor after the consonants; therefore you



must write *sarár*, *sabér*, *falsamente*, *fálsa*, *mánso*, &c.

The *s* is pronounced like *z* between two vowels, in words derived from the Latin, as well as in those that end in *ôsa*, and *ôso*; as *músa*, *cáso*, *ríso*, *amorôso*, *cuidadôso*, *cása*, &c. You must also observe, that *cosér* signifies *to sew*, but *cozér* signifies *to boil or bake*.

VIII. *Th* are generally used in words derived from the Greek; as, *amphitheátro*, *atheísta*, *theólogo*, *lethárgo*, *méthodo*, &c.

*Th* is also used in the Portuguese preposition *athé*; though some write it thus *até*.

IX. When *pt* is found in Latin words, it must be kept in the Portuguese derived from them; as, *áp-to*, *inépto*, *óptimo*, &c. from *aptus*, *ineptus*, *optimus*, &c. You must make the same observation about *ct*.

X. *Ch*, is sounded like *k*, in words derived from the Greek; as, *orchánjo*, *archidúque*, *Chrysóstomo*, *chrysól*, *chrisólogo*, *Christóvaõ*, *monarchía*, &c. These words must be written with *ch*, in order to preserve to the eye the etymology of words.

Note, that *ch* in words that are not derived from the Greek is pronounced like *sh* in the English words *shawl*, *shoot*, &c. but as some confound the *ch* with the *x*, and begin with *x* those words that should begin with *ch*, I thought it necessary to make a collection of them.

#### WORDS BEGINNING WITH

| CHA.     |             |            |
|----------|-------------|------------|
|          | Chamalóte   | Chançonêta |
|          | Chamár      | Chanquêta  |
| Chá      | Chamaríz    | Chantágem  |
| Cháa     | Chambaõ     | Chantrado  |
| Cháca    | Chamejár    | Chântre    |
| Chacína  | Chamiça     | Chá        |
| Cháço    | Chaminé     | Chápa      |
| Chacóta  | Chamuscár   | Chapádo    |
| Chafaríz | Chança      | Chapeádo   |
| Chága    | Chancéla    | Chapelêta  |
| Chalúpa  | Chancelaría | Chapéo     |
| Châma    | Chancelér   |            |



Chapím  
Chapinhár  
Chapúz  
Charaméla  
Charamelêiro  
Chárco  
Charnéca  
Charnêira  
Charóla  
Chárpa  
Chárro  
Charrúa  
Chásco  
Chasôna  
Chatím  
Cháto  
Chavao  
Chavascál  
Cháve  
Chaválha  
Chavêta  
Chavínha.

CHE.

Chêa, *or* Chéya  
Chéfe  
Chegár  
Cheriár, *and its de-*  
*rivatives.*  
Cherívia  
Chérne.

CHI.

Chiár

Chibárro  
Chíbo  
Chícharos  
Chichárro  
Chichélos  
Chicória  
Chicóte  
Chífra  
Chifrár  
Chífre  
Chilindrao  
Chilrár  
Chimbéo  
Chineár  
Chinchêiro  
Chinchôro  
Chinéla  
Chiquêiro  
Chísipa  
Chispár  
Chíste  
Chíta.

CHO.

Chóça  
Chóca  
Chocalhár  
Chocálho  
Chocár  
Chocarreár  
Chocarríce  
Chôco *and* Chócos  
Chocoláte

Chofrádo  
Chófre  
Chóldabólda  
Chóque  
Chorár  
Chorrílho  
Chôro  
Chovêr  
Chôupa  
Choupâna  
Chôupo, *or* Chôpo  
Chouríco  
Choutár.

CHU.

Chúça  
Chupamél  
Chupár  
Chuchurriár  
Chûço  
Chúfa  
Chumáço  
Chumbár  
Chúmbo  
Churriaõ  
Churúme  
Chúsma  
Chuva  
Chúveiro.

CHY.

Chy'pre.

The following words begin with *ce* and not *se*.

Cêa  
Ceádo  
Ceár.  
  
CEB.  
Cebôla  
Ceboll  
Cebolínho.

CED.

Cedavím

Cedéla  
Cedénho  
Cedêr  
Cedílho  
Cêdo  
Cédro  
Cédula.

CEG.

Céga

Cegár  
Cégo  
Cegônha  
Cegúde  
Ceguêira.

CEI.

Ceifa  
Ceifaõ  
Ceiraõ



Ceirínha  
Ceivár.

CEL.

Celàda  
Celebração  
Celebrár  
Célebre  
Celéste  
Celestial  
Celestrina  
Celêusma  
Célga  
Célha  
Célho  
Celibádo  
Celibáto  
Celícola  
Celidónia  
Célla  
Cellêiro  
Celleirêiro  
Céltas.

CEM.

Cem  
Cemitério.

CEN.

Cenáculo  
Cêno  
Cenóbio  
Cenobítico  
Cenoiáphia  
Cenôura  
Cenráda  
Cenrêira  
Cênso  
Censôr  
Censúra  
Censurádo  
Censurár  
Centáuro  
Centêna

Centeál  
Centésimo  
Centêyo  
Cênto  
Centóculo  
Centopéa  
Centrál  
Cêntro  
Cêntuplo  
Centúria  
Centuriaõ  
Céo

CEP.

Cêpa  
Cepílho  
Cêpo  
Céptro.

CER.

Cêra  
Ceraferário  
Cerbéro  
Cêrca  
Cercádo  
Cercár  
Cercadôr  
Cercadúra  
Cérce  
Cerceádo  
Cerceár  
Cercíllo  
Cêrco  
Cerdôso  
Cérebro  
Ceréijas  
Cercijál  
Ceremónia  
Ceremoniál  
Ceriêiro  
Cérne  
Cernélha  
Ceról  
Cerôulas  
Cerquêiro

Cerração  
Cerrár  
Cerralhêiro  
Cerrálho  
Cerrárse  
Cêrro  
Cérta  
Cérto  
Ceriãa  
Certêza  
Certída  
Certificár  
Cérva  
Cervál  
Cervêja  
Cervilhas  
Cervíz  
Cerúda  
Cerúleo  
Cérvo  
Cerzír.

CES.

César  
Cesaréa  
Cêsma  
Cesmaria  
Cesmêiro  
Cessaõ  
Cessação  
Cessár  
Cêsta  
Cestínha  
Cestínho  
Cestêiro  
Cêsto  
Cesúra

CEV.

Céva  
Ceváda  
Cevadál  
Cevadêira  
Cevadôuro  
Cevár



CEZ.

Cezaõ

Cezimbar.

N. B. *Cerrar*, signifies *to shut*, or *shut up*; but *serrár* signifies *to saw*, to cut timber or other matter with a saw.

The following words must have *ci*, and not *si*, in their beginning.

|           |            |                |
|-----------|------------|----------------|
| CIA.      | Cigãno     | Cintúra        |
| Ciarse    | Cigarra    | Cínza          |
| Ciática.  | Cigúde     | Cinzêto        |
|           | Cigurêlha. | Cinzêiro.      |
| CIB.      |            |                |
|           | CIL.       | CIO.           |
| Cíba      | Ciláda     | Cío            |
| Cibálho   | Cílhas     | Ciôso          |
| Cibório.  | Cilhár     | Ciôsa.         |
|           | Cilícia    |                |
| CIC.      | Cilício    | CIP.           |
| Cicatríz  | Cilládas.  | Cipó           |
| Cícero    |            | Cipréste       |
| Ciciôso.  |            | Ciprião.       |
|           | CIM.       |                |
|           |            | CIR.           |
| CID.      | Címa       | Cirânda        |
| Cidadaõ   | Cimálha    | Cirandágem     |
| Cidadaõs  | Cimbalo    | Cirandár       |
| Cidáde    | Cimêyra    | Círco          |
| Cidadôa   | Cimênto    | Circulaçaõ     |
| Cídra     | Cimitárta  | Circulâr       |
| Cidrâda   | Címo.      | Círculo        |
| Cidraõ    |            | Circúito       |
| Cidrêira. |            | Circumcidár    |
|           | CIN.       | Circumcisão    |
|           |            | Circumferência |
| CIE.      | Cinca      | Circumspécto   |
| Ciência.  | Cincár     | Circumspécção  |
|           | Cíncho     | Circumstância  |
|           | Cínco      | Circumstântes  |
| CIF.      | Cincoenta  | Círio          |
| Cifár     | Cingidouro | Cirurgia       |
| Cifra     | Cingír     | Cirurgiaõ      |
| Cifrár.   | Cíngulo    |                |
|           | Cinnamômo  |                |
| CIG.      | Cínta      |                |
| Cigãna    | Cintillár  |                |



|              |             |          |
|--------------|-------------|----------|
| Cirzír.      | Citacão     |          |
|              | Citádo      | CIU.     |
| CIR.         | Citár       |          |
| Ciscár       | Citeriôr    | Ciúme    |
| Cisco        | Cíthara     | Ciúmes   |
| Císma        | Citbarêdo   | CIZ.     |
| Cismático    | Citrino     | Cizânia  |
| Císne        | Cível       | Ciziraõ. |
| Cisterciense | Civil       |          |
| Cisténa      | Civilidade. |          |

XI. No Portuguese word begins with *ço*; but according to *Madureira*, there are some that begin with *ça*, and *çu*; as *çapáto*, *çapateíro*, *çargáço*, *çúja*, *çugidade*, *çúmo*, *çúrta*, *çurrár*, and some others.

The *ç* is used after *p* in those Portuguese words that have in their Latin root *pt*; as *descripção*, *accepção*, &c. from *descriptio*, *acceptio*, &c.

### Of Double Letters.

It is to be generally observed, that the consonants are doubled in those Portuguese words, whose Latin roots have likewise the same double consonants; as *acelerár*, *accênto*, *occidênte*, &c. from *accélero*, *accentus*, *occidens*, &c. *affligír*, *affluência*, *afirmação*, &c. from *affligo*, *affluentia*, *affirmatio*, &c. as you will see in the following collections.

#### B.

*B* is to be doubled in *abbáde*, *abbaciál*, *abbadia*, *abbadessa*, *abbreviatúra*, *abbreviár*, and some others.

#### C.

*C* is to be doubled in the following words, and some of their derivatives.

|            |           |            |
|------------|-----------|------------|
| A.         | Accênto   | Acceíta    |
| Abstracção | Acçentuár | Acceitaçãõ |
| Acção      | Accepção  | Acceitadôr |



Acceitár

Accessaõ

Accessível

Accéssõ

Accessório

Accidental

Accidente

Acceleráda

Accelerádo

Accelerár

Acclamação

Acclamár

Accommodação

Accomodádo

Accommodár

Accumulação

Accumuládo

Accumulár

Accusação

Accusádo

Accusadôr

Accusár

Accusativo

Adstricção

Afflicção

Attracção.

B.

Báccho

Bôcca

Bocça

Boccadinho

Bocádo

Bocál.

C.

Circumspécção

Coacção

Cocção

Collecção

Constricção

Construcção

Contracção

Correcção.

D.

Decocção

Deducção

Desjecção

Desoccupação

Desoccupádo

Desoccupár

Detracção

Dicção

Dicionário

Direcção

Distracção.

E.

Eccêntrico

Ecclesiástico

Erecção

Evicção

Exacção

Extracção.

F.

Fácção

Ficção

Fracção

I.

Impeccabilidade

Impeccável

Inaccessível

Indicção

Inducção

Intecção

Infracção

Inspeccção

Instrucção

Intellécção

Interjecção

Intertecção

Introducção.

M.

Manuducção

O.

Objecção

Obstrucção

Occasião

Occasionár

Occáso

Occidental

Occidente

Occíduo

Occisção

Occurrêr

Occultamente

Occultádo

Occultár

Occulto

Occupação

Occupádo

Occupár

Occurrência.

Occurrênte.

P.

Peccádo

Peccadôr

Peccadôra

Peccânte

Peccár

Predicção

Preoccupár

Producção

Projecção

Protecção

Putrefacção.

R.

Rarefacção

Recondacção

Refecção

Refracção

Resecção

Restricção

S.

Satisfacção

Seccár

Sêcco

Secção



Seccúra

Sôcco

Soccorrêr

Soccôrro

Subtracção

Succedêr

Successão

Succêso

Successívo

Successível

Successôr

Succintamênte

Succinto

Súcco

Succôso

Súccubo.

T.

Transacção

Tradacção

V.

Vácca

Vaccáda

Vaccúm.

D.

This letter is doubled in the following words:  
*addição, addicionádo, addicionár, additamento, additár.*

F.

*F* is to be doubled in

Affabilidáde

Affável

Affadigádo

Affadigár

Affagádo

Affagár

Affágos

Affamádo

Affamárise

Affastádo

Affastár

Affazendádo

Affazêrise.

Affeminádo

Affeminárise

Afferrádamênte

Afferrádo

Afferrár

Afferretoádo

Afferretoár

Afferrolhádo

Afferrolhár

Afferventádo

Afferventár

Affervorádo

Affervorár.

Affirmádamênte

Affirmadôr

Affirmár

Affistulárise

Affixár.

AFFL.

Afflamárise

Afflicção

Afflícto

Affligír

Affluência

AFFO.

AFFE.

Affeádo

Affeár

Affeamênte

Affectádamênte

Affectádo

Affectár

Affécto

Affectuôso

Affeição

Affeçoádo

Affeçoár

Affeite

Affeitár

AFFI.

Affiádo

Affiár

Affidalgádo

Affidalgárise

Affigurádo

Affigurár

Affilháda

Affiladôr

Affilár

Affinádo

Affinár

Affincádo

Affincár

Affocinhár

Affogádo

Affogadôr

Affogár

Affogamênte

Affogueádo

Affogueár

Afforádo

Afforadôr

Afforár

Afforamênte

Afformentár

Afformoseádo

Afformoseár.



Affoutádo  
Affoutár  
Affoutêza  
Affôuto.

## AFFR.

Affracár  
Afframengádo  
Affreguesádo  
Affreguesárse  
Affrônta  
Affrontádo  
Affrontamênto  
Affrontár  
Affrontósamênte  
Affrontôso  
Affroxádamênte  
Affroxádo  
Affroxar.

## AFFU.

Affugentádo  
Affugentár.

Affumádo  
Affumár  
Affundádo  
Affundárse  
Affundírse  
Affuzillár.

## DI.

Diffamádo  
Diffamár  
Differença  
Differençar  
Differenças  
Differênte  
Differêntemênte  
Diffícil  
Difficuldáde  
Difficultár  
Difficultósamênte  
Difficultôso  
Diffusaõ  
Diffusamênte  
Diffúso

## E.

Effectivamênte  
Effectívo  
Effêito  
Effeituár  
Efficazmênte.  
Efficácia  
Eficáz  
Efficiênte  
Effígie

## O.

Offendêr  
Offerecêr  
Offuscár.

## S.

Suffocár  
Suffrágio, *and some others.*

## G.

This letter is to be doubled in

Aggravânte  
Aggravár  
Aggravádo  
Aggrávo

Aggressôr  
Exaggeraçã  
Exaggeradôr  
Exaggerádo

Exaggerár  
Suggerír  
Suggestaõ  
Suggerído.

## L.

L is to be doubled in

## AB.

Aballádo  
Aballadôr  
Aballár  
Abállo  
Aballisádo  
Abilísadôr  
Aballisár.

## AC.

Acafelladôr

Acafelladúra  
Acafellár  
Acalleniádo  
Acallentár  
Acapelládo.

## AF.

Afilládo  
Afilladôr  
Afillár.

## AL.

Allegaçaõ  
Allegádo  
Allegár  
Allegoría  
Ailegórico  
Allegorisár  
Allelúia  
Alliviár  
Allucinaçaõ



|               |                |              |
|---------------|----------------|--------------|
| Allucinár     |                | Cavallêiro   |
| Alludír       | BA.            | Cavállo.     |
| Allumiár      | Bacelláda      |              |
| Allusaõ.      | Bacello        | CE.          |
|               | Barbélla       |              |
| AM.           | Barrélla.      | Cebôlla      |
| Amantelládo   |                | Cebollál     |
| Amarélllo     | BE.            | Cebollínho   |
| Amarellecêrse | Bélla          | Chancellér   |
| Amerellidaõ   | Béllamênte     | Chancellaría |
| Amolládo      | Bélo           | Célla        |
| Amollár       | Bellêza        | Cellêiro.    |
| Amollecêr     | Belleguím      | CL.          |
| Amollecído    | Béllico        |              |
| Amollentár    | Bellicôso      | Clavellína   |
| Ampôlla.      | Bellígero      | co.          |
|               | Belluíno.      |              |
| AN.           |                | Codicillo    |
| Annulaçaõ     | BU.            | Cólla        |
| Annullár.     | Búlla          | Colládo      |
|               | Bullário.      | Collár       |
| AP.           |                | Collêira     |
| Appellaçaõ    | CA.            | Colláçaõ     |
| Appellânte    | Callíope       | Collaterál   |
| Appellár      | Camillo        | Collécçaõ    |
| Appellidár    | Cavillaçaõ     | Collécta     |
| Appellído.    | Cavillósamênte | Collectivo   |
|               | Caballína      | Collectôr    |
| AQ.           | Cadélla        | Colléga      |
| Aquélla       | Cadellínha     | Collegiáda   |
| Aquêlle       | Cálla          | Collegiál    |
| Aquellôutro   | Camartéllo     | Collégio     |
| Aquílla.      | Cambadélla     | Colligár     |
|               | Cancélla       | Colligír.    |
| AR.           | Capélla        | Colly'rio    |
| Arméllas      | Capellaõ       | Cóllo        |
| Arrepelládo   | Capelláda      | Collocaçaõ   |
| Arrepellaõ    | Capellanía     | Collocár     |
| Arrepellár.   | Capéllo        | Collóquio    |
|               | Capillár       |              |
| AT.           | Castélla       | COM.         |
| Atropelládo   | Castéllo       | Compellír    |
| Atropellár.   | Casúllo        | Compostélla  |
|               | Casúlla        | Constellaçaõ |
| AV.           | Caválla        | Corrollário  |
| Avillanádo.   | Cavallaría     | Covéllo      |



Courélla

Encelleirár.

GA.

DE.

EQ.

Délla

Déllas

Dêlle

Dêlles

Degolládo

Degollaçãõ

Degollár

Degolladôuro.

DI.

Distillaçãõ

Distilladôr

Distillár.

DO.

Donzélla.

DU.

Duélo

EB.

Ebulliçaõ

ELL.

E'lla

E'llas

E'lle

E'lles

Elléboro

Ellípse

Ellíptico.

EM.

Emolliênte

Emollír

EN.

Enalláge

Encapelládo

Encapellár

Encastelládo

Encastellár

ES.

Escabelládo

Escabéllo

Escudélla

Escudellaõ

Estillaçaõ

Estilládo

Estillár

Estillicídio

Estrêlla

Estrelládo.

EX.

Excellência

Excellênte

Expellír.

FA.

Fálla

Fallácha

Fallácia

Falladôr

Fallár

Fallecêr

Fallecido

Fallência

Fallído.

FE.

Ferdizêllo

FL.

Flagellânte

Flagéllo.

FO.

Fólle

Follículo

Fontéllo.

Gabélla

Galládo

Galladúra

Gallár

Gallêgo

Gália

Gallicádo

Gallicár

Gállico

Gallínha

Gallinháço

Gallinhêira

Gallinhêiro

Gallinhóla

Galliópolis

Gallióta

Gallíza

Gállo

Gamélla

Gazélla.

GO.

Gólla.

HE.

Hellefpônto

Hendecasy'llabo

Hollânda

Hypállage.

JA.

Janélla

Janellêira

Janellínha

Jarméllo.

I.

Illaçaõ

Illaqueár

Illatívo

Illegítimo

Illéso

Illicar

Illiciadôr



|                |                |                 |
|----------------|----------------|-----------------|
| Ilíciramênte   | Mirandêlla     | Pêlle           |
| Ilícito        | Miscellânia    | Pellesínha      |
| Illocável      | Mólle          | Pellíca         |
| Illudido       | Mollêira       | Pellicula       |
| Illudír        | Mollêza        | Panêlla         |
| Iluminação     | Mollice        | Pimpinêlla      |
| Iluminádo      | Mollidaõ       | Phíllis         |
| Iluminár       | Mollificânte   | Pollegáda       |
| Illuminativo   | Mollificár     | Pollegár        |
| Illusaõ        | Mollinár       | Pollez          |
| Illúso         | Monosy'llabo.  | Polluçaõ        |
| Ilustraçaõ     |                | Pollúto         |
| Ilustrár       | N.             | Polysy'llabo    |
| Illústre       | Nêlla          | Portacóllo      |
| Ilustríssimo   | Nêllas         | Portêlla        |
| Illy'rio       | Nêlle          | Postílla        |
| Imbêlla        | Nêlles         | Pousafólles     |
| Impellír       | Nigêlla        | Prunêlle        |
| Incapilláto    | Novêlla        | Pulmêlla        |
| Infallível     | Novelleiro     | Pupílla         |
| Inintelligível | Núlla          | Pupíllo         |
| Intervállo.    | Nullidáde      | Pusillanimidáde |
|                | Nullo          | Pusillânime.    |
|                | Nuzéllos.      |                 |
| L.             |                | Q.              |
| Libéllo        | O.             | Quartêlla.      |
| Lordêllo       | Odivéllas      |                 |
| Lousêlla.      | Ollaría        | R.              |
|                | Ollêiro        |                 |
| M.             | Ouguêlla.      |                 |
| Marcêlla       |                | Rabadêlla       |
| Marcellína     | P.             | Rebelládo       |
| Marcéllo       |                | Rebellaõ        |
| Martelláda     | Pálla          | Rebellárse      |
| Martellár      | Palládio       | Rebelliaõ       |
| Martéllo       | Pallante       | Rêlla           |
| Martellínho    | Pállas         | Rodofólle       |
| Malfallânte.   | Palliádo       | Rodopéllo       |
| Mallográdo     | Palliár        | Rosêlla         |
| Mamillár       | Pallidêz       | Ruêlla          |
| Medúlla        | Pállido        |                 |
| Mellífluo      | Pállio         | S.              |
| Méllo          | Paradêlla      | Sêlla           |
| Metálico       | Paralláxe      | Selládo         |
| Millenário     | Parallêlo      | Selladôr        |
| Millésimo      | Paraléllogrâmo | Sellagaõ        |
|                |                | Sellár          |



|             |                |             |
|-------------|----------------|-------------|
| Sellêiro    | Tôlla          | Vassállo    |
| Sêllo       | Tollice        | VE.         |
| Sentinêlla  | Tôllo          | Velleidáde  |
| Siby'lla    | Torcicóllo     | Vellicação  |
| Sigillo     | Tranquillidáde | Vellicár    |
| Sigilládo   | Tranquillo     | Vêllo       |
| Sobrepellíz | Trêlla         | Vellôso     |
| Sugillação  | Trisy'llabo    | Vellúdo     |
| Sy'llaba    | Tunicêlla      | Verdesêlla  |
| Syllabático | Túllio         | VI.         |
| Syllábico   | V.             | Villa       |
| Syllogisár  | Vacillação     | Villanía    |
| Syllogismo. | Vacillânte     | Villaãmênte |
| T.          | Vacillár       | Villaõ      |
| Tabêlla     | Válla          | Villaõ      |
| Tabelliaõ   | Valládo        | Vitêlla     |
| Tabelliôa   | Vallár         | Vitellíno.  |
| Titillação  | Válle          |             |
| Titillár    | Vassallágem    |             |

N. B. *Annular* signifies to *annul*; but *annulár* is an adjective, and signifies *annular*, or in the form of a ring. *L* is doubled by some in the words *pelo*, *pela*, (for) thus *pêllo*, *pêlla*.

## M.

*M* is to be doubled in

|              |               |               |
|--------------|---------------|---------------|
| Accommodár   | Commúm        | Emmudecêr     |
| Commemoração | Commungár     | Engommár      |
| Commênda     | Communicár    | Epigrâmma     |
| Commensurár  | Comunidade    | Flâmma        |
| Commentár    | Commutár      | Flammânte     |
| Commerciár   | Consummár     | Flâmmula      |
| Commettár    | Desaccommodár | Gemma         |
| Comminação   | Descómodo     | Gômma         |
| Commiseração | Dilêmma       | Grammática    |
| Commissaõ    | Emmadeirár    | Immaculáda    |
| Commissário  | Emmadeixár    | Immanênte     |
| Commoção     | Emmagrecêr    | Immarcessível |
| Cómodo       | Emmanquecêr   | Immaterial    |
| Commovêr     | Emmassár      | Immatúro      |



|                 |                |                |
|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
| Immediátamente  | Immortificádo  | Mâmma          |
| Immemorável     | Immóvel        | Mammár         |
| Immênso         | Immudável      | Recommendâr    |
| Immensurável    | Immúndo        | Sômma          |
| Immobilidadê    | Immunidâde     | Sommár         |
| Inmoderádamente | Immutável      | Súmma          |
| Immodéstô       | Incómodo       | Summário       |
| Immódico        | Incommunicável | Summidâde      |
| Immolar         | Incomutável    | Symmetria, and |
| Immortalisár    | Inflammár      | some others    |

N. B. *M*, and not *n*, is always made use of before *b*, *m*, *p*.

### N.

*N* is likewise doubled in several verbs compounded with *an*, *en*, *in*, *con*, as *annelár*, *annêxa*, *annaõ*, *annáta*, *annél*, *A'нна*, *ânno*, *annulár*, *connêxaõ*, *connêxo*, *depennár*, *empennár*, *ennastrár*, *ennegrecêr*, *innáto*, *innavegável*, *innocência*, *manná*, *Mariánna*, *pânno*, *pênna*, when it signifies a pen, *tyránno*, and some others.

### P.

This letter is to be doubled in words beginning with *p* compounded with the Latin prepositions *ad*, *ob*, *sub*; as *apparáto*, *apparecêr*, *oppôr*, *opprimír*, *suppôr*, *Philíppe*, *póppa*, &c.

N. B. *Páppa* signifies *pap*, or a sort of spoon-meat for children; but *papa* signifies *the Pope*.

### R.

The *r* is doubled in such words as are strongly pronounced in the middle; as *guérrea*, *arrancár*, *arredár*, *arrimár*, *arruinár*, *carregár*, *cárro*, &c.

### S.

The *s* is to be doubled in the Portuguese superlatives, because it is doubled in the Latin roots; it is also doubled in the following words :



|            |            |                    |
|------------|------------|--------------------|
| Abbadêssa  | Assaltár   | Nósso              |
| Condêssa   | Asséyo     | Nóssa              |
| Assár      | Assessôr   | E'ssa              |
| Assanhár   | Assím      | E'sse              |
| Assegurár  | Assistír   | I'sso              |
| Assignár   | Assombrár  | O'sso              |
| Assolár    | Assoprár   | Passeár            |
| Accêssô    | Assobiár   | Passár             |
| Aggressôr  | Assustár   | Remêssa            |
| Appressár  | Atravessár | Ingrêssô, and many |
| Amassár    | Necessitár | others.            |
| Arremessár | Nísso      |                    |

T

*T* is doubled in the following words and their derivatives :

|            |              |             |
|------------|--------------|-------------|
| Attemperár | Attribuír    | Permittír   |
| Attenção   | Attribúto    | Promettêr   |
| Attendêr   | Attrição     | Remettêr    |
| Atteniár   | Attrito      | Remettír    |
| Attenuação | Commettêr    | Sétta       |
| Attenuár   | Demittír     | Settênta    |
| Attónito   | Enfittár     | Settecêntos |
| Attracção  | Fítta        | Transmittír |
| Attractivo | Intrommettêr |             |
| Attrahír   | Omittír      |             |

*Of the Quantity of Syllables and their Sound.*

*Of Words that make their Penultima in a.*

N. B. You must remember what we have said above about the accents.

All words ending in ábo, ába, áco, áca, ácho, ácha, áço, áça, ádo, áda, áfo, áfa, ágo, ága, ágem, ágre, álho, álha, álo, ála, have the penultimas long; as diábo, mangába, macáco, macáca, caváca, mingícho, garnácha, madráço, linháça, amádo, punháda, (except relâmpago, antropófago, levado, and cágado, which are short in the penultima), abáfo, abáfa, saramágo, adága, (except stámagô, or estômago, ámagô, amáracô, which



are short,) *trabálho, toálha, badálo*, (except *anómalo, búfalo, escándalo*, which are short), *tanchágem, vinágre*.

Words ending in *ámo, áma, áno, ána, áno, ána*, have their penultimas long; as, *escámo, couráma, castáno, aránha, engáno, pestána*; except *pâmpano, týmpano, bígamo*.

Words ending in *ápo, ápa, áque, áro, ára*, have their penultimas long; as, *guardanápo, solápa, basbáque, empáro, seára*; except *cántaro, púcaro, láparo, báparo, lúparo, píparo, pícaro, cámera, támara, pássaro, Lázaro, bárbaro, cócaras, &c.*

Words ending in *árra, áto, áta, ávo, áva, áxo, áxas*, make the penultima long; as, *bizárro, bizárta, biscáto, pataráta, escrávo, escráva*, (except *côncava*, and *bisavô*), *cartáxo, tarráxa*.

*Of Words that make their Penultima in e.*

All words ending in *ébo, éba, édo, éda, éfa*, have their penultima long; as, *mancébo, mancêba, azêdo, azêda, sanéfa*.

Words ending in *éfe* are long; as, *magaréfe*: as well as those ending in *éco, éca, éço, éça*; as *bonéco, bonéca, cabêço, cabêça*.

Words ending in *égo, éga*, are long; as, *morcégo, socégo, relégo, entréga, alléga*; except *cónego, tráfego, córrego, sófrego, pécego, fôlego, bútega, cócegas*.

Words ending in *éjo, éja, élo, éla*, are long; as, *caranguéjo, bocéjo, igrêja, Alentéjo, envêja, martélo, queréla*.

Words ending in *êmo, êma, êno, êna*, are long; as, *suprêmo, postêma, acêno, uçucêna*; except *apózema*.

N. B. The penultima is short in the word *íngreme*.

Words ending in *épo, épa, épe, éque, éro, éra*, are long; as, *decépo, carépa, julépe, moléque, sevéro, sevêra, tempéro*, (when a noun): and *tempéro*, (when a verb) except *áspero, próspero*.

Words ending in *êso, êsa, êzo, êza, êto, éta, ête, êvo, éva, éve*, are long; as, *acêso, acêsa, desprêzo,*



*grandêza* and *desprêso*, (when a verb) *entremêto*, *galhêta*, *ramalhête*, *bofête*, *atrêvo*, *atrêva*, *atrêve*.

*Of Words that make their Penultima in i.*

Words ending in *íbo*, *íba*, *íbe*, *ícho*, *ícha*, *íche*, *íco*, *íca*, *íço*, *íça*, *íce*, *ído*, *ída*, *ífo*, *ífa*, *ífe*, have the penultima long; as, *estríbo*, *arríba*, *arríbe*, *esguícho*, *esguícha*, *azevíche*, *paníco*, (a sort of stuff) *botíca*; except *mecánico*, *ecuménico*, *crítico*, *político*, *pânico*, (panic), and some others borrowed from the Greek and Latin. In *Iço*, *íça*, &c. as, *rolíço*, *preguíça*, *velhíce*, *marído*, *medída*; except *húmido*, *pállido*, *hórrido*, and some others derived from the Latin. In *ífo*, *ífa*, &c. as *borrífo*, *alcatífa*, *patífe*.

Words ending in *ígo* and *íga*, are long; as, *amígo*, *amíga*, except, *pródigo*, *pródiga*.

Words ending in *íjo*, and *íja*, are long; as, *afflíjo*, *artemíja*.

Words ending in *ílho*, *ílha*, are long; as, *atílho*, *beatílha*. Others ending in *ílo*, *íla*, as, *gorgomílo*, *perfíla*, *desfíla*.

Words ending in *ímo*, *íma*, have the penultima long; as *optímo*, *cadímo*, *esgríma*, *lastíma*, (when a verb); except *lástima* (when a noun), *Jerónimo*, *pés-simo*, and all the superlatives, *anónimo*, and some others.

Words ending in *ínho*, *ínha*, *íno*, *ína*, *ípo*, *ípa*, *ípe*, have the penultima long; as, *constípo*, *constípa*, *Eurípo*, *acipípe*. Others in *íquo*, *íqua*, *íque*, *íro*, *íra*, *íre*; as, *iníquo*, *iníqua*, *lambíque*, *retíro*, *mentíra*, *suspíre*.

Words ending in *íso*, *ísa*, *ízo*, *íza*, *íto*, *íta*, *ívo*, *íva*, *íxo*, *íxa*, are long in the penultima; as, *avíso*, *camísa*, *juízo*, *ajuíza*, *altívo*, *altíva*, *prolíxo*, *prolíxa*, *apíto*, *cabríto*; except *púlpito*, *vómito*, *decrépito*, *espírito*, *débito*, and some others.

*Rules for such words as make their penultima in o.*

Words ending in *óbo*, *óba*, *óbe*, *óbra*, *óbro*, *óbre*, have their penultima long; as, *lóbo*, *lóba*, *arróba*,



*arrôbe, glôbo, alcôva, ôbro, ôbra, côbre, côbro, dôbro.*

Words ending in *ôcho, ôcha, ôco, ôca, ôço, oça, ôdo, ôda, ôde, ôso, ôsa, ôse*, have the penultima long; as, *agarrôcho, garrôcha, carôcha, biôco*, except *allíloco*) *massarôca, minhôca, almôço, môça*, (a girl) *môça*, or *môssa*, (a notch) *almôço* (when a verb,) *carrôça, lôdo, bôda, bôde, pôde*, (the third person singular of the present indicative of the verb *podêr*), *pôde* (the third person singular of the preterperfect definite of the same verb), *galthôfa, bófe*.

Words ending in *ôfro, ôfra, ôfre*, are long; as, *alcaxôfra, côfre, enxôfre*.

Words ending in *ôgo, ôga, ôgue*, are long; as, *afôgo, affôga, affôgue, desafôgo*, when a verb, and *desafôgo*, when a noun.

Words ending in *ôjo, ôja*, have the penultima long; as, *despôjo*, when a verb, *nôjo, despôjo* when a noun.

Words ending in *ôlo, ôla, ôle*, are long; as, *viôla, gallinhôla, bóla, engôle, miôlo, bôlo, rebôlo, tôlo, cebôla*; except *pérola, frívolo benévolo, malévolo*.

Words ending in *ômo, ôma, ôme*, have the penultima long; as, *merdômo, redôma, fôme*, except *Thomé*.

Words ending in *ônho, ônha, ôno, ôna*, have the penultima long; as, *bisônho, risônha, dôno, atafôna, dôna*; except *altísono*, and *unísono*.

Words ending in *ôpla, ôpo, ôpa, ôpe, ôpro, ôpra, ôpre, ôque*, have the penultima long; as, *manôpla, tôpo, tôpa, galôpe, assôpro*, when a verb, *assôpra, assôpre, assôpro*, when a noun, *botôque*.

Words ending in *ôro, ôra, ôre*, are long in the penultima; as, *penhôro, penhôra, penhôre, chôro* when a noun; *chôro* when a verb; except *bácoro, rémora, pólvora, árvore*.

Words ending in *ôrro, ôrra*, are long; as *socôrro, môrro, cachôrra*; and some others ending in *ôso, ôse, ôsa, ôza, ôza*, as, *primorôso, primorôsa, industriôso, industriôsa, ciôzo, ciôza, descôse*.



Words ending in *ôto, ôta, ôte*, have their penultima long; as *gôto, gôta, bôta, devôto, frôta, capôte, garrôte*.

Words ending in *ôvo, ôva, ôve*, are long in the penultima; as, *ôvo, corcôva, aprôve*.

Words ending in *ôxo, ôxa*, are long in the penultima; as, *rôxo, rôxa, pintarrôxo*.

*Rules for such Words as make their Penultima in u.*

Words ending in *úbo, úba, úbro, úbra, úcho, úcha, úco, úca, úço, úça*, make the penultima long; as, *adúbo, adúba*; except *súccubo, incubo*, and some other; *incúbro, incúbra, machúcho, embúcha, cadúco, cadúca, rebúço, embúça*.

Words ending in *údo, úda, úde, úfo, úfa, úfe, úgo, úga, újo, úja*, have the penultima long; as, *felpúdo, felpúda, almúde, pantúfo, adúfa, adúfe, sanguesúga, caramújo, azambúja*.

Words ending in *úlho, úlha, úlhe, úlo, úla, úle, úmo, úma, úme, únho, únha, únhe*; as, *bagúlho, borbúlha, entúlhe, engúlo, engúla, bulebúle*; except *vocábulo, vestíbulo, ângulo, régulo, opúsculo, trémulo, patíbulo, thiríbulo*, and some others; *consúmo, consúma, cardúme, testemúnho, testemúnha, empúnhe*.

Words ending in *úno, úna, úne, úpo, úpa, úpe, úque, úro, úra, úre*, are long in the penultima; as, *desúno, fortuna, desúne, apúpo, apúpa, apúpe, estúque, madúro, madúra, apúre*.

Words ending in *úso, úsa, úse, úzo, úza, úze, úto, úta, úte, úxo, úxa, úxe*, have the penultima long; as, *parafúso, parafúsa, parafúse, redúzo, redúza, redúze, condúto, labúta, enxúta, labúte*; except *cômputo* when a noun; *repúxo, empúxa, empúxe*; and some others ending in *úvo, úva, úve*; as, *viúco, viúva, enviúve*.

N. B. When the penultima is immediately followed by another vowel, you must make the following observations:



*A* before *e* must be accented with the acute accent, and pronounced accordingly ; as, *sáe*, *cáe* : but before *i* it has no accent.

*A* before *o* must be pronounced and accented thus, *bacalháo* ; but when the relative *o* is added to the third person singular of the present indicative, then *a* has no accent ; as, *áma-o*.

*E* before *a* is accented thus, *baléa* ; and sometimes with the acute, as *assembléa*, *idéa*, and some others ; and sometimes has no accent at all, as in *gávea*, *fêmea*, and some others.

*E* before *o* is exceeding sonorous and long, as in *chapéo*, *coruchéo* ; except *páteo*, *férreo*, *plúmbeo*, *áureo*, *argénteo*.

*I* before *a*, *e*, *o*, is long ; as, *dizía*, *fazía*, *almo-tolia* ; except such as are borrowed from the Latin ; as *néscia*, *comédia*, *féria*, *sciência*, *prudência*, and *sá-bia* when an adjective, &c. *I* before *o* and *e*, is long ; as, *desvíe*, *desvío* ; except *vício* and some others.

*O* before *a* is accented thus, *coróá*, *tóá*, *móá*, *esmóá*.

*O* before *e* is long in the words *dóe*, *móe*, *róe*, and in the verb *sóe* when it signifies *to be wont* ; but when it signifies *to sound*, it is to be accented thus, *sóe*.

*U* before *a* is long ; as *rúa*, *charrúa* ; except *melliflua*, *ínsua*.

*U* before *e* and *o* is long ; as, *conclúo*, *recúo*, *con-clúe*, *recúe* ; except *melliflúo*, and some others derived from the Latin.



## CHAP. IX.

*Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin.*

THE Portuguese retains so great an affinity to the Latin, that several words of the latter are preserved in the former, by only allowing a small alteration; as may easily be seen in the following observations.

1. The *o* of the Latin words is preserved in some Portuguese ones; nay, some Latin words are entirely preserved in the Portuguese; as, *hóspede, córda, pórtá, &c.*

2. The *u* is changed into *o*; as, *fórca, golóso, estópa, mósca, amámos, &c.* from *furca, gulosus, stupa, musca, amamus, &c.*

3. The diphthong, *au*, is frequently changed into *ou*; as, *louvável, buro, cóuve, móuro, &c.* from *laudabilis, aurum, caulis, maurus, &c.*

4. The *e* is preserved in several Portuguese words; as, *cérto, sérvoo, érrva, térra, férro, &c.* from *certus, servus, herba, terra, ferrum, &c.*

5. The *e* takes the place of *i*; as, *enfêrmo, séco, &c.* from *infirmus, sicus, &c.*; and the *i* is sometimes preserved, as in *indígnno, benígnno, &c.* from *indignus, benignus, &c.*

6. The *b* is also changed into *v*; as, *árvore, duvidár, devêr, estáva, amáva, &c.* from *arbor, dubitare, debere, stabat, amabat, &c.*

7. The *c* is very often changed into *g*; as, *dígo, agúdo, amígo, migálha, &c.* from *dico, acutus, amicus, amica, &c.*

8. *Cl* is changed into *ch*; as, *chamar, chave, &c.* from *clamare, clavis, &c.*

9. When the *c* in Latin is followed by *t*, this letter is changed into *ç*; as, *acção, dicção, &c.* from *actio, dictio, &c.*; and sometimes the *e* before *t* is



changed into *i*; as, *fêito, lêito, nôite, lêite, péito, &c.* from *factus, lectum, nocte, lacte, pectus, &c.* Finally, both the *c* and *t* are preserved in a great number of words; as, *ácto, afflícto, distíncto, &c.* from *actus, afflictus, distinctus, &c.*

10. The *d* is several times lost; as, *roér, excluir, ráio, &c.* from *rodere, excludere, radius, &c.*

11. The *f* is frequently preserved; as in *fílho, fazér, fervór, formôso, &c.* from *filius, facere, fervor, formosus, &c.*

12. The *g* is changed into *i*; as, *réino*, from *regnum*. Sometimes it is quite lost, as in *dêdo, frio, sétta, sinál, bainha, &c.* from *digitus, frigus, sagitta, signum, vagina, &c.*

13. The *h* is placed instead of the *l*; as, *álho*, from *allium*. Sometimes it is added; as, *artílho, alhéo, fólha, consélho, &c.* from *articulus, alienus, folium, consilium, &c.*

14. The *n* is sometimes added, and sometimes taken off; as, *máncha, ilha, Salitre, espôso*, from *macula, insula, sal nitrum, sponsus, &c.*

15. The *mn* is preserved by many Portuguese writers in the words *alúmno, calúmnia, colúmna, damno, solémne, sômno*, from *alumnus, calumnia, columna, damnum, &c.*

16. The double *nn* of the Latin is preserved in several words; as in *ánno, innocência, innócuo, innavigável, innovár, connéio, &c.* from *annus, innocentia, innocuus, innavigabilis, innovare, connexus, &c.*

17. The *gn* and *gm* are preserved in several Portuguese words; as in *augmênto, fragmênto, enígma, benígno, dígno, indígno, ignomínia, &c.* from *augmentum, fragmentum, ænigma, benignus, dignus, &c.*

18. The *e* and the *i* after *n* are sometimes changed into *h*; as in *aránha, vínha, Hespánha, castánha, &c.* from *aranea, vinea, Hispania, castanea, &c.*

19. The *p* is changed into *b*; as in *cábra, cabéllo, cabeça, &c.* from *capra, capillus, caput, &c.*



Sometimes *pl* is changed into *ch* ; as, *chága*, *chóro*, *chúva*, &c. from *plaga*, *ploro*, *pluvia*, &c.

20. The *q* is changed into *g* ; as, *iguál*, *alguém*, *antigo*, *ágoa*, *águia*, &c. from *equus*, *aliquis*, *antiquus*, *aqua*, *aquila*, &c.

21. The *t* is likewise changed into *d* ; as, *ca-dêa*, *fádo*, *lâdo*, *nadár*, *piedáde*, &c. from *catena*, *fatum*, *latus*, *natare*, *pietas*, &c. The *ti* of the Latin is sometimes changed into *ça*, and sometimes into *ci* ; as in *gráça*, *clemência*, *paciência*, &c. from *gratía*, *clementia*, *patientia*, &c.

N. B. All these alterations are not general in all the words but are used in several ; and on some occasions the Latin word is preserved without any mutilation or variation. And as it would be endless to pretend to shew all the affinity between the Portuguese and the Latin, I shall only observe, that they sometimes add, and sometimes take off letters from the Latin roots ; as in *fácil*, *débil*, *finál*, *materiál*, *estrépito*, *estômago*, *expectadôr*, *especulár*, &c. from *facilis*, *debilis*, *finalis*, *strepitus*, *spectator*, &c.

---

END OF THE SECOND PART.



---

A NEW

PORTUGUESE

GRAMMAR.

---

PART III.

CONTAINING

- I. *The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language.*
  - II. *Such Words as are most used in Discourse.*
  - III. *A Collection of the Choicest Portuguese Proverbs.*
  - IV. *Familiar Dialogues.*
- 

*The different Significations of andár, to go.*

**A**NDAR a pé,  
 Andár a cavállo,  
 Andár pélla pósta,  
 Andár em côche,  
 Andár á vèla,  
 Andár pélla bolina,  
 Andár pára diãte,  
 Andár para trás,  
 Andár a trás de alguém,

**T**O go on foot.  
 To ride on horseback.  
 To ride, or go post.  
 To ride in a coach.  
 To sail.  
 To sail with a side wind.  
 To go forward.  
 To go backward.  
 To go behind, or after one  
 also to follow, to press, to  
 solicit a person.



|                                       |                                                                                                                                  |
|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Andár ás apalpadéllas,</i>         | To grope along, to grope, <i>or</i> feel one's way.                                                                              |
| <i>Andár com tẽmpo,</i>               | To go according to the times.                                                                                                    |
| <i>Andár pejáda,</i>                  | To be with child, <i>or</i> big with child.                                                                                      |
| <i>Andár sahída,</i>                  | ( <i>speaking of a bitch</i> ) To be proud.                                                                                      |
| <i>Andár perdido,</i>                 | To go astray.                                                                                                                    |
| <i>Andár de pé,</i>                   | To be sickish, <i>but not bed-ridden</i> .                                                                                       |
| <i>Andár com hõnra,</i>               | To act like an honest man.                                                                                                       |
| <i>A'nda,</i>                         | Go.                                                                                                                              |
| <i>A'nda para diãte,</i>              | Go on.                                                                                                                           |
| <i>Andár de esguélha,</i>             | To go sideling.                                                                                                                  |
| <i>Andár de mal para peór,</i>        | To fall out of the frying-pan into the fire.                                                                                     |
| <i>Andár de réixa com alguẽm,</i>     | To bear one a grudge, to have a spleen against him, to owe him a spite.                                                          |
| <i>Com o andár do tẽmpo,</i>          | At long run.                                                                                                                     |
| <i>Andár de galópe,</i>               | To gallop.                                                                                                                       |
| <i>Andár em córpo,</i>                | To be in cuerpo, <i>or</i> to be without the upper coat or cloak, so as to discover the true shape of the <i>cuerpo</i> or body. |
| <i>A'nda o múnido as avéssas,</i>     | The world is come about.                                                                                                         |
| <i>Andár espalhádos,</i>              | To lie about.                                                                                                                    |
| <i>Andár trabalhãdo nalgúma óbra,</i> | To be about some piece of work.                                                                                                  |
| <i>Andár de gatínhas,</i>             | To go crawling.                                                                                                                  |
| <i>Andár de cócoras,</i>              | To go on one's breech.                                                                                                           |
| <i>Andár dizẽdo,</i>                  | To publish <i>or</i> report.                                                                                                     |

*The different Significations of dar and dar-se.*

|                                           |                                                                                          |
|-------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Dar,</i>                               | To give, to strike.                                                                      |
| <i>Dar a entendêr,</i>                    | To make one believe.                                                                     |
| <i>Dar fé,</i>                            | To credit, to believe, <i>also</i> to perceive, to descry, to take notice, to smell out. |
| <i>Dar or vendêr fiádo,</i>               | To sell upon credit.                                                                     |
| <i>Dar á luz,</i>                         | To publish.                                                                              |
| <i>Dar senhoria,</i>                      | To give the treatment of Lordship.                                                       |
| <i>Dar tu, or fallár a alguẽm por tu,</i> | To thee and thou one.                                                                    |



|                                                              |                                                                                                |
|--------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Dar-se, a partido, or lançar-se no partido de alguém,</i> | To side with one, to be for him.                                                               |
| <i>Dár palavra,</i>                                          | To promise.                                                                                    |
| <i>Dar húma sálva,</i>                                       | To give a volley of shot, or to make a discharge of guns in honour of some persons of quality. |
| <i>Dar fiadôr,</i>                                           | To bail.                                                                                       |
| <i>Dar princípio, or fim,</i>                                | To begin, or end.                                                                              |
| <i>Dar cõta,</i>                                             | To give an account.                                                                            |
| <i>Dar-se ao estudo,</i>                                     | To apply one's self to study.                                                                  |
| <i>Dar em que fallár,</i>                                    | To make one speak, to give an occasion to be talked of.                                        |
| <i>Dar entrada,</i>                                          | To give access to.                                                                             |
| <i>Dar cáusa,</i>                                            | To give cause.                                                                                 |
| <i>Dar em que entendêr,</i>                                  | To vex one sadly, to trouble one.                                                              |
| <i>Dar de bebêr,</i>                                         | To give drink.                                                                                 |
| <i>Dar côuces,</i>                                           | To kick.                                                                                       |
| <i>Dar hum coscorrão,</i>                                    | To give a box on the ear.                                                                      |
| <i>Dar pancádas,</i>                                         | To beat with a cudgel.                                                                         |
| <i>Dar múrros,</i>                                           | To cuff.                                                                                       |
| <i>Dar murrádas,</i>                                         | To butt, as rams do.                                                                           |
| <i>Dar o fáro a alguém de alguma cõsa,</i>                   | To smell out a matter.                                                                         |
| <i>Dar húma estocáda,</i>                                    | To give a thrust.                                                                              |
| <i>Dar os bons días,</i>                                     | To bid one good-morrow.                                                                        |
| <i>Dar a guardár,</i>                                        | To give in keeping.                                                                            |
| <i>Dar á cósta,</i>                                          | To run a-ground.                                                                               |
| <i>Dar com alguém,</i>                                       | To meet with one by chance, to light upon a person.                                            |
| <i>Dar em alguém,</i>                                        | To strike one, also to accuse one.                                                             |
| <i>Dar cártas,</i>                                           | To deal, or give the cards.                                                                    |
| <i>Dar sobre o inimigo,</i>                                  | To fall upon the enemy.                                                                        |
| <i>Dar os parabêns,</i>                                      | To congratulate.                                                                               |
| <i>Dar os parabêns a alguém da sua chegáda,</i>              | To bid one welcome.                                                                            |
| <i>Dar a mão ajudâdo,</i>                                    | To give a helping hand.                                                                        |
| <i>Dar a escolhêr,</i>                                       | To let one take his choice.                                                                    |
| <i>Dar enfádo a alguém,</i>                                  | To molest one.                                                                                 |
| <i>Dar no álvo,</i>                                          | To hit the mark.                                                                               |
| <i>Dar as cóstas,</i>                                        | To run away, to betake one's self to flight.                                                   |
| <i>Dar parte de hum negócio,</i>                             | To impart a business.                                                                          |



|                                                                      |                                                                   |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Dar pello amor de Déos,</i>                                       | To give for God's sake.                                           |
| <i>Dar húma súrra,</i>                                               | To beat one soundly.                                              |
| <i>Dar húma vólta em redôndo,</i>                                    | To walk a turn.                                                   |
| <i>Dar húma vista de ólhos,</i>                                      | To cast an eye on.                                                |
| <i>Dar alcânçe ao que se dezêja,</i>                                 | To obtain, or compass one's wish.                                 |
| <i>Dar suspiros,</i>                                                 | To sigh.                                                          |
| <i>Dar ouvidos,</i>                                                  | To give hearing.                                                  |
| <i>Dar em rôsto,</i>                                                 | To upbraid, to cast in the teeth.                                 |
| <i>Dá cá,</i>                                                        | Give hither.                                                      |
| <i>Dêu-me húma dôr,</i>                                              | I was taken with a pain.                                          |
| <i>Dar que fazer a alguém, or</i><br><i>occupâr alguém,</i>          | To employ one, to set him at work, to set him upon some business. |
| <i>Dar horas,</i>                                                    | To strike.                                                        |
| <i>O relógio dá horas,</i>                                           | The clock strikes.                                                |
| <i>Dar a alma a Déos,</i>                                            | To give up the ghost, to die.                                     |
| <i>Dar comsigo em alguma</i><br><i>parte,</i>                        | To cast one's self into a place,<br>or to go to a place.          |
| <i>Dar leite,</i>                                                    | To suckle.                                                        |
| <i>Dar garrête,</i>                                                  | To strangle.                                                      |
| <i>Dar vózes,</i>                                                    | To cry out, to bawl.                                              |
| <i>O sol dá nos ólhos,</i>                                           | The sun shines in one's eyes.                                     |
| <i>Dar razões,</i>                                                   | To debate, or contend.                                            |
| <i>Dar comsigo no chão,</i>                                          | To fall upon the ground.                                          |
| <i>Dar frúto,</i>                                                    | To bear fruit.                                                    |
| <i>Dar as mãos,</i>                                                  | To shake hands.                                                   |
| <i>Dar com a pórtã na cara de</i><br><i>alguém,</i>                  | To shut the door upon one.                                        |
| <i>Dar com a pórtã nos ólhos a</i><br><i>alguma coisa, (metaph.)</i> | To slight, to despise a thing.                                    |
| <i>Dar préssa,</i>                                                   | To press, or hasten.                                              |
| <i>Dar trégoas, (metaph.)</i>                                        | To respite, to give some respite.                                 |
| <i>E'sta travessa vai dar á rua</i><br><i>larga,</i>                 | This lane strikes, or goes into<br>the broad street.              |
| <i>Dêi no pensamento de, &amp;c.</i>                                 | It came into my head to, &c.                                      |
| <i>Quem me déra estar em casa!</i>                                   | How fain would I be at home!                                      |
| <i>Naõ sabe aõnde ha de dar</i><br><i>com a cabeça.</i>              | He does not know which<br>way to turn himself.                    |
| <i>Isto vos ha de dar na cabeça,</i>                                 | The mischief will light upon<br>your own head.                    |
| <i>Dar com a cabeça pellas pa-</i><br><i>rêdes,</i>                  | To beat one's head against<br>the wall.                           |



|                                                            |                                                                                                  |
|------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Dar em tôdos, or dizer mal de tôdos,</i>                | To have a satirical virulent tongue, to spare nobody.                                            |
| <i>Dar boa conta de si,</i>                                | To give a good account of himself, to behave cleverly.                                           |
| <i>Dar á conta,</i>                                        | To pay an account.                                                                               |
| <i>Eu darei conta disso,</i>                               | I'll be answerable for it.                                                                       |
| <i>Elle deu em ir áquélle lugar,</i>                       | He began to use that place.                                                                      |
| <i>Dar em dróga,</i>                                       | To grow a very drug.                                                                             |
| <i>Dar em ridicularías,</i>                                | To grow, or become ridiculous.                                                                   |
| <i>Dar húma figa a alguém,</i>                             | To flirt at one, to fig, to give the fico.                                                       |
| <i>Dar-se por culpádo,</i>                                 | To acknowledge one's self guilty.                                                                |
| <i>De nenhuma sorte vos deis por entendído, or achádo,</i> | Take no notice of any thing.                                                                     |
| <i>Dar-se por aggravádo,</i>                               | To make a shew of anger.                                                                         |
| <i>Dar-se por satisfeito,</i>                              | To rest satisfied.                                                                               |
| <i>Dar-se por vencído,</i>                                 | To submit, to surrender one's self a prisoner, or to yield a point.                              |
| <i>Dar-se por desentendído,</i>                            | To feign one's self ignorant, to take no notice of any thing, to make as if one saw or knew not. |
| <i>Quando se dêr a occasiãõ,</i>                           | When occasion shall require it                                                                   |
| <i>Dar-se prêssa,</i>                                      | To be in haste, to make haste.                                                                   |
| <i>Elle deu-se a tôda a sôrte de vícios,</i>               | He gave himself over to all manner of vices.                                                     |
| <i>Não se me dá disso,</i>                                 | I mind it not.                                                                                   |
| <i>Que se vos dá a vós disso?</i>                          | What have you to do with it?                                                                     |
| <i>Pouco se me dá,</i>                                     | I care but little.                                                                               |
| <i>Não se lhe dá morrêr,</i>                               | He does not fear death.                                                                          |
| <i>Elles daõ-se muito bem,</i>                             | They agree mighty well together.                                                                 |
| <i>Esta carne não se dá bem comigo,</i>                    | This meat does not agree with me.                                                                |

### *Of the different Significations of the Verb estar.*

We use the verb *estar* to make an action of repose, by putting the verb that follows in the gerund; as, *élle está escrevêdo*, he is writing.

*Estar* has several other significations; as,



*Estár em pé,  
Estár bem, ou mal,  
Estár assentádo,  
Estár para sahír, para fóra,  
Estár com o sentido em Frân-  
ça, or estár com o sentido  
em outra páрте,*

*Está muito bem,  
Está para chovér,  
Estár para cahír,  
Estár para morrér,  
Estár em dúvida,  
Estarêmos a vêr,  
Estár com huma mão sóbre a  
óutra,*

*Estár em cása,  
Isto vos está bem,  
Aquilo não me está bem,*

*Estár dormíndo,  
Estár fazêndo,  
Estár de nójo,  
Estár álerta,  
Estár de sentinélla,  
Está alegre,  
E'lle está cómo quer,  
Estár em perigo,  
Estár encostádo,  
Estár esperándo,  
Estár muito têmpo,  
Estár caládo,  
Estár ou vivér com óutros,  
Estár de cima,  
Estár debáxo,  
Estár bem aviádo,  
Estár á espéra,  
Estár enamorado,  
Estár na câma,  
Estár de câma,  
Estár no câmpo,  
Estár com saúde, or de saúde,  
Estár quiêto,  
Estár neutrál,  
Estarêi por túdo o que vos  
parecér máis conveniênte,*

To stand upright.  
To be well, or ill.  
To be sitting.  
To be just going out.  
To have one's wits a wool-  
gathering.

It is well, it is very well.

It is going to rain.

To be ready to fall.

To be like to die.

To be in doubt.

We will expect the issue.

To stand idle.

To stay at home.

This becomes you very well.

That does not become me  
well.

To lie sleeping.

To be a doing.

To be in mourning.

To look heedfully about.

To stand centry.

To be merry.

He lives in clover.

To be in danger.

To lean upon.

To expect.

To stay a good while.

To be silent.

To dwell with others.

To lie over.

To lie under.

To be in an ill taking.

To lie in wait.

To be in love.

To be a-bed.

To be bed-rid.

To live in the country.

To be in health.

To stand still, or to be quiet.

To stand neuter.

I shall stand to whatever you  
shall think proper.



*A difficuldáde está em, &c.  
Estár por alguém,*

The difficulty consists in, &c.  
To stand for one, to be of his side.

*Estár por, or em lugar de, &c.  
E'lle estava na altúra do Cá-  
bo de Boa Esperança,  
Eu não quero estár ás razoes*

To stand for, or signify.  
He stood off the Cape of Good Hope.

*com vósco,  
Está quanto quizeres,  
Aonde estais de casa?  
Estaréi pello que dissêr a pes-  
soa que fôr de vósso mayor*

I won't stand, or dispute, with you.

*agrado,  
Não podemos estár por isso,  
Não quero estár pella vossa*

Stay as long as you please.

Where do you live?

I'll refer it to whom you please.

*sentença,  
Como está vm<sup>ca</sup>?*

We can't stand to that.

I won't take your judgment.

How do you do, sir?

*Estár*, joined with the infinitive of a verb and the particle *para*, signifies to be ready, or about doing a thing, which has always reference to the signification of the verb; as,

*Estôu para ir,  
Estôu para comprár hum ca-  
vállo,*

I am going, I am ready to go.  
I am about buying a horse.

*Estôu para cazárme,  
E'sta casa está para cahír,  
Estôu para dizêr,  
Não está no meu poder,  
Estár com a boca abérta (me-  
taph.)*

I am going to be married.  
This house is ready to fall.  
I dare say.

It is not in my power.

To stare, to look, to hearken attentively.

*Estár de regimêto,  
Estár fiádo em alguém,*

To keep to a diet.

To trust to, to rely or depend upon one.

*Estár no fúndo,  
Estár de frônte,  
Estár em competêcia,  
Estár ao lume,  
Estár de lônge,  
Estár ao ar,  
Estár álto,*

To lie at the bottom.

To lie over-against.

To stand in competition.

To stand by the fire.

To stand at a distance.

To stand in the air.

To stand high, or in a high place.

*Estár á mão dirêita de al-  
guém.*

To be at one's right hand, to have the first place.



|                                                |                                                           |
|------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Elle esteve em perigo de afogar-se,</i>     | He was like to be drowned.                                |
| <i>Não estar no caso de, &amp;c.</i>           | Not to be able, or in the case of, &c.                    |
| <i>Estar a ordem de alguém,</i>                | To be at one's disposal.                                  |
| <i>Isso não está nos termos,</i>               | That is not right, it won't do.                           |
| <i>Não estou no caso,</i>                      | I don't understand the case.                              |
| <i>Estar ás razões,</i>                        | To contend, to strive, or quarrel.                        |
| <i>Estar bem com alguém,</i>                   | To be in favour with one, to live in friendship with him. |
| <i>Estar bem,</i>                              | To be well, to be at one's ease.                          |
| <i>Bem aviado estaria eu, se, &amp;c.</i>      | It would be very bad for me, indeed, if, &c.              |
| <i>Estar em conceito de homem honrado,</i>     | To be looked upon as an honest man.                       |
| <i>Estar na fé,</i>                            | To believe, to think, or suppose.                         |
| <i>Estar de posse,</i>                         | To possess, to have the possession of a thing.            |
| <i>Deixai estar isso,</i>                      | Let that alone.                                           |
| <i>Estar em si,</i>                            | To be in one's right wits.                                |
| <i>Estar fora de si,</i>                       | To be out of one's wits.                                  |
| <i>Deixavos estar (a sort of threatening.)</i> | I'll be revenged on you, you shall pay for it.            |

We have already observed the difference between *sêr* and *estar*. See page 55.

*Of the different Signification of fazer and fazer se.*

*Fazer* signifies *to do, to make, to create*; also *to form of materials*; also *to feign, to seem, to make as if*.

|                                           |                                                               |
|-------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Elle fez que não o via,</i>            | He made as if he did not see it.                              |
| <i>Fazer huma saúde,</i>                  | To drink, or to toast a health.                               |
| <i>E'le lhe fez cortar a cabeça,</i>      | He caused his head to be cut off.                             |
| <i>Fazer pé atrás (metaph.)</i>           | To fall, or draw back, to give ground; also yield, to submit. |
| <i>Que têndes vós que fazer com isto.</i> | What have you to do with it? or what is that to you?          |



|                                                         |                                                                                                    |
|---------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Fazêr brío de algúma côusa,</i>                      | To make a pride of a thing,<br>to take glory in it.                                                |
| <i>Fazêr fim ao dezêjo,</i>                             | To satisfy one's desire, <i>or</i><br>longing.                                                     |
| <i>Fazêr por algúma côusa,</i>                          | To take pains, to endeavour,<br>to labour to a certain pur-<br>pose, to work for a certain<br>end. |
| <i>Fáço por isso,</i>                                   | I endeavour after it.                                                                              |
| <i>Fazêr ao negócio, or ao caso,</i>                    | To come to the purpose.                                                                            |
| <i>Fazêr esmólas,</i>                                   | To give alms.                                                                                      |
| <i>Fazêr gásto,</i>                                     | To spend.                                                                                          |
| <i>Fazêr gôsto,</i>                                     | To like, to be pleased with.                                                                       |
| <i>Fazêr o gôsto, or a vontade</i><br><i>a alguém,</i>  | To please one, to comply<br>with one's desire.                                                     |
| <i>Fazêr parallêlo,</i>                                 | To parallel, to compare.                                                                           |
| <i>Fazêr de comêr,</i>                                  | To cook.                                                                                           |
| <i>Fazêr fúmo,</i>                                      | To smoak.                                                                                          |
| <i>Fazêr auzênte a alguém,</i>                          | To believe one absent.                                                                             |
| <i>Faz frio,</i>                                        | It is cold.                                                                                        |
| <i>Fazêr gênte,</i>                                     | To raise men, soldiers.                                                                            |
| <i>Fazêr em pedáços,</i>                                | To pull into pieces.                                                                               |
| <i>Fazêr zombaria de alguém,</i>                        | To mock, or to laugh at a<br>person.                                                               |
| <i>Naõ façáis caso disso,</i>                           | Do not mind that.                                                                                  |
| <i>Fazêr agoáda,</i>                                    | To take in fresh water.                                                                            |
| <i>Isto me faz vir a ágoa á bó-</i><br><i>ca,</i>       | This makes my teeth, <i>or</i><br>mouth, water.                                                    |
| <i>Fazêr álto,</i>                                      | To halt in a march.                                                                                |
| <i>Fazêr cása (in playing at</i><br><i>backgammon.)</i> | To put two men on the same<br>point.                                                               |
| <i>Fazêr a cea,</i>                                     | To get supper ready.                                                                               |
| <i>Fazêr caras,</i>                                     | To make mouths.                                                                                    |
| <i>Fazêr enrêdos,</i>                                   | To form a secret design<br>against another.                                                        |
| <i>Fazêr carrâncas,</i>                                 | To pout.                                                                                           |
| <i>Fazêr caso,</i>                                      | To make account of, <i>or</i><br>esteem.                                                           |
| <i>Fazêr de tripas coração,</i>                         | To make one's utmost efforts.                                                                      |
| <i>Fazêr muito caso de algúma</i><br><i>côusa,</i>      | To make great account of a<br>thing, to make much of it.                                           |
| <i>Naõ fáço caso d'elle,</i>                            | I don't mind him.                                                                                  |
| <i>Fazêr festa,</i>                                     | To endear, to fondle.                                                                              |
| <i>Fazêr húma festa,</i>                                | To give an entertainment, to<br>feast.                                                             |



|                                                  |                                                   |
|--------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Fazêr às vêzes de alguêm,</i>                 | To make any business for another.                 |
| <i>Fazêr trapáças,</i>                           | To chicanery, to cavil, to use tricks.            |
| <i>Fazêr lugar,</i>                              | To make room.                                     |
| <i>Fazêr mercê,</i>                              | To grant a favour.                                |
| <i>Fazêr ouvidos de mercadôr,</i>                | To make as if one were deaf.                      |
| <i>Têr que fazêr,</i>                            | To be busy.                                       |
| <i>Fazêr exercício,</i>                          | To use exercise.                                  |
| <i>Fazêr exercício (a military word.)</i>        | To exercise.                                      |
| <i>Os soldádos estão fazêndo exercício,</i>      | The soldiers exercise.                            |
| <i>Que fazêis aquí?</i>                          | What make you here?                               |
| <i>Fazêr hum vestído,</i>                        | To make a suit of clothes.                        |
| <i>Fazêr húma lêy, hum discursô,</i>             | To make a law, a speech.                          |
| <i>Fazêr guérrea,</i>                            | To make war.                                      |
| <i>Fazêr sabêr algúma côusa a alguêm,</i>        | To make one acquainted with a thing.              |
| <i>Fazêr enraivecêr alguêm,</i>                  | To make one mad.                                  |
| <i>Fazêr húma cônta,</i>                         | To cast up an account.                            |
| <i>Fazêr cônta,</i>                              | To intend, or to propose.                         |
| <i>Elle fazia húma cônta, e sahio-lhe outra,</i> | He was much disappointed.                         |
| <i>Fazêr contas com alguêm,</i>                  | To settle the accounts with one.                  |
| <i>Isso não me faz náda,</i>                     | It makes nothing to me, that does not concern me. |
| <i>Fazêr páusa,</i>                              | To make a stand.                                  |
| <i>Fazêr de alguêm tôlo,</i>                     | To make a fool of one.                            |
| <i>Fazêr dinhéiro de algúma côusa,</i>           | To make money of a thing, to sell it.             |
| <i>Tornár a fazêr,</i>                           | To make again.                                    |
| <i>Fazêr a razaõ,</i>                            | To pledge one.                                    |
| <i>Ter que fazêr com alguêm,</i>                 | To deal with one, or to have to do with one.      |
| <i>Fazêr a alguêm hum gilváz na cara,</i>        | To mark one in the face.                          |
| <i>Fazêr hõnra,</i>                              | To honour.                                        |
| <i>Fazêr fé,</i>                                 | To make known, to testify, to witness.            |
| <i>Fazêr fôrte,</i>                              | To fortify, or strengthen.                        |



|                                                                                 |                                                                               |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Fazér menção,</i>                                                            | To mention.                                                                   |
| <i>Fazér mal,</i>                                                               | To hurt.                                                                      |
| <i>Fazér de alguém o que húma<br/>pessoa quer,</i>                              | To dispose of one.                                                            |
| <i>Fazér húma apósta,</i>                                                       | To lay a wager.                                                               |
| <i>Faz vento,</i>                                                               | The wind blows.                                                               |
| <i>Faz hoje óuto dias,</i>                                                      | This day se'nnight, <i>or</i> a week<br>ago.                                  |
| <i>Fazér vida com alguém,</i>                                                   | To cohabit, <i>or</i> dwell together.                                         |
| <i>Fazér a sua vontade,</i>                                                     | To do as one pleases.                                                         |
| <i>Fazér o possível,</i>                                                        | To do one's best, <i>or</i> endea-<br>vour, to do one's utmost.               |
| <i>Naõ faréis náda com isso,</i>                                                | You will do no good in it.                                                    |
| <i>Naõ façáis máis assim,</i>                                                   | Do so no more.                                                                |
| <i>Se tornárdes a fazer assim,</i>                                              | If ever you do so again.                                                      |
| <i>Dezêjo que faça a sua fortuna,</i>                                           | I wish he may do well.                                                        |
| <i>Custou-me muito a fazêllo vir,</i>                                           | I had much to do to get him<br>to come.                                       |
| <i>Fazér a óutremo o que quizerá-<br/>mos que óutrem nos fizesse<br/>a nós,</i> | To do by others as you would<br>be done by.                                   |
| <i>Naõ ténho que fazer com isso,</i>                                            | I have nothing to do with it.                                                 |
| <i>Fazér o que alguém manda,</i>                                                | To do as one is bid.                                                          |
| <i>Faz de mim o que vos pa-<br/>recer,</i>                                      | Do with me as you shall think<br>fit.                                         |
| <i>Fazér hum grande estrôndo,</i>                                               | To make a great noise.                                                        |
| <i>E'lle fôí o que fez túdo na-<br/>quêlle negócio,</i>                         | He was the do-all in that<br>business.                                        |
| <i>Que faréis hoje?</i>                                                         | What will you do to-day? <i>or</i><br>how do you employ your-<br>self to-day. |
| <i>Fazér o seu curso,</i>                                                       | To finish its course as a star<br>does.                                       |
| <i>Fazér húma boa casa,</i>                                                     | To raise, to set up one's family.                                             |
| <i>Fazér a bárba,</i>                                                           | To shave.                                                                     |
| <i>Fazér a cama,</i>                                                            | To make the bed.                                                              |
| <i>Naõ sei que lhe fazer,</i>                                                   | I can't help it.                                                              |
| <i>Fazér grande negócio,</i>                                                    | To drive a great trade.                                                       |
| <i>Fazér o seu offício,</i>                                                     | To exercise, <i>or</i> discharge.                                             |
| <i>Fazér profissão,</i>                                                         | To profess.                                                                   |
| <i>Tódos o fazião morto,</i>                                                    | They gave out that he was<br>dead.                                            |
| <i>Fazér vir,</i>                                                               | To call, <i>or</i> send for.                                                  |



*Fazêr entrár, ou sahír al-  
guêm,*

*I'sto não faz náda,*

*Naõ séi que fazêr disso,*

*Ja não ténho que fazêr com elle*

*Fazêr hum livro,*

*Fazêr amizâde com alguêm,*

*Fazêr exêmplo em alguêm, or  
castigállo para dar exêmplo,*

*Fazêr húma cõusa mûito ao  
desentendído,*

*Fazêr das súas,*

*E'lle sempre está fazêndo das  
súas,*

*Fazêr fôscas,*

*Fazêr de pessoa,*

*Fazêr jurár alguêm,*

*Fazêr saltár, or voár pèllos  
áres,*

*Fazêr boa vezinhança,*

*Fazêr lenha,*

*Fazêr a rônâ,*

*Fazêr dívidas,*

*Fáz lua,*

*Fazêr violência,*

*Fazêr-se ao trabálho,*

*Fazêr-se tólo,*

*Fazêr-se vélho,*

*Fazêr-se feio,*

*Fazêr-se sobérbo,*

*Faz-se târde,*

To call in, *or* out, to bid one  
come in, *or* out.

It is no matter.

I have no need of it.

I have done with him.

To write a book.

To make friendship, to get  
into friendship with one.

To make one a public ex-  
ample.

To do a thing very covertly,  
so that people can't appre-  
hend that it is done on set  
purpose, and with a design.

To play the fool, to dodge,  
to play tricks.

He is always playing his fool-  
ish tricks.

To bully, to provoke, to ex-  
cite by words, or actions of  
contempt; also to elude, or  
deceive by false shew.

To behave courageously.

To tender the oaths to one,  
to put one to his oaths.

To blow up.

To keep fair with one's  
neighbours.

To fell wood.

To walk the rounds.

To run in debt, to contract  
debts,

The moon shines.

To offer violence.

To inure one's self to hard-  
ships.

To play the ninny.

To grow old, *or* to grow in  
years.

To grow ugly.

To grow proud.

It grows late.



*Fazêr-se* signifies also *to feign, to pretend, to seem, make as if.*

*Faz-se* môuco,

He won't hear.

*The different Significations of têr and têr-se.*

*Ter que fazêr,*

To be busy.

*Ter ódio,*

To hate.

*Ter por costúme,*

To be wont.

*Ter alguém por ignorânte,*

To believe one ignorant.

*Ter cuidádo de,*

To be careful of.

*Ter cuidádos,*

To be full of care, or thoughtful.

*Ter fastío,*

To loath, to see food with dislike.

*Ter ânimo,*

To have courage.

*Ter boa fama,*

To be well spoken of.

*Ter cara d'aço,*

To have a brazen face.

*Ter necessidade,*

To be in want.

*Ter pressa,*

To be in haste.

*Ter muitos fúmos,*

To be very proud.

*Ter grande presumpção,*

To presume much on one's self.

*Ter razão,*

To be in the right.

*Naõ têr razão,*

To be in the wrong.

*Ter alguma coisa debáxo da  
língua,*

To have a thing at one's  
tongue's end.

*Ter alguma coisa na ponta da lingua,* we say, to have a thing at one's fingers ends, to have it perfect. They also say, *sabêr alguma coisa nas pontas dos dedos,* which exactly answers to our English phrase.

*Ter feições feiticêiras,*

To have a taking look.

*Ter má fama,*

To be ill spoken of.

*Ter ciúmes,*

To be jealous of.

*Ter méyos,*

To be able, or have means.

*Ter no pensamêto,*

To bear in mind.

*Ter obrigação,*

To be obliged.

*Ter medo,*

To be fearful.

*Ter razão, e máis que razão,*

To have reason, to spare.



*Que têndes vós com isso?  
Ter carruagem e criados,  
Ter a alguém suspenso,  
Hómen que tem boa feição,*

*Ter méssa franca,*

*Ter frio,  
Ter as costas quêntes com al-  
guém,  
Ter por bem,  
Ténho-o por dôudo,  
Ter mão na sua resolução,  
Ter com que,  
Não têndes de que vos quei-  
xár,  
Não têndes que, &c.*

*Isto não tem náda que fazer,  
com o que eu digo,  
Ter entre mãos,*

*Ténho isso por certo,  
Ir ter com alguém,  
Vênho ter com um<sup>o</sup> para saber  
cômo pássa a senhóra fullã-  
na,  
Ir ter a algúm lugar,  
Esta rua vái ter ao mercádo,*

*Ter alguém por si,*

*Têmos por nós a authoridade  
dos mais prudentes,  
Ter para si,*

*Ter em muito,  
Ter em pouco,  
Ser tido em boa conta,*

*Ter mão,  
Ter mão nalgúma coisa,*

What is that to you?  
To keep a coach and servants.  
To hold one in suspense.  
A man of good address, a po-  
lite man.

To keep open table, to keep  
a table where a man may  
come without bidding.

To be cold.

To be backed, or supported  
by one.

To approve of, or consent.

I take him to be mad.

To be still in one mind.

To have wherewith.

You have no reason of com-  
plaint.

It is useless, or it will beto no  
purpose for you to, &c.

That is nothing to the pur-  
pose.

To have in hand, or in one's  
possession.

I hold that for a certainty.

To address one's self to one.

I address, or apply myself to  
you to know how miss such  
a one does.

To go to a place.

This street strikes, or goes  
into the market.

To be supported, or protected  
by one.

We have the wisest men of  
our side, or of our opinion.

To think, or imagine, to  
reckon.

To set much by.

To value but little.

To be esteemed, regarded, or  
valued, to be in great  
esteem.

To hold or keep in, to restrain.

To bear up, to support, to  
prop, to keep up, to hold up.



|                                        |                                                                                           |
|----------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Atomos que tem mão huns</i>         | Atoms that stick together,                                                                |
| <i>nos outros,</i>                     |                                                                                           |
| <i>Tenha mão, or tem mão,</i>          | Hold, stop.                                                                               |
| <i>Ter,</i>                            | To contain.                                                                               |
| <i>Ter-se em pé,</i>                   | To stand, to stand up.                                                                    |
| <i>Ter-se bem a cavállo,</i>           | To sit fast, or well, on horse-back.                                                      |
| <i>Ter-se em casa,</i>                 | To keep at home.                                                                          |
| <i>Ter-se com alguém,</i>              | To hold out, to resist, to stand against one, to cope with one, to oppose, or resist him. |
| <i>Naõ me pôsso ter com riso,</i>      | I can't forbear laughing.                                                                 |
| <i>Naõ se pôde ter, que naõ fálle,</i> | He can't forbear speaking.                                                                |

*The different Significations of querêr.*

*Querêr signifies to will, to be willing, and to believe ; as,*

|                                      |                                                             |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Quêrem algúns,</i>                | Some believe.                                               |
| <i>Querêr bem,</i>                   | To love.                                                    |
| <i>Querêr mal,</i>                   | To hate.                                                    |
| <i>A'ntes querêr,</i>                | To have rather.                                             |
| <i>Quêira Déos,</i>                  | God grant it, God send it may be so.                        |
| <i>Mas quero que assim seja,</i>     | I grant it, suppose it were so.                             |
| <i>Que quer dizêraquellehômem?</i>   | What does that man mean?                                    |
| <i>Que quer dizêr isto?</i>          | What means this? what's the meaning of that?                |
| <i>Isto quer dizêr que, &amp;c.</i>  | The meaning is that, &c.                                    |
| <i>E'u quero absolutamênte que,</i>  | I positively resolve that, &c.                              |
| <i>E'u assim o quero,</i>            | I'll have it so.                                            |
| <i>E'lle quer que vós obedecáis,</i> | He will have you obey.                                      |
| <i>Naõ quero,</i>                    | I will not, I won't.                                        |
| <i>E'lle o fará quando quizer,</i>   | He will do it when he pleases, or when he has a mind to it. |
| <i>E'lle quer partir amanhaã,</i>    | He intends, or has a mind, to set out to-morrow.            |
| <i>O mal que eu lhe quero me,</i>    | I wish him no more harm                                     |
| <i>vênha a mim,</i>                  | than I do myself.                                           |

*Havêr, to have.*

|                              |                       |
|------------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>Tu has de hir,</i>        | You must go.          |
| <i>E'lle ha de vir hõje,</i> | He is to come to day. |



|                                                                 |                                                  |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Se eu houver de hir,</i>                                     | If I shall be obliged to go.                     |
| <i>Aindaque isso me houvésse de</i><br><i>custar a vida,</i>    | Though I were to lose my<br>life for't.          |
| <i>E'lle está tódo nú, e ha de têr</i><br><i>muito frio,</i>    | He is all naked, he must<br>needs be very cold.  |
| <i>Havéis vós de estar em casa?</i>                             | Shall you be at home?                            |
| <i>Eu hei de achá-me lá,</i>                                    | I must be there.                                 |
| <i>E'lle ha de sêr enforcádo,</i>                               | He is to be hanged.                              |
| <i>Eu hei de recebêr dinhéiro,</i>                              | I am to receive money.                           |
| <i>Vós he que havéis de jogar,</i>                              | You are to play.                                 |
| <i>Aquillo he que vós havíeis de</i><br><i>fazêr,</i>           | You should do that.                              |
| <i>Havêr por bem,</i>                                           | To take in good part.                            |
| <i>Havêr por mal,</i>                                           | To take in ill part.                             |
| <i>Que ha de ser,</i>                                           | That is to be hereafter:                         |
| <i>Aquillo nunca há-de ser,</i>                                 | That will never be.                              |
| <i>E'u hei de ser a causa da sua</i><br><i>môrte, ou ruína,</i> | I shall be the death, or ruin<br>of him.         |
| <i>Para havêr de fallár, ouvir,</i><br><i>&amp;c.</i>           | In order to speak, hear, &c.                     |
| <i>Que há de sêr de mim?</i>                                    | What is to become of me?                         |
| <i>Havêr filhos,</i>                                            | To beget, to become the fa-<br>ther of children. |
| <i>Livros do déve, e ha de haver,</i>                           | Books of debtor and creditor.                    |
| <i>Havêr mistêr,</i>                                            | To want.                                         |
| <i>Há mistêr apressár-se,</i>                                   | It is necessary to haste, or to<br>make haste.   |

*Havêr*, when impersonal, is rendered into English by the verb *to be*, preceded by *there*; as,

|                                                        |                                            |
|--------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------|
| <i>Há,</i>                                             | There is, or there are.                    |
| <i>Há homens tão malvados,</i>                         | There are men so wicked.                   |
| <i>Havia húma molhér,</i>                              | There was a woman.                         |
| <i>Há algúns bons e outros máos,</i>                   | There are some good, and<br>some bad.      |
| <i>Há muitas casas,</i>                                | There are several houses.                  |
| <i>Há alguma cousa de novo?</i>                        | Is there any news?                         |
| <i>Há mais he húma hora,</i>                           | It is above an hour since.                 |
| <i>Há muito têmpo,</i>                                 | Long since.                                |
| <i>Há pèrto de húma hora que</i><br><i>élle sahio,</i> | It is almost an hour since he<br>went out. |
| <i>Ha hum anno,</i>                                    | A year ago.                                |



*Há ôuto dias,  
Há perto de 20 légoas daqui  
lá,  
Não há,  
E'lle cuida que não há mais  
que purgár,*

Eight days ago.  
It is near upon 20 leagues  
thither.  
There is not.  
He believes that purging is  
all in all, or that purging is  
the only remedy in such a  
case.

*Havér se, v. r.*

To carry, to behave one's  
self.

*E'lle sabe como se há-de ha-  
vêr, or elle sabe como ha-  
de havêr-se,  
Elle hóuve-se de maneira  
que, &c.*

He knows how to behave  
himself.

He behaved himself in such  
a manner that, &c.

N. B. When this verb is used impersonally, it is  
always followed by the particle *de*; as,

*Ha-se de mistér dinheiro,  
Ha-se de fazêr, ou dizêr isto,  
Ha-se de fazêr o que elle qui-  
zêr,*

Money is wanted.  
This must be done, or said.  
People must do what he  
pleases.

*Hir*, a neuter and irregular verb, *to go, to walk,  
to march*; also, *to grow, to reach any estate gra-  
dually, to be going.*

*Hir por már e por terra,  
Como vão os vossos negócios?  
Túdo vái bem,  
As súas cousas vão muito  
mal,  
Hir á máo,*

To travel by sea and land.  
How go your concerns?  
All is well, all goes well.  
Things go very ill (or very  
hard) with him.  
To hinder, to obstruct, to  
obviate.

*Hir passâdo,  
Hir andâdo,*

To grow out of fashion or use.  
To go on or forward, to keep  
or hold on his way; also  
to proceed, to continue  
on, to prosecute.

*Hir andâdo, or passâdo,*

To shift, to pass life not  
quite well, to live though  
with difficulty.

*Que vái de nóvo?  
Que vái nisto? or onde vái  
isto a dar comsigo?*

Is there any thing new?  
What of all this?



*Hir debáxo,*  
*Hir para,*  
*Quanto mais vámos para a*  
*primavéra, mais comprí-*  
*dos são os días,*  
*Hir de mal para peór,*  
*Hir diánte,*  
*Hir por diánte,*  
*Hir ao encôntro,*  
*Hir ao fúndo,*  
*Hir e vir,*

*Naõ fáço máis do que hir e*  
*voltár,*  
*Isso ja lá vái,*  
*Eílo lá vái,*  
*Eílo vái,*  
*Que vos parece daquella mol-*  
*hér? éilo vái, élla naõ he*  
*fêa,*  
*Eílo vái, fólga que assim seja,*  
*Cômo as cõusas agora vaõ,*

*Por que párté ides?*  
*Déos vá comvósco,*

*Hir á róda do múnido,*  
*Hir com alguém,*  
*E'sta travéssa vái ter á rúa*  
*lárge,*  
*E'u o irêi vér de camínho,*

*Hir continuâdo o sêu ca-*  
*minho,*  
*Hir fóra do sêu camínho,*  
*Hir hum de húma bânda, e*  
*óutro da óutra,*  
*Hir para tráx,*  
*Hir detráz,*  
*Hir atráz de alguém,*  
*Hir em alcãce de alguém,*

*Hir buscár,*  
*Hir para dêntro,*  
*Hir para fóra,*

To come by the worst.  
 To approach, to go near.  
 The nearer the spring, the  
 longer the days.

To grow worse and worse.  
 To go before.  
 To go on, or forward.  
 To go to meet.  
 To sink, or fall to the bottom.  
 To go to and fro, to go and  
 come.

I will not stay, I shall be  
 back presently.

'Tis a thing past and done.  
 There he goes.

So, so, pretty well.

How do you like that wo-  
 man? She is so so, she  
 may pass.

Well, well, I am glad on't.  
 As things go now, as the  
 world goes.

Which way d'ye go?

The Lord of heaven go with  
 you.

To go about the world.

To go along with one.

This lane goes into the broad  
 street.

I will call upon him as I go  
 along.

To go along.

To go out of one's way.

To go afunder.

To go backward.

To go behind.

To pursue, to go after one.

To go after one, in order to  
 overtake him.

To go for, or fetch.

To go in.

To go out.



*Hir peregrinando,*  
*Hir fazer húma embaixada,*  
*Hir ver, cantár, &c.*

*Vámos,*  
*Hir fazer hum negócio,*  
*Hir com a maré,*  
*Hir par a par com alguém,*  
*Vái para quátro mēses que*  
*eu aquí cheguêi,*

*I'de em paz,*  
*O tēpo vai abrandando,*  
*Hir (at cards),*  
*Hir-se, v. r.*

*Hir-se a ólha, ou a panêlla,*  
*Hir-se o enfermô,*  
*A quarésma vái-se acabando,*  
*Hir-se,*

*Náda se vái máis depréssa*  
*que o tēpo,*  
*Aquélles mōntes vão-se esten-*  
*dendo,*

*Hir-se embóra,*  
*Esperái até que a calma se va*  
*embóra,*

*Vái-te embóra; que não sabes*  
*engodár a gente,*

*Hir-se de húma carta (at*  
*cards),*

*Vái-se fazendo tarde,*  
*Vai-se chegando a nóite,*  
*Vái-se chegando o tēpo da*  
*séga,*

*Vai-se acabando o meu con-*  
*sulado,*

*Hir-se escapulindo,*

*Hir-se á mão,*

To go a pilgrimage.  
 To go on an embassy.  
 To go to see, to sing, &c.  
 Come, come on.

To go upon a business.  
 To go with the tide.  
 To go cheek by jole with one.  
 It is now going on four  
 months since I came hi-  
 ther.

Depart in peace.  
 The weather grows mild.  
 To go, to lay, to stake, to set.  
 To go, to go away, to go  
 one's way, to depart, also  
 to run, or leak.

Is for the pot to boil over.  
 Is for a sick man to die.  
 Lent draws to an end.  
 To slip, or pass away (as  
 time.)

Nothing goes faster than  
 time.  
 Those mountains extend, or  
 stretch themselves.  
 To go away, also to be over.  
 Stay till the heat be over.

Away, or go, you know not  
 how to wheedle people.  
 To throw away a card.

It grows late.  
 The night draws on.  
 It grows near harvest.

My consulship is almost at  
 an end.  
 To sneak away.  
 To refrain, to forbear, to ab-  
 stain.

*Hir-se impersonal; as, vái-se, they go; foi-se,*  
*they are gone; hir-se há, they shall go.*



## To pray.

|                                                 |                                         |
|-------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| <i>Senhór, cómo amigo, faça-me<br/>o favor,</i> | Dear sir, do me the favour.             |
| <i>Eu vos peço, or peçovos,</i>                 | I pray you.                             |
| <i>Pécolhe em cortesia,</i>                     | I beseech you.                          |
| <i>Pécolhe encarecidamente,</i>                 | I intreat, or conjure, you to<br>do it. |
| <i>Pécolhe por favor que, &amp;c.</i>           | I beg of you that, &c.                  |
| <i>Faça-me a finéza,</i>                        | Do me the kindness.                     |
| <i>Pécolhe perdaõ,</i>                          | I beg your pardon.                      |

## Expressions of Kindness.

|                                    |                        |
|------------------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>Minha vida,</i>                 | My life.               |
| <i>Minha álma,</i>                 | My dear soul.          |
| <i>Mêu amor,</i>                   | My love.               |
| <i>Mêu querído, minha querída,</i> | My little darling.     |
| <i>Mêu coração,</i>                | My dear love, my love. |
| <i>Filho do meu coração,</i>       | My dear child.         |
| <i>Filha da minha álma,</i>        | My little honey.       |

## To shew Civility.

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Agradêço a v<sup>m</sup>,<br/>Dôu a v<sup>m</sup> as agradecimêtos,<br/>Bêijo as mãos de v<sup>m</sup>,<br/>Fálo-hêi com tôdo o gôsto,<br/>Com tôdo o meu coração,<br/>De muito boa vontade,<br/>Vêja v<sup>m</sup> se o pôsso servir<br/>nalguma côusa,<br/>Dispônha v<sup>m</sup> cómo lhe pare-<br/>cêr dêste seu criádo,<br/>Estôu esperádo pêllas ór-<br/>dens de v<sup>m</sup>,<br/>Fa que v<sup>m</sup> assím ordena,<br/>As ôrdens de v<sup>m</sup>,<br/>Fico muito obrigádo a v<sup>m</sup>,</i> | I thank you.<br>I give you thanks.<br>I kiss your hand.<br>I will do it cheerfully.<br>With all my heart.<br>Heartily, willingly.<br>See if it is in my power to<br>serve you.<br>Do what you please with<br>your servant.<br>I wait for your commands. |
| <i>Quer v<sup>m</sup> que êu faça alguma<br/>côusa,<br/>Sem cerimônia,<br/>Não tem v<sup>m</sup> máis que fallar,<br/>Faça-me a honra de de me pôr<br/>aos pés da snr<sup>a</sup>,</i>                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       | Since you will have it so.<br>At your service.<br>I am very much obliged to<br>you.<br>Have you any thing to com-<br>mand me.<br>Without ceremony.<br>You need but to speak.<br>Present my respects, or duty,<br>to my lady.                            |



*Naõ sei cõmo agradecer a  
um<sup>te</sup> tantos favõres,*

I know not how to make a  
proper return for so many  
favours.

*Naõ sôu de comprimêtos,  
Deixêmos êstes comprimên-  
tos,  
Isto he o melhor,*

I am not for ceremonies.  
Away with these ceremonies  
or compliments.  
That is the best way.

To give tokens of Affirmation, Consent, Belief,  
and Refusal.

*He verdáde,  
He isso verdáde?  
He muito verdáde,  
Para dizêrvos a verdáde,  
Com effeito he assim,  
Quem duvida disso?  
Naõ ha dúvida nisso,  
Parêceme que sim, que naõ,  
Apõsto que sim,  
Apõsto que naõ,  
Crêame um<sup>te</sup>?  
Está um<sup>te</sup> zombádo?  
Fálle um<sup>te</sup> de véras?  
Fállo de véras,  
Põis, está feito,  
Pouco a pouco,  
Isto naõ he verdáde,  
Naõ ha tal cõusa,  
He mentíra,  
Estáva zombádo,  
Sêja muto embõra,  
Naõ quero,*

It is true.  
Is it true?  
It is but too true,  
To tell you the truth.  
Really it is so.  
Who doubts it?  
There is no doubt of it.  
I think so, not.  
I lay it is.  
I lay it is not.  
Do believe me?  
Don't you jest?  
Are you in earnest?  
I am in earnest.  
Well, let it be so.  
Softly, fair and softly.  
It is not true.  
There is no such thing.  
It is a lie.  
I did but jest.  
Let it be so.  
I won't, I will not.

To consult.

*Que se ha de fazer?  
Que farêmos?  
Que lhe parece a um<sup>te</sup> que eu  
fáça?  
Que remédio tem isso?  
Façâmos assim,  
Façâmos húma cõusa,  
Será melhor que,  
Seria melhor que,*

What is to be done?  
What shall we do?  
What do you advise me to  
do?  
What remedy is there for it?  
Let us do so, and so.  
Let us do one thing.  
It will be better that.  
It would be better that.



*Esperái hum pouco,  
Deixáime com isso,  
Antes quizéra,  
Se isso fôsse comigo,  
Túdo he o mêsmo,*

Stay a little.  
Let me alone.  
I had rather.  
Were I in your place,  
It is all one.

### Of Eating and Drinking.

*Ténho fome,  
Mórro de fome,  
Côma um<sup>a</sup> alguma coisa,  
Que quer um<sup>a</sup> comêr?  
Quer um<sup>a</sup> comêr mais?  
Ténho sede,  
Fa matêi a fome,  
Ténho muita sede,  
Mórro de sede,  
Dême de bebêr,  
Viva um<sup>a</sup> muitos annos,  
Eú beberia hum côpo de  
vinho,  
Pôes bêba um<sup>a</sup>,  
Tenho bebido bastante,  
Não pôsso bebêr mais,  
Fa matêi a sede,*

I am hungry.  
I am almost starved.  
Eat something.  
What will you eat?  
Will you eat any more?  
I am dry, *or* thirsty.  
I have no more stomach.  
I am very dry.  
I am almost dead with thirst.  
Give me some drink.  
I thank you.  
I could drink a glass of wine.  
  
Drink then.  
I have drank enough.  
I can drink no more.  
I am no more thirsty, *or* my  
thirst is quenched.

### Of Going, Coming, Stirring, &c.

*Dónde vem um<sup>a</sup>?  
Para onde vái um<sup>a</sup>?  
Vênho de; vou para, *or* a,  
Quer um<sup>a</sup> subír, ou descêr?*

From whence do you come?  
Where do you go?  
I come from; I am going to.  
Will you come up, *or* come  
down?

*E'ntre um<sup>a</sup>, faya um<sup>a</sup>,  
Não se búla daqui,  
Chêgue se para mim,  
Va-se um<sup>a</sup>,  
Vem cá,  
Espére por mim,  
Não vá tão deprêssa,  
Tíre-se de diânte de mim,  
Não me tóque,  
Déixe estár isso,  
Estôu bem aquí,  
Abra um<sup>a</sup> a pórtã,*

Come in, go out.  
Do not stir from hence.  
Come near to me.  
Go your way, be gone.  
Come hither.  
Stay for me.  
Do not go so fast.  
Get you out of my way.  
Do not touch me.  
Let that alone.  
I am well here.  
Open the door.



*Féche a pórtã,  
A'bra, ou féche a janélla,*

Shut the door.  
Open the window, or shut  
the window.

*Vénha um<sup>a</sup> por aquí,  
Pásse por lá,*

Come this way.  
Pass that way.

*Que procúra um<sup>a</sup>?  
Que perdêo um<sup>a</sup>?*

What do you look for?  
What have you lost?

### To wish well to a Person.

*O Céu vos guarde,  
Dêos vos dê bôa fortuna,  
Dezêjo-vos tôdo o bem,*

Heaven preserve you.  
God send you good luck.  
I wish you every thing that  
is good.

*Dêos vos ajúde,  
Dêos vos perdôe,  
I'de com Dêos,  
Até vêr-nos,  
Bôm provêito faça a um<sup>a</sup>,*

God assist you.  
God forgive you.  
God be with you.  
Till I see you again.  
Much good may do you.

### To wish ill.

*O diábo te leve,  
Maldíto sêjas tu,  
Váí para os quintos inférnos,  
Váite enforcár,  
Enforcádo sêjas tu,*

The devil take thee.  
A curse on thee.  
Away, go to hell.  
Go and be hanged.  
Would thou wert hanged.

### To swear.

*Assím Dêos me sálve,  
Arrebentado sêja êu,  
Em conciência,*

As God shall help me, shall  
save me.  
May I burst.  
In my conscience.

### To threaten and insult.

*O'lha que te hêi de dar,  
Dêixa-te estár, or cala-te que  
me has de pagar,  
Júro que te farêi arrependêr  
dísso,  
Se me enfadáres,  
Coitádo de ti,  
Pôucas razôens, or cala éssa  
bôca,  
Isto basta,*

Take care, I will beat thee.  
Thou wilt pay it me.  
I swear thou shalt repent of  
it.  
If you put me into a passion.  
Woe be to thee.  
Hold your tongue, don't  
speak to me.  
It is enough, it is sufficient.



To mock, to blame, and to call one names.

*Que bello focinho !  
Que cara de mono !  
Trapaceiro,  
Embusteiro,  
Mexeriqueiro,  
Que bello sogeito,  
Velhaco,  
Maroto,  
Má casta,  
Tonto,  
Asneirão,*

O the fine snout !  
What an ape's face !  
A chicaner.  
A cheat, an impostor.  
A tale bearer, a tell-tale.  
O the dull thing.  
A knave.  
A rogue, a rascal.  
Curfed race.  
Giddy-brains, blunderbuss.  
A great beast, a thick-skull.

To admire.

*O' Deos !  
Hé possível !  
Quem teria imaginádo, crído,  
dito,  
Que animal !  
Que maravilha ! or que mi-  
lágre !  
Não me maravilho !  
Como póde ser isto ! or Como  
he possível !  
Eis aquí como são as cousas  
dêste mundo !*

O God !  
Is it possible !  
Who would have thought,  
believed, said !  
What a beast !  
O strange !  
I don't wonder.  
How can that be !  
So goes the world !

To shew Joy and Displeasure.

*Que gosto !  
Que glória !  
Que alegria !  
Que contentamêto he o meu !  
Que felicidade !  
Sinto isso,  
Sinto isso na alma,  
Sinto isso no coração,  
O' que desgraça he a minha !*

What pleasure !  
What glory !  
What joy !  
How pleased I am !  
What happiness !  
I am sorry for it.  
That touches my very soul.  
It pierces me to the heart.  
O how unhappy am I !



*Affrontár-me désta sórte!  
 Assim he que se trata?  
 O'ha marôto!  
 Que bella cortesia!  
 Não deveria tratár comigo  
 désta sórte,  
 Parece-te bem?  
 Aprende, pedaço d'ásno,  
 O'ha cómo me trata éste ani-  
 mal,  
 Olhai que velháco he éste,  
 Que diábo tem elle feito?  
 Pois, ainda teimais?*

To affront me thus!  
 Do you deal thus?  
 You rogue!  
 O what fine manners!  
 Thou oughtest not to treat  
 me thus.  
 Dost thou think that it will?  
 Learn, beast as thou art.  
 See the brute, how he uses  
 me.  
 Do you behold that rascal.  
 What the devil has he done?  
 What, are you obstinate still?

## To call.

*O'uve!  
 O'nde estás?  
 Huma palavra,  
 Duas palavras somênte,*

Hark!  
 Where art thou?  
 A word.  
 I'll speak but two words to  
 you.

## To shew Uneasiness, Trouble, and Sorrow.

*Sinto or pêsame,  
 Dêixame,  
 Peça-te que me dêixes.  
 Não me quêbres a cabeça,  
 O'ra vámos, dêixame,  
 Dêixame, vái com Deos,  
 Váite daqui or váite embóra,  
 Váitratár da túa vida,  
 Váite na má hora, or váite  
 co'diábo,  
 Não me faças a cabeça tonta,  
 Já me tens dito isso hum cên-  
 to de vêzes,*

I am sorry.  
 Let me be quiet.  
 Prithee get thee gone.  
 Do not break my head.  
 Away, away.  
 Go, go, God be with you.  
 Get thee gone from hence.  
 Go mind your own business.  
 Go to the devil.  
 Do not make me giddy.  
 You have told it me a hun-  
 dred times already.

## To ask.

*Que novas há?  
 Que he isto? que há?*

What news?  
 What is this, what is the  
 matter?



|                                  |                               |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>O'nde ídes?</i>               | Where are you a-going?        |
| <i>D'onde vîndes?</i>            | Whence come you?              |
| <i>Que quer dizêr?</i>           | What do you mean?             |
| <i>De que sêrve?</i>             | To what purpose?              |
| <i>Que vos parêce?</i>           | What do you think?            |
| <i>Quem têve tal atrevimêto?</i> | Who is that has been so bold? |
| <i>Que dizem? que se diz?</i>    | What do they say?             |
| <i>Cômo diz v<sup>m</sup>?</i>   | How do you say?               |
| <i>Por que não me responde?</i>  | Why don't you answer?         |

To forbid.

|                           |                 |
|---------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>Deixái estár ísso,</i> | Let that alone. |
| <i>Não toquêis,</i>       | Do not touch.   |
| <i>Não digáis náda,</i>   | Say not a word. |
| <i>Guardáivos,</i>        | Have a care.    |

Of speaking, saying, doing, &c.

|                                             |                                     |
|---------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>Fálle v<sup>m</sup> álto,</i>            | Speak loud.                         |
| <i>Fálle v<sup>m</sup> mânso,</i>           | Speak low.                          |
| <i>Com quem fálla v<sup>m</sup>?</i>        | Who do you speak to?                |
| <i>Fálle v<sup>m</sup> comigo?</i>          | Do you speak to me?                 |
| <i>Fálle-lhe,</i>                           | Speak to him, <i>or</i> to her.     |
| <i>Fálla v<sup>m</sup> Portuguêz?</i>       | Do you speak Portuguese?            |
| <i>Que diz v<sup>m</sup>?</i>               | What do you say?                    |
| <i>Não digo náda,</i>                       | I say nothing.                      |
| <i>E'lla não quer calár-se.</i>             | She will not hold her tongue.       |
| <i>Ouví dizêr que——</i>                     | I was told that——                   |
| <i>Assím mo disséraõ,</i>                   | I was told so.                      |
| <i>Assim dizem,</i>                         | They say so.                        |
| <i>Assim dizem tôdos,</i>                   | Every one says so.                  |
| <i>Quem lho disse a v<sup>m</sup>?</i>      | Who told it you?                    |
| <i>Dissemo o Sr. A.</i>                     | Mr. A. told it me.                  |
| <i>Pôis elle he que lho disse?</i>          | Did he tell you so?                 |
| <i>Pôis ella he que o disse?</i>            | Did she tell it?                    |
| <i>Quândo o ouvió v<sup>m</sup>. dizêr?</i> | When did you hear it?               |
| <i>Disséraõ mo hõje,</i>                    | I heard it to day.                  |
| <i>Não pôsso crê-lo,</i>                    | I can't believe it.                 |
| <i>Que diz elle?</i>                        | What does he say?                   |
| <i>Que vos disse elle?</i>                  | What did he say to you?             |
| <i>E'lle não me disse náda,</i>             | He said nothing to me.              |
| <i>Não lho diga v<sup>m</sup>.</i>          | Do not tell him that.               |
| <i>E'u lho dirêi,</i>                       | I'll tell him, <i>or</i> her of it. |
| <i>Não diga náda,</i>                       | Say not a word.                     |
| <i>Disse v<sup>m</sup>. aquillo?</i>        | Did you say that?                   |



*Naõ o disse,  
 Naõ disse vm. assim?  
 Que está vm. fazendo?  
 Que tem vm. feito?  
 Naõ faço náda,  
 Raõ tenho feito náda,  
 Tem vm. acabádo?  
 Que está elle fazendo?  
 Que faz ella?  
 Que quer, or que ordêna vm?  
 Que lhe fálta?*

I did not say it.  
 Did you not say so?  
 What are you doing?  
 What have you done!  
 I do nothing.  
 I have done nothing.  
 Have you done?  
 What is he doing?  
 What does she do?  
 What is your pleasure?  
 What do you want?

Of understanding or apprehending.

*Entênde-o, or percêbe-o vm.  
 bem?*

Do you understand him well?

*Percêbe vm. o que elle disse?*

Did you understand what he said?

*Percêbe vm. o que elle diz?*

Do you understand what he says?

*Entêndeme, or percébeme vm.?*

Do you understand me?

*Entêndo a vm. muito bem,*

I understand you very well.

*Naõ entêndo a vm.*

I do not understand you.

*Sabe vm. a língua Portu-  
 guêza?*

Do you understand Portu-  
 guese?

*Naõ a sei,*

I do not understand it.

*Tem-me vm. percebido?*

Did you understand me?

*Agóra o percêbo,*

Now I understand you.

*Naõ se percêbe o que elle diz,*

One cannot understand what he utters.

*Parêce gágo,*

He speaks like a stammerer.

Of knowing, or having Knowledge of.

*Sábe vm. isso?*

Do you know that?

*Naõ o sei,*

I do not know it.

*Naõ sei náda disso,*

I knew nothing of it.

*E'lla bem o sabia,*

She knew well of it.

*Porventura naõ sabia elle  
 isso?*

Did he not know of it?

*Dêmos que eu o soubêsse,*

Suppose I knew it.

*E'lle naõ saberá náda disso,*

He shall know nothing of it.

*Elle nunca sôube náda disto,*

He never knew any thing  
 about this.

*E'u sôube-o primêiro, or ántes  
 que vm. o soubêsse,*

I knew it before you.



*He isto assim ou não ?  
Não que eu saiba,*

Is it so, or not ?  
Not that I know of.

Of knowing or being acquainted with, forgetting,  
and remembering.

*Conhece-o um. ?  
Conhece-a um. ?  
Conhece-os um. ?  
Conheço-o muito bem,  
Não os conheço,  
Nós não nos conhecemos,  
Conheço-o de vista,  
Conheço-a de nome,  
Elle conhecêo-me muito bem,  
Conhece-me um. ?  
Têho-me esquecido do seu nome  
Tem-se um. esquecido de mim ?  
Conhece-vos ella ?  
Conhece o Sr. a um. ?*

*Parêce que não me conhece,*

*O Sr. bem me conhece,*

*E'lle ja me não conhece,  
Têho a honra de ser seu con-  
hecido,*

*Lêmbra-se um. disso ?  
Não me lêmbro disso,  
Lêmbro-me muito bem disso,*

Do you know him ?  
Do you know her ?  
Do you know them ?  
I know him very well.  
I do not know them.  
We do not know one another.  
I know him by sight.  
I have heard of her.  
He knew me very well.  
Do you know me ?  
I have forgot your name.  
Did you forget me ?  
Does she know you ?  
Does the gentleman know  
you ?  
It appears he does not know  
me.  
The gentleman knows me  
well.  
He knows me no more.  
I have the honour to be  
known to him.  
Do you remember that ?  
I do not remember it,  
I do remember it very well.

Of Age, Life, Death, &c.

*Que idade tem um. ?  
Que idade tem seu irmão ?  
Têho vinte e cinco annos,  
Tem vinte e dous annos,  
Um. tem mais annos do que eu,  
Que idade terá um. ?  
He um. casado ?  
Quãtas vêzes tem um. sido  
casado ?  
Quãtas molhéres tem um.  
tido ?*

How old are you ?  
How old is your brother ?  
I am five and twenty.  
He is twenty-two years old.  
You are older than I.  
How old may you be ?  
Are you married ?  
How often have you been  
married ?  
How many wives have you  
had ?



|                                                                |                                             |
|----------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| <i>Tem um. ainda páy, e mãy?</i>                               | Have you father and mother still alive?     |
| <i>Mêu páy morreu,</i>                                         | My father is dead.                          |
| <i>Minha mãy morreu.</i>                                       | My mother is dead.                          |
| <i>Ha dous annos que meu páy morreu,</i>                       | My father has been dead these two years.    |
| <i>Minha mãy casou outra vez,</i>                              | My mother is married again.                 |
| <i>Quântos filhos tem um.?</i>                                 | How many children have you?                 |
| <i>Tenho quatro,</i>                                           | I have four.                                |
| <i>Filhos, ou filhas?</i>                                      | Sons or daughters?                          |
| <i>Tenho hum filho, e tres filhas?</i>                         | I have one son and three daughters.         |
| <i>Quântos irmãos tem um.?</i>                                 | How many brothers have you?                 |
| <i>Não tenho nenhum vivo,</i>                                  | I have none alive.                          |
| <i>Todos morrerão,</i>                                         | They are all dead.                          |
| <i>Todos havêmos de morrer,</i>                                | We must all die.                            |
| <i>Of the word hora, as a Noun as well as an Interjection.</i> |                                             |
| <i>Hóra,</i>                                                   | An hour, also a particular time.            |
| <i>Eu estarei lá, dentro de huma hora,</i>                     | I will be there within an hour.             |
| <i>Que horas são?</i>                                          | What's o'clock?                             |
| <i>São sete horas,</i>                                         | It is seven o'clock.                        |
| <i>A que horas estareis vós lá?</i>                            | At what hour or time will you be there?     |
| <i>As horas que fôr preciso,</i>                               | In due or good time, at the time appointed. |
| <i>Hóras desoccupadas,</i>                                     | Leisure hours.                              |
| <i>A última hora ou a hora da morte,</i>                       | The last hour, or the dying hour.           |
| <i>Cada hora,</i>                                              | Every hour.                                 |
| <i>De hora em hora,</i>                                        | Hourly, every hour.                         |
| <i>Mêya hora,</i>                                              | Half an hour.                               |
| <i>Hum quarto de hora,</i>                                     | A quarter of an hour.                       |
| <i>Huma hora e mêya,</i>                                       | An hour and a half.                         |
| <i>Perto das nove horas,</i>                                   | About nine o'clock.                         |
| <i>Há huma hora,</i>                                           | An hour ago, or an hour since.              |
| <i>Fóra de horas,</i>                                          | Beyond the hour, or very late.              |
| <i>A horas,</i>                                                | In time.                                    |
| <i>Recolher-se a boas horas,</i>                               | To keep good hours.                         |
| <i>Recolher-se fóra de horas,</i>                              | To keep bad hours.                          |
| <i>Hóras de jantar ou de ceár,</i>                             | Dinner, or supper time.                     |
| <i>Perto das horas de jantar,</i>                              | About dinner time.                          |



*Ainda estais na cama a estas horas?*

*O relógio dá horas,  
Já dezoito onze horas,  
Relógio de hora,  
Muito a boas horas,  
A boas horas,*

*Na má hora,*

*Vai te na ma-hora,*

*Toda a hora que,*

*A toda a hora que quizerdes,  
Hora,  
Mulher que anda para cada hora,*

*Horas de fazer oração,  
Horas de hir á igreja,  
Horas de hir para a cama,  
Horas de comer,  
Já não são horas,  
Chegar á hora,  
Estar esperando pela sua hora  
Não ver a hora,*

*São horas de, &c.  
Horas canónicas,*

*Horas,*

*As quarênta horas,*

*Conta das horas,  
Arte de dividir o tempo em horas,*

Are you a-bed at this time of the day?

The clock strikes.

It struck eleven o'clock.

Hour-glass.

Early, betimes.

In good time, in time, at the time appointed.

In an ill hour, unluckily, unfortunately.

Go to the devil, go and be hanged.

Whensoever, at what time soever.

At what time you will.

Time or hour of child-birth.

A woman near her time.

Prayer-time.

Church-time.

Bed-time.

Times of eating.

The time is past, it is too late.

Is for a person to die.

To wait for God's time.

To long, to desire earnestly, to wish with eagerness continued, with *em*, or *de* before the thing desired.

It is time to, &c.

The set time for the clergy to say their office; also those parts of the office itself, called *Prime*, *Tierce*, *Sixth*, *None*, &c.

Any little prayer book, but particularly that in which is the office of the *Blessed Virgin*.

So they call the space of three days, in which the consecrated Host is exposed and laid to public view.

Horography, account of hours

Horometry.



*Hóra as an Adverb and Interjection.*

*Hóra deixa-o-hír,*  
*Hóra deixate destas parvoíces,*  
*Hóra, deixêmo-nos destes com-*  
*primêntos,*  
*Hóra-vâmos, despáxate,*  
*Hóra vâmos, não ha perigo,*  
*Hóra vâmos, tira daqui isto,*  
*Hóra vâmos, têm vergonha,*  
*Hóra, eu não pôsso sofrêr*  
*aquillo,*  
*Hóra hum, hóra outro,*  
*E'lles hóra estão sóbre hum*  
*pé, hóra sóbre outro,*  
*Hóra, que quer dizêr isso?*  
*Túdo o que he bôm, deve sêr*  
*amádo; hóra, Dêos he infi-*  
*nitamênte bôm, logo, &c.*  
*Hóra, havia hum enfêrmo,*  
*Por hóra,*

Pray let him go.  
 Away with these fopperies.  
 Away with these compli-  
 ments.  
 Come, come, make haste.  
 Away, there is no danger.  
 Away with this.  
 Away for shame.  
 I cannot bear that.  
 Sometimes one, sometimes  
 another.  
 They stand now on one foot,  
 and then on another.  
 How now?  
 All that is good to be loved,  
 now God is infinitely good,  
 therefore, &c.  
 Now there was a sick man.  
 At present, for the present,  
 now, at this time.



---

A

VOCABULARY

OF

WORDS MOST USED IN DISCOURSE.

---

Do Céu e dos Elementos.

*Of the Heaven and the Elements.*

**D**ÊOS,  
Jesus Christo,  
O Espírito Santo,  
A Trindáde,  
A Virgem,  
Os anjos,  
Os archânjos,  
Os santos,  
Os bemaventurados,  
O céu,  
O paraíso,  
Inférno,  
Purgatório,  
Os diabos,  
O fogo,  
O ar,  
A terra,  
O mar,  
O sol,  
A lua,  
As estréllas,  
Os raios,

**G**OD.  
Jesus Christ.  
The Holy Ghost.  
The Trinity.  
The Virgin.  
The angels.  
The arch-angels.  
The saints.  
The blessed.  
Heaven.  
Paradise.  
Hell.  
Purgatory.  
The devils.  
The fire.  
The air.  
The earth.  
The sea.  
The sun.  
The moon.  
The stars.  
The rays.



*As núvens,*  
*O vento,*  
*A chuva,*  
*O trovão,*  
*O relâmpago,*  
*Saráiva,*  
*O ráyo,*  
*A neve,*  
*A geáda,*  
*O caramélo,*  
*O orvalho,*  
*Névoa,*  
*Nevoeiro,*  
*O terremóto,*  
*O dilúvio,*  
*O calor,*  
*O frio,*

The clouds.  
 The wind.  
 The rain.  
 Thunder.  
 The lightning.  
 Hail.  
 The thunderbolt.  
 The snow.  
 The frost.  
 The ice.  
 The dew.  
 A fog, *or* mist.  
 A thick fog.  
 The earthquake.  
 The deluge, *or* flood.  
 The heat.  
 The cold.

## Do Têmpo.

*O dia,*  
*A noite,*  
*Méyo día,*  
*Méya noite,*  
*A manhãa,*  
*Depóis do méyo día,*  
*Húma hóra,*  
*Hum quárto de hóra,*  
*Méya hóra,*  
*Tres quartos de hóra,*  
*Hôje,*  
*O'ntem,*  
*Amanhãa,*  
*Antes d' ôntem,*  
*Depóis de amanhãa,*  
*Depóis de jantár,*  
*Depóis de cêa,*  
*Húma semana,*  
*Hum mês,*  
*Hum áнно,*  
*Día santo,*  
*Día de trabálho,*  
*O nascér do sól,*  
*O pôr do sól,*

*Of the Time.*

The day.  
 The night.  
 Noon.  
 Midnight.  
 The morning.  
 The afternoon.  
 An hour.  
 A quarter of an hour.  
 Half an hour.  
 Three-quarters of an hour.  
 To-day.  
 Yesterday.  
 To-morrow.  
 The day before yesterday.  
 After to-morrow.  
 After dinner.  
 After supper.  
 A week.  
 A month.  
 A year.  
 A holy-day.  
 A working day.  
 The sun-rising.  
 The sun-set.



# GRAMMAR.

3

*Têmpo de séga, or da acéifa,* The harvest.  
*Têmpo de vindíma,* The vintage.

---

## Das Estaçoens do Têmpo.

## *Of the Seasons.*

*A primavéra,* The spring.  
*O verão,* The summer.  
*O outôno,* Autumn.  
*O invérno.* Winter.

---

## Os Días da Semâna.

## *The Days of the Week.*

*Domíngo,* Sunday.  
*Segúnda féira,* Monday.  
*Térça féira,* Tuesday.  
*Quárta féira,* Wednesday.  
*Quinta féira,* Thursday.  
*Sêxta féira,* Friday.  
*Sábado,* Saturday.

---

## Dos Méses.

## *Of the Months.*

*Janéiro,* January.  
*Feveréiro,* February.  
*Márço,* March.  
*Abril,* April.  
*Máyo,* May.  
*Júnho,* June.  
*Júlho,* July.  
*Agôsto,* August.  
*Setêmbro,* September.  
*Outúbro,* October.  
*Novêmbro,* November.  
*Dezêmbro,* December.

---

## Días Santos.

## *Holy-Days of the Year.*

*Dia de A'nnos bom,* New Year's Day.  
*Dia de Réys, a Epiphania,* Twelfth Day.  
*A Candelária,* Candlemas day.



*Purificação,*  
*O Entrúdo,*  
*Quárta-feira da Cinzas,*  
*A Quarésma,*  
*Annunciação,*  
*As Quatro Témporas,*  
*A Semãna santa,*  
*Domíngo de Râmos,*  
*Quárta-feira de Trevas,*  
*Quínta-feira de Endoências,*

*Sêsta-feira da Paixão,*  
*Páscoa da Resurreição,*  
*Assumpção de N. S.<sup>a</sup>*  
*As Rogações, or Ladaínhas,*  
*Ascensão,*  
*Pentecoste,*

*Dia do Côrpo de Dêos,*  
*Dia de S. João,*  
*Dia de S. Pedro,*  
*Dia de todos os Santos,*  
*Dia dos Finados,*  
*Dia de S. Martinho,*  
*Dia de Natál,*  
*Vigília, or véspera,*

---

*Da Igreja e Dignidades Ecclesiásticas.*

*A náve,*  
*Zimbório,*  
*Pináculo,*  
*Côro,*  
*Capella,*  
*Estánte,*

*Sacristia,*  
*Campanário, ou torre dos sinos,*  
*Sino,*  
*Badalo,*  
*Pia,*  
*Hysópe,*  
*Confessionário,*

The Purification.  
 The Carnival, *or* Shrovetide.  
 Ash Wednesday.  
 The Lent.  
 Lady Day in March.  
 The Ember Weeks.  
 The Holy Week.  
 Palm Sunday.  
 Wednesday before Easter.  
 Maunday Thursday, the last Thursday in Lent.  
 Good Friday.  
 Easter Day.  
 Lady Day in harvest.  
 Rogation Week.  
 The Ascension.  
 The Pentecost, *or* Whitsuntide.  
 Corpus Christi Day.  
 Midsummer Day.  
 Lammas Day.  
 All Saints Day.  
 All Souls.  
 Martinmas.  
 Christmas Day.  
 The eve.

---

*Of the Church and Ecclesiastical Dignities.*

The aisle of the church.  
 The dome.  
 Pinnacle.  
 The choir.  
 The chapel.  
 A reading desk, *or* chorister's desk.  
 The vestry.  
 The belfry, *or* steeple.  
 The bell.  
 The clapper of the bell.  
 The font.  
 A sprinkler.  
 A confession seat.



*Tribúna,*  
*Cemitério,*

A tribune, *or* gallery.  
A church-yard, a burying-place.

*Carneiro,*

A charnel.

*Altár,*

An altar.

*Frontál,*

An antependium,

*Pállio,*

A canopy.

*Toálha do altár,*

The altar cloth.

*Missál,*

A missal, a mass-book.

*Sotána,*

A cassock.

*Sobrepelliz,*

A surplice.

*Roquête,*

A short surplice, a bishop's surplice.

*O pápa,*

The pope.

*Hum cardeal,*

A cardinal.

*Hum patriarca,*

A patriarch.

*Hum arcebispo,*

An archbishop.

*Hum bispo,*

A bishop.

*Hum legádo,*

A legate.

*Vice legádo,*

A vice-legate.

*Hum núncio,*

A nuncio.

*Hum preládo,*

A prelate.

*Hum commendadôr,*

A commander.

*Hum abbáde,*

An abbot.

*Húma abbadéssa,*

An abbess.

*Hum priôr,*

A prior.

*Hum reitôr,*

A rector.

*Beneficiádo,*

Beneficed clergyman, *or* incumbent.

*Fráde, or religiôso,*

A friar.

*Corôa,*

A shaven crown.

*Hum guardiãõ,*

A guardian.

*Hum definidôr,*

A definator.

*Hum provinciál,*

A provincial.

*Hum gerál,*

A general.

*Hum vigário,*

A vicar.

*Hum vigário gerál,*

A vicar-general.

*Hum de õ,*

A dean.

*Hum arcediágo,*

Archdeacon.

*Diácono,*

Deacon.

*Subdiácono,*

A sub-deacon.

*Hum cónego,*

A canon.

*Arcipréste,*

Arch-priest.

*Hum clérigo,*

A priest.

*Capellãõ,*

A chaplain.



*Hum esmolér,*  
*Hum párroco,*  
*Benefício simples,*  
*Frêira,*  
*Hum prégadôr,*  
*Sacristão, or sancristão,*  
*Menino do côro,*

An almoner  
 A curate.  
 Sinecure.  
 A nun.  
 A preacher, *or* lecturer.  
 A sexton, a vestry-keeper.  
 A singing boy.

Nômes das côusas que geral-  
 mênse se comem.

*Names of things most usually  
 eaten.*

*Paõ,*  
*A'goa,*  
*Vinho,*  
*Cárne,*  
*Péixe,*  
*Cárne cozida,*  
*Cárne açáda,*  
*Hum bocádo de paõ,*  
*Hum pastel,*  
*Sôpa,*  
*Cáldo,*  
*Saláda,*  
*Mólho,*

Bread.  
 Water.  
 Wine.  
 Meat, *or* flesh.  
 Fish.  
 Boiled meat.  
 Roast meat.  
 A mouthful of bread.  
 A pye.  
 Soup.  
 Broth.  
 A sallad.  
 Any kind of sauce to dip in,  
 provoking appetite.  
 Fruit.  
 Cheese.  
 Butter.

Do Serviço de huma Mêsá.

*Of the Covering of the Table.*

*A mêsá,*  
*Húma cadêira,*  
*A toálha da mêsá,*  
*Toálha de mãos,*  
*Hum guardanápo,*  
*Húma fáca,*  
*Hum gárfo,*  
*Húma colhér,*  
*Hum prato,*  
*Hum saleiro,*  
*Galhêta do vinágre,*  
*Galhêta do azeite,*

The table.  
 A chair.  
 The table cloth.  
 A towel.  
 A napkin.  
 A knife.  
 A fork.  
 A spoon.  
 A plate.  
 A saltseller.  
 A vinegar bottle, or cruet.  
 A cruet, or vial for oil.



|                                      |                        |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>Talhér,</i>                       | A cruet-stand.         |
| <i>Assucarêiro,</i>                  | Sugar-basin.           |
| <i>Bayxélla ou serviço de prata,</i> | A set of silver plate. |
| <i>Húma cubérta,</i>                 | A course.              |
| <i>Práto, guardanápo, fáca,</i>      | A cover.               |
| <i>gárfo, colhér (túdo júnto)</i>    |                        |
| <i>Járro,</i>                        | The ewer.              |
| <i>Húma bacza,</i>                   | A basin.               |
| <i>Hum cópo,</i>                     | A glass.               |
| <i>Húma garráfa,</i>                 | A bottle.              |
| <i>Húma táça,</i>                    | A cup.                 |
| <i>Castiçal,</i>                     | A candlestick.         |
| <i>Véla,</i>                         | A candle.              |
| <i>Tesóuras de espevitár,</i>        | Snuffers.              |
| <i>Húma sálva,</i>                   | A salver.              |
| <i>Húma escudélla,</i>               | A porringer.           |
| <i>Cêsto pára pôr o paõ,</i>         | A bread-basket.        |
| <i>Donzélla,</i>                     | A dumb-waiter.         |
| <i>Faquêiro,</i>                     | A case for knives.     |
| <i>Louça de Bárro,</i>               | Earthen ware.          |
| <i>Louça de estânho,</i>             | Pewter.                |

## Do Comêr, e Bebêr.

*Of Eating and Drinking.*

|                    |                                     |
|--------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>Váca,</i>       | Beef.                               |
| <i>Carnêiro,</i>   | Mutton.                             |
| <i>Vitélla,</i>    | Veal.                               |
| <i>Cordêiro,</i>   | Lamb.                               |
| <i>Gallinha,</i>   | Hen, a fowl.                        |
| <i>Gállo,</i>      | Cock.                               |
| <i>Perú,</i>       | A turkey.                           |
| <i>Almôndegas,</i> | Force meat balls.                   |
| <i>O jantár,</i>   | The dinner.                         |
| <i>Almôço,</i>     | Breakfast.                          |
| <i>Cêa,</i>        | Supper.                             |
| <i>Merênda,</i>    | The afternoon's luncheon.           |
| <i>Consoáda,</i>   | A light supper, as upon a fast-day. |
| <i>Banquête,</i>   | An entertainment, a banquet,        |
| <i>Fóme,</i>       | Hunger.                             |
| <i>Sêde,</i>       | Thirst.                             |
| <i>Fastío,</i>     | A loathing.                         |
| <i>Paõ,</i>        | Bread.                              |



|                                            |                            |
|--------------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>Pão frêsko, or pão mólle,</i>           | New bread.                 |
| <i>Paõ quênte,</i>                         | A hot loaf.                |
| <i>Paõ de tôda farínha,</i>                | Common bread.              |
| <i>Pão branco, or pão alvo,</i>            | White bread.               |
| <i>Arrôz,</i>                              | Rice.                      |
| <i>Paõ de rála,</i>                        | Brown bread.               |
| <i>Paõ de ceváda,</i>                      | Barley bread.              |
| <i>Paõ de centéo,</i>                      | Rye bread.                 |
| <i>Paõ de avêa,</i>                        | Oaten bread.               |
| <i>Paõ de milho miúdo,</i>                 | Millet bread.              |
| <i>Paõ de milho grãde, ou de<br/>maíz,</i> | Indian corn bread.         |
| <i>Paõ lêvedo,</i>                         | Leavened bread.            |
| <i>Paõ ásmo,</i>                           | Unleavened bread.          |
| <i>Biscóuto,</i>                           | Biscuit.                   |
| <i>Migálha de pão,</i>                     | A crumb of bread.          |
| <i>Fatía de pão,</i>                       | A slice of bread.          |
| <i>Códea de pão,</i>                       | A crust of bread.          |
| <i>Mássa,</i>                              | Dough.                     |
| <i>Tórta,</i>                              | A tart.                    |
| <i>Rósca,</i>                              | Bread made like a roll.    |
| <i>Estofádo,</i>                           | Stewed meat.               |
| <i>Fiãmbre,</i>                            | Cold meat.                 |
| <i>Cárne assáda sôbre grêlhas,</i>         | Broiled meat.              |
| <i>Cárne fríta,</i>                        | Fried meat.                |
| <i>Picádo, or cárne picáda,</i>            | Sausage meat.              |
| <i>ÿavalí, or pôrco montéz,</i>            | A wild boar.               |
| <i>Presúnto,</i>                           | Ham, gammon of bacon.      |
| <i>Pôrco,</i>                              | Pork.                      |
| <i>Cabríto,</i>                            | Kid.                       |
| <i>Toucínho,</i>                           | Bacon.                     |
| <i>Hum lômbo,</i>                          | A loin.                    |
| <i>Maõs de carneiro,</i>                   | Sheep's trotters.          |
| <i>Fressúra, or forçúra,</i>               | A pluck.                   |
| <i>Cachóla de porco,</i>                   | A pig's head.              |
| <i>Linguíça, or lingóíça,</i>              | A sausage.                 |
| <i>Chouriço de sãngue de pôrco,</i>        | Black-pudding.             |
| <i>Páyo,</i>                               | A thick and short sausage. |
| <i>Fricassé,</i>                           | A fricassee.               |
| <i>Fígado,</i>                             | Liver.                     |
| <i>Léite,</i>                              | Milk.                      |
| <i>Náta,</i>                               | Cream.                     |
| <i>Sôro,</i>                               | Whey.                      |
| <i>Requeijão,</i>                          | A kind of new cheese.      |
| <i>Coalháda,</i>                           | Curdled milk.              |



|                                |                                 |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <i>ôvo,</i>                    | An egg.                         |
| <i>Gemma do ovo,</i>           | The yolk of an egg.             |
| <i>Clára do ovo,</i>           | The white of an egg.            |
| <i>ovo frêsko,</i>             | A new laid egg.                 |
| <i>ovo mólle,</i>              | A soft egg.                     |
| <i>ovo dúro,</i>               | A hard egg.                     |
| <i>ovo assádo,</i>             | A roasted egg.                  |
| <i>ovo galládo,</i>            | An egg with a chicken in it.    |
| <i>ôvos reaes,</i>             | Sweet eggs spun out like hairs. |
| <i>ôvos escalfádos,</i>        | Poached eggs.                   |
| <i>ôvos frítos,</i>            | Fried eggs.                     |
| <i>ôvos mexidos, e frítos,</i> | An amlet.                       |
| <i>Bolinhólo,</i>              | A fritter.                      |
| <i>ôvas de peixe,</i>          | The roes of fish.               |
| <i>Dôces,</i>                  | Sweetmeats,                     |
| <i>Conféitos,</i>              | Comfits.                        |
| <i>Marmeláda,</i>              | Marmalade.                      |

## O que se A'ssa.

*What is roasted.*

|                                                                                         |                                |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>Hum capão,</i>                                                                       | A capon.                       |
| <i>Húma frânga,</i>                                                                     | A pullet.                      |
| <i>Hum frângo,</i>                                                                      | A chicken.                     |
| <i>Pómbos,</i>                                                                          | Pigeons.                       |
| <i>Pómbro trocáz,</i>                                                                   | A wood culver, or wood-pigeon. |
| <i>Gallinhóla,</i>                                                                      | A woodcock.                    |
| <i>Húma espécie de gallinhóla pequena á qual os Castelhanos chamão gallineta ciêga,</i> | A snipe.                       |
| <i>Perdiz,</i>                                                                          | A partridge.                   |
| <i>Tórdo,</i>                                                                           | A thrush.                      |
| <i>Faisão,</i>                                                                          | A pheasant.                    |
| <i>Faisãozinho,</i>                                                                     | A pheasant-powt.               |
| <i>Hum leitão,</i>                                                                      | A roasting-pig.                |
| <i>Veádo,</i>                                                                           | A stag.                        |
| <i>Hum Coelho,</i>                                                                      | A rabbit.                      |
| <i>Láparo,</i>                                                                          | A young coney.                 |
| <i>Lébre,</i>                                                                           | A hare.                        |
| <i>âdem,</i>                                                                            | A duck.                        |
| <i>Gânso, or o mácho da âdem,</i>                                                       | A drake.                       |
| <i>Páta,</i>                                                                            | Goose.                         |
| <i>Páto,</i>                                                                            | Gander, the male of the goose. |



*Calhândra,*  
*Cadorniz,*

A sky-lark.  
A quail.

## De ôutros Pássaros.

*Of other Birds.*

*águia,*  
*aguia nóva,*  
*Abútre,*  
*Abestrús,*  
*Esmerilhaõ,*  
*Gavião,*  
*Môcho,*  
*Falcão,*  
*Falcão que ainda não vóa,*  
*Gerifálte,*  
*Sácre,*  
*Garça,*  
*Melharúco,*  
*Garçóta,*  
*Milhão, or milháfre,*  
*Córvo,*  
*Grálha,*  
*Grálho,*  
*Alvéloa or rabêta,*  
*Canário,*  
*Pintacilgo,*  
*Mérlo,*  
*Tentilhão,*  
*Rouxinol,*  
*Verdelhão,*  
*Papagáyo,*  
*Pêga,*  
*Estorninho, or zorzal,*  
*Francélho,*  
*Môcho,*  
*Corúja,*  
*Morcêgo,*  
*A'ue nocturna, como mélo,*  
*que máma as cábras,*  
*O francolím,*  
*Búfo,*  
*Cercêta,*  
*Córvo morinho,*

An eagle.  
An eaglet.  
A vulture.  
An ostrich.  
A merlin.  
A sparrow hawk.  
The horned owl.  
A falcon.  
A jass-hawk.  
A ger-falcon.  
A saker, a saker-hawk.  
A heron.  
Tomtit.  
A little heron.  
A kite.  
A crow, or raven.  
A rook.  
A jack-daw.  
A wag-tail.  
A canary-bird.  
A gold-finch.  
A black-bird.  
A chaffinch.  
A nightingale.  
A green-bird.  
A parrot.  
A magpie.  
A starling.  
A hobby, a musket.  
Owl.  
A screech owl.  
A bat.  
A goat milker.  
  
A godwit, a moor-cock.  
A night crow, or raven.  
A teal.  
A cormorant.



*Gaivóta,*  
*Gaivão,*

*Andorinha,*  
*Mergulhão,*  
*Marréca,*  
*Picâncio,*  
*Taralhão,*  
*Pavão,*  
*Pavoa,*  
*Arara,*  
*Pardal,*  
*Rôla,*  
*Alcyon,*  
*Cegonha,*  
*Cúco,*  
*Cisne,*  
*Pintarrôxo,*  
*Grôu,*  
*Pavoncino,*  
*Pelicano,*  
*Tarambola,*  
*Pisco,*

A moor-hen, *or* gull.  
A martlet, *or* martin, a kind  
of swallow.  
A swallow.  
A dive, *or* didapper.  
A wild-duck.  
A wren, a little bird.  
A kind of ortolan.  
A peacock.  
A pea-hen.  
A macaw.  
A sparrow.  
A turtle-dove.  
A king's fisher.  
A stork.  
A cuckow.  
A swan.  
A red robin.  
A crane.  
A lapwing.  
A pelican.  
A plover.  
A bullfinch, *or* red-tail.

Para os Días de Péixe, ou de  
Jejum.

*Sôpa de ervas, &c.*

*Péixe,*  
*Péixe do mar,*  
*Péixe do rio, ou da água doce,*  
*Sável,*  
*Anchôva,*  
*Anguía, or Enguía,*  
*Bárbo,*  
*Lúcio,*  
*Cárpe,*  
*Siba,*  
*Lúla,*  
*Cábra,*  
*Goráz,*  
*Congro,*  
*Dourada,*

*For Fish Days, or Fast Days.*

Soup meagre, *or* lenten pet-  
tage.  
Fish.  
Sea-fish.  
Fresh-water fish.  
A shad.  
An anchovy.  
An eel.  
A barbel.  
A pike, *or* jack.  
A carp.  
A cuttle.  
A calamary.  
The miller's thumb.  
A rochet, *or* roach.  
A conger. [the gilt head.  
Dorado, St. Peter's fish, *or*



*Linguádo,*  
*Lagôsta,*  
*Bordálo,*

*Múgem,*  
*Rodoválio,*  
*Sárda,*  
*Caválla,*  
*Sardinha,*  
*Bacalháo,*  
*Arénque,*  
*Voadôr,*  
*Arrénque de fumo,*  
*Arrénque com óvas,*  
*Pescáda,*  
*Cadóz,*  
*ôstra,*  
*Lamprêa,*  
*Lamprêa pequêna,*  
*Pôrco marinho,*  
*Pólvo,*  
*Pérca,*  
*Tínca,*  
*Trúta,*  
*Atúm,*  
*Salmaõ,*  
*Camaraõ,*  
*Caranguêjo,*  
*Amêijoa,*  
*Ervilhas,*  
*Fávas,*  
*Espináfres,*  
*Alcachófras,*  
*Espárgo,*  
*Côuve,*  
*Repólho,*  
*Nábos,*  
*Grêlos de côuve,*  
*Côuve crêspa,*  
*Couve Flôr,*  
*Beldroêgas,*  
*Cenôuras,*  
*Célgas, or acélgas,*  
*Tomátes,*

A sole.  
A lobster.  
A sturgeon; some call it  
shad-fish.  
A mullet.  
A byrt *or* turbot.  
A sort of little mackarel.  
A mackarel.  
A pilchard.  
Dry cod.  
A herring.  
A flying-fish.  
A red herring.  
A hard-rowed herring.  
A kind of cod-fish.  
A gudgeon.  
An oyster.  
A lamprey.  
A lampern.  
A porpoise.  
Pourcontrell *or* many-feet.  
Perch.  
A tench.  
A trout.  
A tunny-fish.  
A salmon.  
A shrimp, *or* pawn.  
A crab.  
A cockle.  
Pease.  
Beans.  
Spinage.  
Artichokes.  
Asparagus.  
Cabbage, colewort.  
Summer cabbage.  
Turnips.  
Sprouts.  
Curled colewort.  
Cauliflower.  
Purslane.  
Carrots.  
Beets.  
Apples of love.



X Pâra temperár o Comêr.

*To season meat with.*

Sál,  
Pimênta,  
Pimentão,  
Azéite,  
Vinágre,  
Mostárda,  
Crávo da India,  
Canêla,  
Lourêiro,  
Alcapárras,  
Cogumêlos,  
Túbara da terra,  
Cebôlas,  
Ourégaõ,  
Fúncho,  
Cebolinhas,  
Alho,  
Larânjás,  
Limôens,  
Pinhôens,  
Perrexil,  
Sálsa,  
Ortelãã,  
Aipo,  
Alho pôrro,  
Coêntro,  
Açafrám,  
Cominhos,

Salt.  
Pepper.  
Cayan pepper.  
Oil.  
Vinegar.  
Mustard.  
Cloves.  
Cinnamon.  
Laurel.  
Capers.  
Mushrooms.  
Truffles.  
Onions.  
Organy.  
Fennel.  
Young onions.  
Garlick.  
Oranges.  
Lemons.  
The kernels of a pine apple.  
Wild parsley.  
Garden parsley.  
Mint.  
Cellery.  
Leek.  
Coriander.  
Saffron.  
Cummins.

Pâra Saláda.

*For a Sallad.*

Almeiraõ,  
Almeiraõ hortêense, or endívia,  
Alfáce,  
Chicória,  
Agriôens,  
Mastrúços, or mastúrços,  
Cerefólio,  
Rábaõ,

Wild succory.  
Endive.  
Lettuce.  
Succory.  
Water cresses.  
Cresses.  
Chervil.  
Raddish root.



## Pâra Sombremêsa.

*For the Dessert.*

Maçaãs,  
 Péras,  
 Péra bergamóta,  
 Pécegos,  
 Camoêza,  
 Albricóque,  
 Cerêjas,  
 Cerêjas de sáco,  
 Ginjas,  
 Ginja garrafál,

Larânja da China,  
 U'vas,  
 Pássas de úva,  
 U'va espím,  
 Fígos,  
 Fígos lâmpos,

Améixas,  
 Pássas de améixas,  
 Amóras de carga, or de sylva,  
 Amóras que nâcem de húma  
 sorte de sylva ténra,  
 Amóras que nâcem da amo-  
 rreira.

Marmélos,  
 Romããs,  
 Lima,  
 Azeitônas,  
 Amêndoas,  
 Nêspêras,  
 Melão,  
 Melancia, or balancia,  
 Castânhas,  
 Nózes,  
 Avelâns,  
 Morángos,  
 Medrônho,

Apples.  
 Pears.  
 A bergamot pear.  
 Peaches.  
 A pippin.  
 Apricot.  
 Cherries.  
 Hard cherries.  
 Sour cherries.  
 A very large sort of cherry,  
 the fruit of the dwarf  
 cherry-tree.

China-orange.  
 Grapes.  
 Raisins.  
 Gooseberries.  
 Figs.  
 The first figs that come in  
 May.

Plums.  
 Prunes.  
 Blackberries.  
 Raspberries.

Mulberries.

Quinces.  
 Pomegranates.  
 A lime.  
 Olives.  
 Almonds.  
 Medlars.  
 A melon.  
 Water-melon.  
 Chesnuts.  
 Walnuts.  
 Hazelnuts.  
 Strawberries.

A sort of fruit they have in  
 Portugal like a strawberry,  
 eating whereof, they say,  
 makes people drunk.



Tâmara,  
Fístico,  
Alfarrôba,  
Bolôta,  
Sôrva,  
Açofeifa, or maçã de náfega,  
Dôces,

A date.  
A pistache-nut.  
A carob.  
A sweet acorn.  
Service.  
A jubub.  
Sweet-meats.

Das A'rvores e Arbústos.

Damasquêiro,  
Amendoêira,  
Cerejeira,  
Castanhêiro,  
Cidrêira,  
Sorvêira,  
Palmêira,  
Figuêira,  
Marmelêiro,  
Macêira,  
Macêira da náfega,  
Romêira,  
Limoêiro,  
Amorêira,  
Olivêira,  
Nesperêira,  
Laranjeira,  
Múrta,  
Nogueira,  
Zambujêira,  
E'ra,  
Pecaguêiro,  
Rosêira,  
Ameixiêira,  
Perêira,  
Rosmaninho,  
Pinhêiro,  
Giêsta,

*Of Trees and Shrubs.*

An apricot-tree.  
An almond-tree.  
A cherry-tree.  
A chesnut-tree.  
A citron-tree.  
A service-tree.  
A palm-tree.  
A fig-tree.  
A quince-tree.  
An apple-tree.  
A jubub-tree.  
A pomegranate-tree.  
A lemon-tree.  
A mulberry-tree.  
An olive-tree.  
A medlar-tree.  
An orange-tree.  
Myrtle.  
A walnut-tree.  
A wild olive-tree.  
Ivy.  
A peach-tree.  
A rose-bush.  
A plum-tree.  
A pear-tree.  
Rosemary.  
A pine-tree.  
Broom.

Dos Reptís, e Animáes am-  
phíbios.

Minhóca,  
Serpênte,

*Of Reptiles and Amphibious  
Creatures.*

An earth-worm.  
A serpent.



|                                     |                               |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>Serpente com ázas,</i>           | A flying serpent.             |
| <i>A'spide,</i>                     | An asp.                       |
| <i>Cóbra,</i>                       | A snake.                      |
| <i>Cóbra de cascavél,</i>           | A rattle-snake.               |
| <i>Vibora,</i>                      | A viper.                      |
| <i>Lagúrto,</i>                     | A lizard.                     |
| <i>O'sga,</i>                       | An evet, eft, <i>or</i> newt. |
| <i>Alacrão,</i>                     | A scorpion.                   |
| <i>Crocodílo,</i>                   | A crocodile.                  |
| <i>Jacaré, or crocodílo da Ame-</i> | An alligator.                 |
| <i>rica.</i>                        |                               |
| <i>Castór,</i>                      | A beaver.                     |
| <i>Cágado,</i>                      | A land tortoise.              |
| <i>Lontra,</i>                      | An otter.                     |

## Dos Inséctos.

*Of Insects.*

|                                        |                          |
|----------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>Aranha,</i>                         | A spider.                |
| <i>Formiga,</i>                        | A pismire <i>or</i> ant. |
| <i>Caracól,</i>                        | A snail.                 |
| <i>Ráã,</i>                            | A frog.                  |
| <i>Sápo,</i>                           | A toad.                  |
| <i>Ouçãõ,</i>                          | Hand-worm.               |
| <i>Escaravélho,</i>                    | A beetle.                |
| <i>Carúncho,</i>                       | Wood-worm.               |
| <i>Piólho, or lagárta da hortalíça</i> | Caterpillar.             |
| <i>Cigárta,</i>                        | Grasshopper.             |
| <i>Borbolêta,</i>                      | A butterfly.             |
| <i>Grillo,</i>                         | A cricket.               |
| <i>Piólho,</i>                         | A louse.                 |
| <i>Piólho ládro,</i>                   | Crab-louse.              |
| <i>Lêndea,</i>                         | A nit.                   |
| <i>Púlga,</i>                          | A flea.                  |
| <i>Mósca,</i>                          | A fly.                   |
| <i>Persovéjo,</i>                      | A bug.                   |
| <i>Carrapáto,</i>                      | A tick.                  |
| <i>Gafanhôto,</i>                      | A locust.                |
| <i>Polilha, or tráça,</i>              | Moth.                    |
| <i>Vêspa, or abespora,</i>             | A wasp.                  |
| <i>Abélha,</i>                         | A bee.                   |
| <i>Zângo, or Zangão,</i>               | A drone.                 |
| <i>Tavaõ,</i>                          | An ox fly.               |
| <i>Bôy de Déos,</i>                    | A lady-bird.             |
| <i>Mosquito,</i>                       | A gnat.                  |



## Grãos de Parentesco.

## Degrees of Kindred.

|                                   |                          |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>Páy,</i>                       | Father.                  |
| <i>Máy,</i>                       | Mother.                  |
| <i>Avô,</i>                       | Grandfather.             |
| <i>Avó,</i>                       | Grandmother.             |
| <i>Bisavô,</i>                    | Great grandfather.       |
| <i>Bisavó,</i>                    | Great grandmother.       |
| <i>Filho,</i>                     | Son.                     |
| <i>Filha,</i>                     | Daughter.                |
| <i>Irmão,</i>                     | Brother.                 |
| <i>Irmã,</i>                      | Sister.                  |
| <i>Primogénito,</i>               | The eldest son.          |
| <i>O filho mais moço,</i>         | The youngest son.        |
| <i>Tio,</i>                       | Uncle.                   |
| <i>Tia,</i>                       | Aunt.                    |
| <i>Sobrínho,</i>                  | Nephew.                  |
| <i>Sobrinha,</i>                  | Niece.                   |
| <i>Primo,</i>                     | Cousin.                  |
| <i>Prima,</i>                     | A female cousin.         |
| <i>Primo com irmão,</i>           | The male first cousin.   |
| <i>Prima com irmã,</i>            | The female first cousin. |
| <i>Cunhado,</i>                   | Brother-in-law.          |
| <i>Cunhada,</i>                   | Sister-in-law.           |
| <i>Méyo irmão,</i>                | Half-brother.            |
| <i>Sógro,</i>                     | Father-in-law.           |
| <i>Sógra,</i>                     | Mother-in-law.           |
| <i>Padrasto,</i>                  | A step-father.           |
| <i>Madrasta,</i>                  | A step-mother.           |
| <i>Enteado,</i>                   | A step-son.              |
| <i>Enteada,</i>                   | A step-daughter.         |
| <i>Génro,</i>                     | A son-in-law.            |
| <i>Nóra,</i>                      | A daughter-in-law.       |
| <i>Néta,</i>                      | A grand-daughter.        |
| <i>Néto,</i>                      | A grand-son.             |
| <i>Bisnéto,</i>                   | A great grand son.       |
| <i>Bisnéta,</i>                   | A great grand-daughter.  |
| <i>Consórtē, masc. and fem.</i>   | A consort.               |
| <i>Marido,</i>                    | Husband.                 |
| <i>Molhér,</i>                    | Wife.                    |
| <i>Irmão gémeo,</i>               | A twin-brother.          |
| <i>Coláço, or irmão de leite,</i> | A foster-brother.        |
| <i>Bastardo,</i>                  | A bastard.               |
| <i>Compadre,</i>                  | A male-gossip.           |



|                                                             |                                                           |
|-------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Comãdre,</i>                                             | A female gossip.                                          |
| <i>Afilhádo,</i>                                            | A god-son.                                                |
| <i>Afilháda,</i>                                            | A god-daughter.                                           |
| <i>Padrinho,</i>                                            | A god-father.                                             |
| <i>Madrinha,</i>                                            | A god-mother.                                             |
| <i>O parênte,</i>                                           | A male relation.                                          |
| <i>A parênte,</i>                                           | A female relation.                                        |
| <i>Parênte por afinidãde, or</i><br><i>consanguinidade.</i> | A kin, a relation either of<br>affinity or consanguinity. |

*Dos differêntes Géneros de*  
*Estãdo de hum Hómẽm,*  
*ou de húma Molhér, e das*  
*súas qualidãdes,*

*Of the conditions of Man*  
*and Woman, as well as of*  
*their qualities.*

|                                 |                           |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>Hum hómẽm,</i>               | A man.                    |
| <i>Húma molhér,</i>             | A woman.                  |
| <i>Hum hómẽm de idãde,</i>      | An aged man.              |
| <i>Húma molhér de idãde,</i>    | An aged woman.            |
| <i>Hum vélho,</i>               | An old man.               |
| <i>Húma vélha,</i>              | An old woman.             |
| <i>Hum môço, ou mancêbo,</i>    | A young man.              |
| <i>Húma rapariga,</i>           | A girl.                   |
| <i>Hum amãnte,</i>              | A lover.                  |
| <i>Húma amíga,</i>              | A mistress.               |
| <i>Húma criança, ou meníno,</i> | A child, a little child.  |
| <i>Hum rapáz,</i>               | A boy.                    |
| <i>Hum rapazinho,</i>           | A little boy.             |
| <i>Húma menína,</i>             | A little girl.            |
| <i>Húma donzella,</i>           | A maiden.                 |
| <i>Húma vírgem,</i>             | A virgin.                 |
| <i>Amo,</i>                     | A master.                 |
| <i>Ama,</i>                     | A mistress.               |
| <i>Criãdo,</i>                  | A male-servant.           |
| <i>Criãda,</i>                  | A female-servant.         |
| <i>Cidadãõ,</i>                 | A citizen.                |
| <i>Rústico,</i>                 | A countryman.             |
| <i>Hum estrangêiro,</i>         | A stranger, or foreigner. |
| <i>Hum viúvo,</i>               | A widower.                |
| <i>Húma viúva,</i>              | A widow.                  |
| <i>Hum herdêiro,</i>            | An heir.                  |
| <i>Huma herdêira,</i>           | An heiress.               |
| <i>Soltêiro,</i>                | A bachelor.               |
| <i>Estãdo de soltêiro,</i>      | Bachelorship.             |



|                                   |                       |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>Hómem casádo,</i>              | A married man.        |
| <i>Molhér casáda,</i>             | A married woman.      |
| <i>Molhér que está de páрто.</i>  | A lying-in woman.     |
| <i>Dêstro,</i>                    | Dexterous.            |
| <i>Agúdo,</i>                     | Sharp.                |
| <i>Recatádo,</i>                  | Cautious.             |
| <i>Astúto, or velháco,</i>        | Cunning, sly, crafty. |
| <i>Espérto, or vivo,</i>          | Sprightly.            |
| <i>Dôudo,</i>                     | Mad.                  |
| <i>Maliciôso,</i>                 | Malicious.            |
| <i>Tímido,</i>                    | Fearful.              |
| <i>Valerôso,</i>                  | Brave.                |
| <i>Tônto,</i>                     | Stupid.               |
| <i>Embustéiro,</i>                | Deceitful.            |
| <i>Grosséiro,</i>                 | Clownish.             |
| <i>Bem criádo,</i>                | Well-bred.            |
| <i>Cortéz,</i>                    | Courteous.            |
| <i>Jústo,</i>                     | Just.                 |
| <i>Desavergonhádo,</i>            | Impudent.             |
| <i>Impertinénte,</i>              | Impertinent.          |
| <i>Importúno,</i>                 | Troublesome.          |
| <i>Descuidádo,</i>                | Careless.             |
| <i>Temerário,</i>                 | Rash.                 |
| <i>Constánte,</i>                 | Constant.             |
| <i>Devóto,</i>                    | Devout.               |
| <i>Diligénte,</i>                 | Diligent.             |
| <i>Misericordiôso, or compas-</i> | Merciful.             |
| <i>Paciénte,</i>                  | Patient.              |
| <i>Ambiciôso,</i>                 | Ambitious.            |
| <i>Cobiçôso,</i>                  | Covetous.             |
| <i>Sobérbo,</i>                   | Proud.                |
| <i>Cobárde,</i>                   | Coward.               |
| <i>Lisonjéiro,</i>                | A flatterer.          |
| <i>Golôso,</i>                    | Glutton.              |
| <i>Desleál,</i>                   | Treacherous.          |
| <i>Desagradecido,</i>             | Ungrateful.           |
| <i>Inhumáno,</i>                  | Inhumane.             |
| <i>Insolénte,</i>                 | Insolent.             |
| <i>Luxuriôso,</i>                 | Lewd.                 |
| <i>Teimôso,</i>                   | Positive, stubborn.   |
| <i>Preguiçôso,</i>                | Slothful.             |
| <i>Pródigo,</i>                   | Prodigal.             |
| <i>Molherêngo,</i>                | Given to women.       |
| <i>Atrevído,</i>                  | Bold.                 |
| <i>Alégre,</i>                    | Merry.                |



*Que tem ciúmes,*  
*Adúltero,*  
*Salteadôr,*  
*Matadôr,*  
*Murmuradôr,*  
*Calumniadôr,*  
*Feiticéiro,*  
*Traidôr,*  
*Malvado,*  
*Rebélde,*  
*Pérfido,*  
*Bôbo,*  
*Mentirôso,*  
*Altivo,*  
*Côxo,*  
*Estropeádo das mãos,*  
*Cégo,*  
*Môuco, or súrdo,*  
*Canhoto, or esquérdo,*  
*Múdo,*

Jealous.  
 Adulterer.  
 A highwayman.  
 A murderer.  
 A censorer.  
 A calumniator.  
 A sorcerer.  
 A traitor.  
 Wicked.  
 A rebel.  
 Perfidious.  
 A buffoon.  
 A liar.  
 Haughty.  
 Lame of the legs.  
 Lame of the hands.  
 Blind.  
 Deaf.  
 Left-handed.  
 Dumb.

Dos Moradôres de húma  
 Cidáde.

*Of the Inhabitants of a  
 City.*

*Fidálgo,*  
*Nóbre,*  
*Mecânico,*  
*Tendêiro,*  
*Mercadôr, or hómem de negó-*  
*cio,*  
*O vúlgo, or a plébe,*  
*Canálha, or a máis vil gênte*  
*da plébe,*  
*Officiál,*

A nobleman.  
 A gentleman.  
 A mechanic.  
 A shop-keeper.  
 Merchant, or tradesman.

The mob.  
 The rabble.

*Fornaléiro,*  
*Ouríves,*  
*Ouríves do ouro,*  
*Livrêiro,*  
*Impressôr,*  
*Barbéiro,*  
*Mercadôr de sêda,*  
*Mercadôr de pânno,*

A work-man, a man that  
 labours with his hands.  
 A journeyman.  
 A silver-smith.  
 A gold-smith.  
 A book-seller.  
 A printer.  
 A barber.  
 A mercer.  
 A woollen-draper.



|                                         |                            |
|-----------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>Mercadôr de pânna, de linho,</i>     | A linen-draper.            |
| <i>e roupas da India, or fan-</i>       |                            |
| <i>queiro,</i>                          |                            |
| <i>Alfayâte,</i>                        | A taylor.                  |
| <i>Alfayâte remendão,</i>               | Botcher.                   |
| <i>Costureira,</i>                      | A sempstress.              |
| <i>Chapeleiro, or Sombreirêiro,</i>     | A hatter.                  |
| <i>Sapatêiro,</i>                       | Shoemaker.                 |
| <i>Remendão, (sapatêiro),</i>           | A cobbler.                 |
| <i>Ferrêiro,</i>                        | A blacksmith.              |
| <i>Alveitâr,</i>                        | Farrier.                   |
| <i>Cerralheiro,</i>                     | A locksmith.               |
| <i>Parteira,</i>                        | A midwife.                 |
| <i>Médico,</i>                          | A physician.               |
| <i>Charlatão,</i>                       | A quack.                   |
| <i>Cirurgiâm, orurgiãõ,</i>             | A surgeon.                 |
| <i>Tira dentes,</i>                     | A tooth drawer.            |
| <i>Selleiro,</i>                        | A sadler.                  |
| <i>Carpenteiro,</i>                     | A carpenter.               |
| <i>Pioneiro, or gastadôr, (in an</i>    | A pioneer.                 |
| <i>army.)</i>                           |                            |
| <i>Padêiro,</i>                         | A baker.                   |
| <i>Carniceiro,</i>                      | A butcher.                 |
| <i>Fruteiro,</i>                        | A fruiterer.               |
| <i>Molhér que vênde verdúras</i>        | A herb woman.              |
| <i>ou ortalíças,</i>                    |                            |
| <i>Pasteleiro,</i>                      | A pastry-cook.             |
| <i>Taverneiro, or vendeiro,</i>         | A vintner.                 |
| <i>Cervejeiro, or o que faz cervêja</i> | A brewer.                  |
| <i>Estalajadeiro,</i>                   | An inn-keeper.             |
| <i>Bofarinhêiro,</i>                    | A pedlar.                  |
| <i>Relojoeiro,</i>                      | A watch-maker.             |
| <i>Pregoeiro,</i>                       | A crier.                   |
| <i>Foyeiro, or joyalheiro,</i>          | A jeweller.                |
| <i>Boticário,</i>                       | An apothecary.             |
| <i>Vidraceiro,</i>                      | A glazier.                 |
| <i>Carvoeiro,</i>                       | A coal man.                |
| <i>Fardineiro,</i>                      | A gardener.                |
| <i>Letrado,</i>                         | A lawyer.                  |
| <i>Procuradôr,</i>                      | A solicitor.               |
| <i>Advogado,</i>                        | An advocate, or a pleader. |
| <i>Juíz,</i>                            | A judge.                   |
| <i>Carcereiro,</i>                      | A gaoler.                  |
| <i>Carrasco,</i>                        | A hangman.                 |
| <i>Mariôla,</i>                         | A porter.                  |



## Os cinco Sentidos.

*The five Senses.*

*A vista,*  
*O ouvido,*  
*O olfacto,*  
*O gosto,*  
*O tacto,*

The sight.  
 The hearing.  
 The smell.  
 The taste.  
 The feeling.

## As Partes do Corpo Humano.

*The Parts of the Human Body.*

*Cabeça,*  
*Miolos, or cérebro,*  
*Toutiço,*  
*Tésta,*  
*Molleira,*  
*Fôntes,*  
*Orêlha,*  
*Cartilagem,*  
*Tímpano,*  
*Sobrancelha,*  
*Pálpebras, or Capéllas dos*  
*olhos,*  
*Pestânas,*  
*Lágrimal,*  
*Alvo do olho,*  
*Meninas dos olhos,*  
*Nariz,*  
*Maçãã do rosto,*  
*Vêntas,*  
*Sêpto, or diaphragma do*  
*nariz,*  
*A ponta do nariz,*  
*A boca,*  
*Os dentes,*  
*A gengiva,*  
*A língua,*  
*Padár, paladar, or céu da*  
*boca,*  
*Queixada,*  
*A barba,*

The head.  
 The brains.  
 The hinder part of the head.  
 The forehead.  
 The mould of the head.  
 The temples.  
 The ear.  
 The gristle, or Cartilage.  
 The drum of the ear.  
 Eye-brow.  
 The eye-lid.  
 The eye-lashes.  
 The corner of the eye.  
 The white of the eye.  
 The eye-balls.  
 The nose.  
 The ball of the cheeks.  
 The nostrils.  
 The gristle of the nose.  
 The tip of the nose.  
 The mouth.  
 The teeth.  
 The gum.  
 Tongue.  
 The roof, or palate of the  
 mouth.  
 The jaw.  
 The chin.



|                                 |                                          |
|---------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| <i>As bárbas,</i>               | The beard.                               |
| <i>Bigódes,</i>                 | Whiskers.                                |
| <i>O pescôço,</i>               | The neck.                                |
| <i>A núca,</i>                  | The nape of the head.                    |
| <i>A garganta,</i>              | The throat.                              |
| <i>Séyo,</i>                    | The bosom.                               |
| <i>Têta,</i>                    | The pap.                                 |
| <i>Pêito,</i>                   | The breast.                              |
| <i>Bico de peito,</i>           | The nipple.                              |
| <i>Estômago,</i>                | The stomach.                             |
| <i>Costélas,</i>                | The ribs.                                |
| <i>Embigo,</i>                  | The navel.                               |
| <i>Barriga,</i>                 | The belly.                               |
| <i>Verilha,</i>                 | The groin.                               |
| <i>O bráço,</i>                 | The arm.                                 |
| <i>O cotovêlo,</i>              | The elbow.                               |
| <i>Sobáco, or sováco,</i>       | The arm-pit.                             |
| <i>A mão,</i>                   | The hand.                                |
| <i>Púlso,</i>                   | The wrist.                               |
| <i>A páлма da mão,</i>          | The palm of the hand.                    |
| <i>Os dedos,</i>                | The fingers.                             |
| <i>O dedo polegár,</i>          | The thumb.                               |
| <i>O dedo mostradôr,</i>        | The fore-finger.                         |
| <i>Dêdo do méyo,</i>            | The middle-finger.                       |
| <i>Dêdo annulár,</i>            | The ring-finger.                         |
| <i>Dêdo menino, or mínimo,</i>  | The little-finger.                       |
| <i>Pôntas dos dedos,</i>        | The tips, or tops of the fingers.        |
| <i>Júntas, e nós dos dedos,</i> | The joints, and knuckles of the fingers. |
| <i>Dêdo do pé,</i>              | A toe.                                   |
| <i>A únha,</i>                  | The nail.                                |
| <i>As cóstas,</i>               | The back.                                |
| <i>Os ômbros,</i>               | The shoulders.                           |
| <i>Ilhárgas,</i>                | The sides.                               |
| <i>As nádegas,</i>              | The buttocks.                            |
| <i>Côxa,</i>                    | The thigh.                               |
| <i>Foélho,</i>                  | The knee.                                |
| <i>Barriga da pérna,</i>        | The calf of the leg.                     |
| <i>Espinháço,</i>               | The ridge-bone of the back.              |
| <i>Tornozêlo,</i>               | The ancle.                               |
| <i>O pé,</i>                    | The foot.                                |
| <i>Sóla do pé,</i>              | The sole of the foot.                    |
| <i>O coração,</i>               | The heart.                               |
| <i>Os bófes,</i>                | The lungs.                               |



*O fígado,*  
*O báculo,*  
*Os rins,*  
*A boca do estômago,*  
*As tripas,*  
*O fêl,*  
*A mãe,*  
*Bexiga,*  
*Sangue,*  
*Cúspo,*  
*Ourina,*  
*Excremento,*  
*Suor,*  
*Mônco or rânho,*  
*Lágrima,*  
*Carépa, or cáspa,*

The liver.  
 The spleen.  
 The kidneys.  
 The pit of the stomach.  
 The guts.  
 The gall.  
 The womb.  
 The bladder.  
 The blood.  
 Spittle.  
 Urine.  
 Dung.  
 Sweat or perspiration.  
 Mucus.  
 Tear.  
 Scurf.

### Dos Vestidos.

*Hum vestido,*  
*Cabelleira,*  
*Cravata,*  
*Chapéu,*  
*A'bas do chapéu,* [péo,  
*Cordaõ, ou fita, para o cha-*  
*Barrête,*  
*Capote,*  
*Gibão,*  
*Vestia, or colête,*  
*Camisa,*  
*Casaca,*  
*Casacão,*  
*Calções,*  
*Ceroulas,*  
*Méas, or méyas,*  
*Méas de cabrestílho,*  
*Ligas,*  
*Sapatos,*  
*Chinélas,*  
*Botas,*  
*Fivélas,*  
*Espôras,*  
*Punhos,*  
*Talim, or taly,*

### Of Cloaths.

A suit of cloaths.  
 A wig.  
 A cravat or neckcloth.  
 A hat.  
 The brims.  
 A hatband.  
 A cap.  
 A cloak.  
 A doublet.  
 A waistcoat.  
 A shirt.  
 A coat.  
 A great coat.  
 Breeches.  
 Drawers.  
 Stockings.  
 Stirrup stockings.  
 Garters.  
 Shoes.  
 Slippers.  
 Boots.  
 Buckles.  
 Spurs.  
 Ruffles.  
 A shoulder-belt.



*Boldrié,*  
*Expáda,*  
*Lúvas,*  
*Cínta,*  
*Lênço,*  
*Lênço para o pescôço,*  
*Samárta, or pellôte do câmpo,*

A sword-belt.  
 A sword.  
 Gloves.  
 A girdle.  
 Handkerchief.  
 A neck handkerchief.  
 A shepherd's jacket.

## Para Molhéres,

## For Women.

*Camisa de molhéres,*  
*Toucádo,*  
*Sáya,*  
*Mantilha,*

A shift, or smock.  
 A head dress.  
 A petticoat.  
 A little cloak women wear on their heads.

*Mânto,*

A mantle, a kind of cloak women wear in Portugal, covering their head and the upper part of their body.

*Aventál,*  
*Bracelêtes,*  
*Anél,*  
*Bríncos,*  
*Léque,*  
*Penteadôr,*  
*Toucádôr,*  
*Sináes,*  
*Espélho,*  
*Regálo,*  
*Espartilho,*  
*Pênte,*  
*Alfinêtes,*  
*Tesôura,*  
*Dedál,*  
*Agúlha,*  
*Fio,*  
*Fio de pérolas,*  
*Polvîlhos,*  
*Jóyas,*  
*Côr,*  
*Palito,*  
*Róca,*  
*Fúso,*  
*Almofadinha para alfinêtes,*

An apron.  
 Bracelets.  
 Ring.  
 Ear-rings.  
 A fan.  
 A combing cloth.  
 A toilet, a dressing table.  
 Patches to wear on one's face.  
 A looking-glass.  
 A muff.  
 Stays.  
 A comb.  
 Pins.  
 A pair of scissars.  
 A thimble.  
 A needle.  
 Thread.  
 A necklace of pearls.  
 Powder.  
 Jewels.  
 Paint.  
 A tooth-pick.  
 A distaff.  
 The spindle.  
 Small pincushion.



*Agúlha de toucár,*  
*Fítas,*  
*Fichú (sôrte de lénço para o*  
*pescôço,)*  
*Tenazínhas,*  
*Pendêntes,*  
*Palatína,*  
*Guárda infânte, or Guard in-*  
*fante,*  
*Véo,*  
*Rênda,*  
*Bíltros,*  
*Bíltros feitos de ôsso,*  
*A'goa da raínha de Ungria,*  
*A'goa de chêiro,*  
*Fustílho,*

Bodkin.  
 Ribbons.  
 A necklace.  
 Nippers.  
 Bob, or pendant.  
 Tippet.  
 Farthingale, or hoop.

Veil.  
 Lace.  
 Bobbins.  
 Bones.  
 Hungary water.  
 Scented water.  
 Bodice.

---

**Os dôze Signos Celêstes.**

---

*The twelve Celestial Signs.*

*Aries,*  
*Tôuro,*  
*Gémini or Géminis,*  
*Câncer,*  
*Leaõ,*  
*Virgem,*  
*Líbra,*  
*Escorpião,*  
*Sagitário,*  
*Capricórnio,*  
*Aquário,*  
*Peíxes,*

Aries, or the ram.  
 The bull.  
 The twins.  
 The crab.  
 The lion.  
 The virgin.  
 The balance.  
 The scorpion.  
 The archer.  
 The goat.  
 The water-bearer.  
 The fishes.

---

**De húma Cása e do que lhe pertênce.**

---

*Of a House, and all that be-*  
*longs to it.*

*Cása,*  
*Alicérse,*  
*Parêde,*  
*Tabíque,*  
*Páteo, or Pátio,*  
*Andár, or sobrado,*  
*Facháda,*  
*Fanélla,*

A house.  
 Foundation.  
 A wall.  
 A light brick-wall.  
 A court, or yard.  
 A floor.  
 The front.  
 A window.



|                                                  |                      |
|--------------------------------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>Abóbada,</i>                                  | A vault.             |
| <i>As escádas,</i>                               | The stairs.          |
| <i>Degrãos,</i>                                  | Steps.               |
| <i>Telhádo,</i>                                  | A tiled roof.        |
| <i>Têlhas,</i>                                   | Tiles.               |
| <i>Ladrílhos, or tijólos,</i>                    | Bricks.              |
| <i>Sála or quarto,</i>                           | A room.              |
| <i>Antecâmara,</i>                               | Antichamber.         |
| <i>Sála,</i>                                     | A hall.              |
| <i>Técto,</i>                                    | A roof.              |
| <i>Alcôva,</i>                                   | An alcove.           |
| <i>Balcão,</i>                                   | A balcony.           |
| <i>Gabinete,</i>                                 | Closet.              |
| <i>Almário,</i>                                  | A cupboard.          |
| <i>Guárda-roupa,</i>                             | Wardrobe.            |
| <i>Adéga,</i>                                    | A cellar.            |
| <i>Cozinha,</i>                                  | A kitchen.           |
| <i>Despênsa,</i>                                 | A pantry.            |
| <i>Cheminé,</i>                                  | A chimney.           |
| <i>Cavallariça,</i>                              | The stable.          |
| <i>Gallinheiro, or casa das gal-<br/>linhas,</i> | A hen-house.         |
| <i>Poleiro,</i>                                  | A hen-roost.         |
| <i>Jardim,</i>                                   | A garden.            |
| <i>Necessária,</i>                               | Water closet.        |
| <i>Casa de jantar,</i>                           | A dining-room.       |
| <i>Quarto de câma,</i>                           | Bed-chamber.         |
| <i>Andár rênte da Rúa,</i>                       | A parlour.           |
| <i>Pórta,</i>                                    | The door.            |
| <i>Postigo,</i>                                  | A wicket.            |
| <i>Liminár, or lumiár,</i>                       | The threshold.       |
| <i>Clara bóia,</i>                               | Sky-lights.          |
| <i>Algeróz,</i>                                  | The gutter tile.     |
| <i>Beiras, or ábas do telhádo,</i>               | The eaves.           |
| <i>A couceira da pórta,</i>                      | The hinges.          |
| <i>Fechadúra,</i>                                | A lock.              |
| <i>Cadeádo,</i>                                  | A padlock.           |
| <i>Ferrólho,</i>                                 | The bolt.            |
| <i>Trânca da pórta,</i>                          | The bar of a door.   |
| <i>Cão da chave,</i>                             | The pipe of a key.   |
| <i>Chave méstra,</i>                             | A master-key.        |
| <i>Guárdas da fechadúra,</i>                     | The wards of a lock. |
| <i>Palhetão da chave,</i>                        | Key bit.             |



|                                  |                                    |
|----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>Vidraça,</i>                  | The glass of a window.             |
| <i>Escáda feita a carracól,</i>  | A winding stair-case.              |
| <i>Escáda secreta,</i>           | Back-stairs, a private stair-case. |
| <i>Víga,</i>                     | A beam.                            |
| <i>Parêde méstra,</i>            | The main wall.                     |
| <i>Parêdes méyas,</i>            | The party walls.                   |
| <i>A'rcá,</i>                    | Chest.                             |
| <i>Câma,</i>                     | Bed.                               |
| <i>Sobrecéo da câma,</i>         | The bed's tester.                  |
| <i>Cortinas da câma,</i>         | Bed curtains.                      |
| <i>Lençóes,</i>                  | Sheets.                            |
| <i>Cabeceira da câma,</i>        | The bed's head.                    |
| <i>Péz da câma,</i>              | Bed's feet.                        |
| <i>Cólcha,</i>                   | Counterpane, a quilt.              |
| <i>Colcháõ,</i>                  | A matrass.                         |
| <i>Cobertór,</i>                 | A blanket.                         |
| <i>Cobertór de felpa,</i>        | A rug.                             |
| <i>Cama de Armação,</i>          | Bedstead.                          |
| <i>Travessêiro,</i>              | A pillow.                          |
| <i>Tapête,</i>                   | A carpet.                          |
| <i>Tapeçaria,</i>                | Tapestry.                          |
| <i>Pederneira,</i>               | A flint.                           |
| <i>I'sca,</i>                    | Tinder.                            |
| <i>Mécha,</i>                    | Match.                             |
| <i>Enxergaõ,</i>                 | A straw-bed.                       |
| <i>Esteira,</i>                  | A mat.                             |
| <i>Cáens da cheminé,</i>         | Hand-irons.                        |
| <i>Fólles,</i>                   | Bellows.                           |
| <i>Tenázés,</i>                  | Tongs.                             |
| <i>Férra,</i>                    | A shovel.                          |
| <i>Abãno or abanadór,</i>        | Fire-pan.                          |
| <i>Panélla,</i>                  | A pipkin.                          |
| <i>Têsto,</i>                    | The pot-lid.                       |
| <i>A'za da panélla,</i>          | The ear of a pot, or pipkin.       |
| <i>Férro para atiçar o lume,</i> | A poker.                           |
| <i>Escumadeira,</i>              | A skimmer.                         |
| <i>Colhér grande,</i>            | A ladle.                           |
| <i>Caldeira,</i>                 | A kettle.                          |
| <i>Sertãã, or frigideira,</i>    | A frying pan.                      |
| <i>Coadór,</i>                   | A cullender, or strainer.          |
| <i>Gréllhas,</i>                 | Gridiron.                          |
| <i>Rálo,</i>                     | A grater.                          |



*Espêto,*  
*Almofariz,*

*Maõ do almofariz,*  
*Redôma,*  
*Bálde,*  
*Sabaõ,*  
*Rodilha,*  
*Esfregão,*  
*Fôrno,*  
*Pá do fôrno,*  
*Vascúlho para alimpár o fôr-*  
*no,*

*Farinha,*  
*Trinchãnte,*  
*Mordômo,*  
*Escudeiro,*  
*Camarêiro mór,*  
*Escôva,*  
*Vassôura,*  
*Despenseiro,*  
*Págem,*  
*Lacáyo,*  
*Cocheiro,*  
*Cocheira,*  
*Môço dos cavállos, ou da es-*  
*trebaria,*

*Copeiro,*  
*Escudeiro de húma fidálga,*  
*A'mo, ou senhôr da cása,*  
*A'ma, ou senhôra da cása,*  
*Grímpa,*

A spit.  
A mortar wherein things are  
pounded.  
A pestle.  
A vial,  
A bucket, or pail.  
Soap.  
A kitchen towel.  
A dish-clout.  
Oven.  
The peel of the oven.  
A maukin, a coal-rake to  
make clean an oven.  
Meal-flour.  
A carver.  
A steward.  
A valet-de-chambre.  
A chamberlain.  
A brush.  
A broom.  
A steward.  
A page.  
A footman.  
A coachman.  
A coach-house.  
A groom.  
  
A butler.  
A lady's gentleman usher.  
The master of the house.  
The mistress of the house.  
Weather-cock.

## Côres.

*Brânco,*  
*Azúl,*  
*Azúl celéste,*  
*Azúl ferrête,*  
*Azúl cláro,*  
*Côr de camúrça,*  
*Amarélo,*  
*Cor de rósa,*  
*Côr de pálha,*

## Colours.

White.  
Blue.  
Sky-colour.  
Dark blue.  
Light blue.  
Light yellow.  
Yellow.  
Rosy colour.  
Straw colour.



|                                                |                               |
|------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>Vérde,</i>                                  | Green.                        |
| <i>Côr de vérde mar, or vérde<br/>cláro,</i>   | Sea-green.                    |
| <i>Côr vermélha, or Incarnada,</i>             | Red colour.                   |
| <i>Côr vermélha muito víva, or<br/>carmin.</i> | Carmine, a bright red colour. |
| <i>Côr de carne,</i>                           | Flesh colour.                 |
| <i>Côr carmesin,</i>                           | Crimson red.                  |
| <i>Côr negra, or prêta,</i>                    | Black colour.                 |
| <i>Côr de mél,</i>                             | A dark yellow.                |
| <i>Fúrta côres,</i>                            | A deep changeable colour.     |
| <i>Côr víva,</i>                               | A lively and gay colour.      |
| <i>Côr triste,</i>                             | A dull colour.                |
| <i>Côr escúra,</i>                             | A dark colour.                |
| <i>Côr carregáda,</i>                          | A deep colour.                |
| <i>Côr de fogo,</i>                            | Fire colour.                  |
| <i>Párido,</i>                                 | Grey.                         |
| <i>Côr de cinza,</i>                           | Ash colour.                   |
| <i>Escarláta,</i>                              | Scarlet.                      |
| <i>Leonádo,</i>                                | Tawney.                       |
| <i>Côr de laránja,</i>                         | Orange colour.                |
| <i>Côr de azeitóna,</i>                        | Olive colour.                 |
| <i>Rôxo,</i>                                   | Purple, violet.               |
| <i>Rôxo, or côr de auróra,</i>                 | Aurora colour.                |

*Rôxo* sometimes signifies *red* or *rosy colour*; particularly in poetry, as in *Camóens*, Canto I. Stanza 82.

*Para que ao Portuguêz se lhe tornásse,  
Em rôxo sângue a ágoa, que bebêsse.*

## Animáes.

*Bêsta doméstica,*  
*Bêsta bráva,*  
*Bêsta de cárga,*  
*Bêsta de sélla,*  
*Gádo,*  
*Gádo grósso,*  
*Gádo miúdo,*  
*Rebânho,*  
*Manáda de gádo grósso,*  
*Tôuro,*  
*Bezerra,*

## Beasts.

Tame beast.  
 A wild beast.  
 A beast of burthen.  
 A beast for the saddle.  
 Cattle.  
 Great cattle.  
 Small cattle.  
 A flock.  
 A herd of big cattle.  
 A bull.  
 Heifer.



*Bizétro,*

A calf, a steer, a young bullock.

*Bôy,*

An ox.

*Búrro,*

An ass.

*Búrta,*

A she-ass.

*Pôrco,*

A hog, or pig.

*Pôrca,*

A sow.

*Fáca,*

A young mare, also a nag.

*E'goa,*

A mare.

*Cría,*

A foal, a filly.

*Pótra,*

A colt, or young horse.

*Cavállo,*

A horse.

*Cavállo anaõ,*

A nag.

*Cavállo de pósta,*

A post horse.

*Garranhão, or cavállo de  
lançamêto,*

A stallion.

*Cavállo de aluguel,*

A hackney-horse.

*Cavállo de côche,*

A coach-horse.

*Cavállo que anda de chôuto,*

A jolting-horse.

*Cavállo pequêno que serve  
para senhôras,*

A palfrey.

*Cavállo que tôma o freio éntre  
dêntes,*

A horse that champs the bit.

*Cavállo ríjo da bôca,*

A hard-mouthed horse.

*Cavállo dôce de freio,*A tender-mouthed horse, one  
that easily submits to the curb.*Cavállo que tem boa bôca,*

A horse that will eat any thing.

*Cavállo que tropêssa,*

A stumbling-horse.

*Cavállo espantadiço,*

A startling-horse.

*Cavállo ardênte, or fogôzo,*

A fiery horse.

*Cavállo que mórde e dá côuces,*

A biting and kicking horse.

*Cavállo rebellão,*

A untamed horse.

*Cavállo que não sóffre âncas,*A horse that will not carry  
double.*Cavállo mal mandádo,*

A restive horse.

*Cavállo de albárda,*

A pack-horse.

*Cavállo de cârro,*

A cart-horse.

*Cavállo de sêlla,*

A saddle-horse.

*Cavállo de corréo,*

A race-horse.

*Cavállo de guérta,*

A war-horse.

*Cavállo ajaezádo,*

A horse with all his furniture.

*Cavállo de Barbaría,*

A Moorish horse, a barb.

*Cavállo capádo,*

A gelding.

*Cavállo sem ser capádo,*

A stone-horse.

*Cavállo que dá aos fôlles,*

A broken winded horse.



|                                                |                                   |
|------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>Cavállo quatrálvo,</i>                      | A horse that has four white feet. |
| <i>Cavállo alazão,</i>                         | A sorrel horse.                   |
| <i>Cavállo báio,</i>                           | A bay horse.                      |
| <i>Cavállo castânho,</i>                       | A chesnut-coloured horse.         |
| <i>Cavállo báio e castânho,</i>                | A chesnut bay.                    |
| <i>Cavállo rocim,</i>                          | A worthless nag, a poor jade.     |
| <i>Cavállo remendádo,</i>                      | A dapple horse.                   |
| <i>Cavállo ruão or rússu porcel-lâno,</i>      | A dapple-grey horse.              |
| <i>Cavállo que s'ffre ancas,</i>               | A double horse.                   |
| <i>Cavállo trotao,</i>                         | A trotting-horse.                 |
| <i>Cavállo que sêrve para andár á cáça,</i>    | A hunter.                         |
| <i>Cavállo que anda de furta passo,</i>        | A pad, an easy-paced horse.       |
| <i>Cão,</i>                                    | A dog.                            |
| <i>Cão de quinta,</i>                          | A house dog.                      |
| <i>Cão de cáça,</i>                            | A hound.                          |
| <i>Cão de ágoa,</i>                            | A water spaniel.                  |
| <i>Cão de gádo,</i>                            | A shepherd's dog.                 |
| <i>Cão de móstra, pôdengo, or perdigueiro,</i> | A setting dog.                    |
| <i>Cão de fila,</i>                            | A great cur, a mastiff dog.       |
| <i>Cão sacadôr,</i>                            | A dog tumbler.                    |
| <i>Cão de búscá,</i>                           | A finder.                         |
| <i>Alão,</i>                                   | A bull-dog.                       |
| <i>Gálgo,</i>                                  | A greyhound.                      |
| <i>Cão para caçar rapôzas e lôntras,</i>       | A terrier.                        |
| <i>Cachorrinho,</i>                            | A little puppy, a whelp.          |
| <i>Cachorrinho de frálda,</i>                  | A lap-dog.                        |
| <i>Cachorro,</i>                               | A little dog.                     |
| <i>Mácho, or múlo,</i>                         | A he-mule.                        |
| <i>Múla,</i>                                   | A she-mule.                       |
| <i>Côrça,</i>                                  | A she-deer, a doe.                |
| <i>Côrça de tres ánnos,</i>                    | A spade.                          |
| <i>Côrça de dóus ánnos,</i>                    | A pricket.                        |
| <i>Côrça,</i>                                  | A wild buck.                      |
| <i>Côrça ou córa de hum áнно,</i>              | A fawn.                           |
| <i>Gâmo,</i>                                   | A fallow deer.                    |
| <i>Veádo,</i>                                  | A stag.                           |
| <i>Cábra montêz,</i>                           | A wild she goat.                  |
| <i>Veádo grãde de cinco ánnos,</i>             | A hart.                           |
| <i>Doninha,</i>                                | A weasel.                         |
| <i>Teixúgo, or texúgo,</i>                     | A badger.                         |



|                                    |                                            |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------|
| <i>Gáto de algália,</i>            | A civet cat.                               |
| <i>Doninha de rabomúi felpúdo,</i> | A squirrel.                                |
| <i>a módo de rapôsa,</i>           |                                            |
| <i>Elephãte,</i>                   | An elephant.                               |
| <i>Foinha, fuinha,</i>             | A marten, <i>or</i> martern.               |
| <i>Armínho,</i>                    | An ermin.                                  |
| <i>Ouriço cacheiro,</i>            | An hedge-hog.                              |
| <i>Arganáç,</i>                    | A dormouse.                                |
| <i>Ráto,</i>                       | A rat.                                     |
| <i>Rapôsa,</i>                     | A fox.                                     |
| <i>Lôbo,</i>                       | A wolf.                                    |
| <i>Ráta da India,</i>              | A rat of India of the bigness<br>of a cat. |
| <i>Foraõ,</i>                      | A ferret.                                  |
| <i>Toupeira,</i>                   | A mole.                                    |
| <i>Leaõ,</i>                       | A lion.                                    |
| <i>Leóa,</i>                       | A lioness.                                 |
| <i>Zibelína,</i>                   | A musk cat.                                |
| <i>Leopádo,</i>                    | A leopard.                                 |
| <i>Urso,</i>                       | A he-bear.                                 |
| <i>Ursa,</i>                       | A she-bear.                                |
| <i>Urso pequêno,</i>               | A bear's cub.                              |
| <i>Tigre,</i>                      | A tiger.                                   |
| <i>Pôrco montêz,</i>               | A wild bear.                               |

Das côusas do Câmpo.

*Of country affairs.*

|                                  |                                                                 |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Cása do câmpo, or quinta,</i> | A country house.                                                |
| <i>Cása de lavradôr,</i>         | A farm-house.                                                   |
| <i>Quinteiro,</i>                | A husbandman, a farmer.                                         |
| <i>Boyeiro,</i>                  | A herdsman, he that ploughs<br>with oxen, <i>or</i> tends them. |
| <i>Vaqueiro,</i>                 | A cow-keeper.                                                   |
| <i>Porqueiro,</i>                | A swine-herd.                                                   |
| <i>Pastôr,</i>                   | A shepherd.                                                     |
| <i>Surrão,</i>                   | A scrip, <i>or</i> small bag.                                   |
| <i>Cajado,</i>                   | A shepherd's hook.                                              |
| <i>Pastôra,</i>                  | A shepherdess.                                                  |
| <i>Herdáde,</i>                  | A great <i>or</i> large field, a wide<br>arable ground.         |
| <i>Hortolão,</i>                 | A gardener.                                                     |
| <i>Hortalíça,</i>                | All sorts of herbage.                                           |
| <i>Cavadôr,</i>                  | A ploughman.                                                    |
| <i>Vinhateiro,</i>               | A vine dresser.                                                 |



*Lavradôr,*

A farmer, one who cultivates ground, whether his own or another's.

*Páastos,*

Feeding ground, pasture, sheep-walk.

*Arádo,*

A plough.

*Férro do arádo,*

The plough-share.

*Rábo do arádo,*

The plough-handle.

*Abegaõ, or official que faz arados,*

A plough-wright.

*Aguilháda,*

A goad.

*Ensínho,*

A rake.

*Gráde,*

A harrow.

*Semeadôr,*

A sower.

*Roçadôr,*

A weeder.

*Fôuce roçadôura,*

A weeding-hook.

*Fôuce,*

A scythe, or sickle.

*Podáõ,*

A pruning-knife.

*Segadôr,*

A reaper, or mower, harvest man.

*Mangoál,*

A flail.

*Forcádo,*

A prong to cast up sheaves of corn with.

*Caçadôr,*

A huntsman.

*Pescadôr,*

A fisherman.

*Rêgo,*

A furrow.

*Terra que fica levantáda entre dõus rêgos,*

A balk, or ridge of land between two furrows.

*Outeiro,*

A hill.

*Mõnte, or montânha,*

A mountain.

*Válle,*

A valley.

*Lagõa,*

A moor, fen, or marsh, a standing water, but sometimes dry.

*Lágo,*

A lake or standing pool, but always full of water.

*Ribeiro,*

A brook, a stream of water, with a gentle or natural current.

*Ribeirinho,*

A rivulet, a streamlet.

*Plãno, or planície,*

A plain.

*Pênha, or rócha,*

A rock.

*Penhásco,*

A great rock.

*Desérto,*

A desert or wilderness.



|                                                        |                                                 |
|--------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Despenhadeiro,</i>                                  | A precipice.                                    |
| <i>Bósque,</i>                                         | A wood.                                         |
| <i>Bósque pequêno,</i>                                 | A grove, or thicket.                            |
| <i>Pedáço de chaõ sem árvores,</i>                     | A glade in a wood.                              |
| <i>dêntro de hum bósque,</i>                           |                                                 |
| <i>Pomár, or vergél,</i>                               | An orchard.                                     |
| <i>Prádo,</i>                                          | A meadow.                                       |
| <i>Ramáda,</i>                                         | A bower.                                        |
| <i>Fônte,</i>                                          | A fountain.                                     |
| <i>Trigo,</i>                                          | Wheat.                                          |
| <i>Trigo candiál,</i>                                  | The best wheat.                                 |
| <i>Trigo bretânha,</i>                                 | Red wheat.                                      |
| <i>Centêo,</i>                                         | Rye.                                            |
| <i>Feráã,</i>                                          | Meslin, mixed corn, as wheat and rye, &c.       |
| <i>Tremêz,</i>                                         | The corn of three months growth.                |
| <i>Espêlta,</i>                                        | Spelt.                                          |
| <i>Espíga,</i>                                         | Ear of corn.                                    |
| <i>Cabeça da espíga,</i>                               | The grain at the top of the ear of corn.        |
| <i>Báinha, dôn-de sáhe a espíga depôis de formáda,</i> | The husk in which the ear of corn is lodged.    |
| <i>Legúmes,</i>                                        | Pulse.                                          |
| <i>Graõs de bico,</i>                                  | Spanish pease.                                  |
| <i>Lentilha,</i>                                       | A lentil.                                       |
| <i>Tramóço, or tremóço,</i>                            | A lupine.                                       |
| <i>Feijôens,</i>                                       | French-beans.                                   |
| <i>Feijão sapáta, or bájes,</i>                        | Kidney-beans.                                   |
| <i>Feijão fradinho,</i>                                | A sort of small French beans with a black spot. |
| <i>Chícharo,</i>                                       | Chicklings, a sort of peas.                     |
| <i>Carrêta,</i>                                        | A waggon.                                       |
| <i>Cárrro,</i>                                         | A cart.                                         |
| <i>Róda,</i>                                           | A wheel.                                        |
| <i>Caímbas,</i>                                        | The felloes of the wheel.                       |
| <i>E'ixo,</i>                                          | The axle-tree of a wheel.                       |
| <i>Ráyo da róda,</i>                                   | The spoke of a wheel.                           |
| <i>Currál de bóys,</i>                                 | An ox-stall.                                    |
| <i>Currál de ovêlhas,</i>                              | A sheep-fold.                                   |
| <i>Currál de cábras,</i>                               | A house for goats.                              |
| <i>Chiqueíro de pórcos,</i>                            | A hog's-sty.                                    |
| <i>E'rua,</i>                                          | Grass.                                          |
| <i>Trigo em érua,</i>                                  | Green corn.                                     |



*Seára,*  
*Tárro,*  
*Cíncho,*

*Enxada,*  
*Enxadaõ, or alvião,*  
*Cãga,*  
*Cangálhos,*

*Sébe,*  
*O que faz sébes,*  
*Fouce roçadoura de que úzaõ*  
*pâra fazer sébes,*  
*Têmpo de tosquia e a festa que*  
*nêlle fazem os rústicos,*  
*Cantiga dos segadôres despóis,*  
*de acabâdo o têmpo da*  
*sêga,*

*Sárça,*  
*Máta,*  
*Máto,*  
*Leira, or taboleiro,*  
*Chôrro de ágoa,*  
*Verêda,*  
*Rásto,*  
*Cêsta,*  
*Cabáz,*  
*Cabãna, or cheupâna,*  
*Cabáço,*

Standing corn.  
A milk-pail.  
A cheese-vat, to make cheese  
in.

A mattock, a hoe.  
A mattock.  
A yoke for oxen.  
The arms of the yoke used  
for oxen.

A hedge or fence.  
Hedger.  
Hedging bill.

The sheep-shearing, the time  
of shearing sheep.  
Harvest home.

A bramble.  
A thicket, a forest.  
A heath.  
A bed in a garden.  
A water-spout.  
A path.  
The track.  
A basket.  
A frail, a pannier.  
A cottage, a hut.  
A dry hollow gourd used to  
keep seeds in.

---

**Côusas pertencêntes à  
Guerra.**

*Serviço ou vida militár,*  
*Militár ou servir na guerra,*  
*Artilharía, artelharía, ou*  
*artilhería,*  
*Canhão, ou peça de artilharía,*  
*Canhão de ferro,*  
*Canhão de brônze,*  
*Alma do canhão,*  
*Fogão do canhão,*  
*Culátra do canhão,*

---

**Things relating to War.**

Warfare.  
To serve in the army.  
Artillery.  
A cannon.  
Iron cannon.  
Brass cannon.  
The mouth of a cannon.  
The touch-hole of a cannon.  
The breech of a cannon.



|                                      |                                                      |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Botão, ou extremidade da</i>      | The pummel.                                          |
| <i>culátra,</i>                      |                                                      |
| <i>Bálas encadeadas,</i>             | Chain-shots.                                         |
| <i>Bála de canhão,</i>               | A cannon bullet, cannon-ball, <i>or</i> cannon-shot. |
| <i>Carrêta do canhão,</i>            | The carriage of a cannon.                            |
| <i>Pólvora,</i>                      | Gun-powder.                                          |
| <i>Méyo canhão,</i>                  | A demi-cannon.                                       |
| <i>Canhão dobrado,</i>               | A double cannon.                                     |
| <i>Canhão para bater húma</i>        | A battering cannon.                                  |
| <i>praça,</i>                        |                                                      |
| <i>Canhão, de vinte e quatro,</i>    | A twenty-four pounder.                               |
| <i>Calibre,</i>                      | Caliber.                                             |
| <i>Carregár,</i>                     | To load.                                             |
| <i>Escorvár,</i>                     | To prime.                                            |
| <i>Fazér pontaria,</i>               | To level.                                            |
| <i>Petréchos, or munições de</i>     | Military stores.                                     |
| <i>guerra,</i>                       |                                                      |
| <i>Encravár húma peça,</i>           | To nail up a gun.                                    |
| <i>Descavalgár húma peça,</i>        | To dismount a gun.                                   |
| <i>Desparár,</i>                     | To fire.                                             |
| <i>Tiro de peça,</i>                 | A cannon shot.                                       |
| <i>Trém de artilharia,</i>           | The train of artillery.                              |
| <i>Colubrina,</i>                    | A culverin.                                          |
| <i>Falconête,</i>                    | A falconet.                                          |
| <i>Petárdo,</i>                      | A petard.                                            |
| <i>Pedreiro,</i>                     | A swivel gun, pederero, <i>or</i> paterero.          |
| <i>Bômba,</i>                        | A bomb.                                              |
| <i>Bombárda,</i>                     | A great gun, a bombard.                              |
| <i>Morteíro,</i>                     | A mortar-piece.                                      |
| <i>Granáda,</i>                      | A grenade.                                           |
| <i>Espingárda,</i>                   | A firelock.                                          |
| <i>Pistóla,</i>                      | A pistol.                                            |
| <i>Carabina,</i>                     | A carabine.                                          |
| <i>Mosquête,</i>                     | A musket.                                            |
| <i>Machadinha,</i>                   | A battle-ax.                                         |
| <i>Lança,</i>                        | A lance.                                             |
| <i>Alabárda,</i>                     | An halbert.                                          |
| <i>Partasána,</i>                    | A partizan.                                          |
| <i>Pique,</i>                        | A pike.                                              |
| <i>Calár os piques para resistir</i> | To present the pikes against                         |
| <i>á cavalaria,</i>                  | the cavalry.                                         |
| <i>Alfänge,</i>                      | Scymeter.                                            |
| <i>Espáda,</i>                       | A sword.                                             |



*Disembainhár a espáda,*  
*Púnho da espáda,*  
*Maçãa da espáda,*  
*Guarnição da espáda,*  
*Fólha da espáda,*  
*Metêr mão á espáda,*

*Matár,*  
*Ferir,*  
*Desbaratár,*  
*Saqueár,*  
*Punhál,*  
*Bayonêta,*  
*Calár a bayonêta,*  
*Capacête,*  
*Morrião,*  
*Visêira,*  
*Gorjál, or góla,*  
*Peito de armas,*  
*Couráça,*  
*Espaldár,*  
*Cossolête,*  
*Broquél,*  
*Escúdo,*  
*Adága,*  
*Sáya de málha,*  
*Réy de armas,*

*Aráuto,*  
*Generál,*  
*Tenênte generál,*  
*Sargênto mór de batálha,*  
*Sargênto,*  
*Sargênto mór,*  
*Mariscál, or marichál,*  
*Mêstre de câmpo generál,*  
*Coronél,*  
*Mêstre de câmpo,*  
*Coronél de infantaria,*  
*Officiál de guérrea,*  
*Brigadeiro,*  
*Tenênte coronél,*  
*Ajudânte de sargênto mor,*  
*Ajudânte de tenênte de mêstre*  
*de câmpo,*

To unsheath the sword.  
 The handle of a sword.  
 The pommel of a sword.  
 The hilt of a sword.  
 The blade of a sword.  
 To clap one's hand on one's sword.  
 To kill.  
 To wound.  
 To rout.  
 To sack.  
 A poniard.  
 A bayonet.  
 To fix the bayonets.  
 A helmet.  
 A morrion.  
 The vizor of an helmet.  
 The gorget.  
 A breast-plate.  
 A cuirass.  
 The back-plate.  
 A corslet.  
 A buckler.  
 A shield.  
 Dagger, a short sword.  
 A coat of mail.  
 The king at arms, or king of heralds.  
 A herald.  
 A general.  
 A lieutenant general.  
 A major general.  
 A serjeant.  
 Major.  
 Marshal.  
 Master de camp general.  
 Colonel.  
 Master de camp.  
 Colonel of foot.  
 An officer.  
 Brigadier.  
 Lieutenant-colonel.  
 Adjutant.  
 Aid de camp.



|                                                        |                                               |
|--------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------|
| <i>Capitão,</i>                                        | Captain.                                      |
| <i>Pôsto de capitão,</i>                               | Captaincy or captainship.                     |
| <i>Tenênte,</i>                                        | Lieutenant.                                   |
| <i>Cornêta,</i>                                        | Cornet.                                       |
| <i>Alféres,</i>                                        | Ensign.                                       |
| <i>Bandeiras,</i>                                      | Colours.                                      |
| <i>Estandárte,</i>                                     | Standard.                                     |
| <i>Alféres de cavalaria que tráz<br/>o estandárte,</i> | Standard-bearer.                              |
| <i>Pagadôr,</i>                                        | Pay-master.                                   |
| <i>Provedôr dos mantimêntos<br/>de húma armáda,</i>    | Purveyor.                                     |
| <i>Commissário,</i>                                    | Commissary.                                   |
| <i>Commissário gerál,</i>                              | Commissary-general.                           |
| <i>Engenheiro,</i>                                     | Engineer.                                     |
| <i>Quartel mestre,</i>                                 | Quarter-master.                               |
| <i>Cábo de esquádra,</i>                               | Corporal.                                     |
| <i>Tambôr, ou caixa,</i>                               | Drum.                                         |
| <i>Tambôr ou o que tóca tambôr,</i>                    | A drummer.                                    |
| <i>Baquêtas,</i>                                       | Drum-sticks.                                  |
| <i>Cordéis de tambôr,</i>                              | Drum-strings.                                 |
| <i>Tóques do tambôr,</i>                               | The beats of a drum.                          |
| <i>Tócár o tambôr,</i>                                 | To beat a drum.                               |
| <i>Alvoráda, ou generál,</i>                           | The general, one of the beats<br>of the drum. |
| <i>Móstra,</i>                                         | Muster.                                       |
| <i>Passar móstra,</i>                                  | To muster, to review forces.                  |
| <i>Trombêta,</i>                                       | A trumpet.                                    |
| <i>Trombeteiro, ou trombêta,</i>                       | A trumpeter.                                  |
| <i>Pífano,</i>                                         | A fifer or fife.                              |
| <i>Sôlto,</i>                                          | Wages, or pay for soldiers.                   |
| <i>Soldádo,</i>                                        | A soldier.                                    |
| <i>Soldádo que está de sentinella,</i>                 | Soldier on duty.                              |
| <i>Entrár de guárda,</i>                               | To mount, or go upon the<br>guard.            |
| <i>Sentinella,</i>                                     | Duty, centinel.                               |
| <i>Rendêr a guárda, sentinellas,<br/>&amp;c.</i>       | To relieve the guard, &c.                     |
| <i>Blocár, or bloqueár,</i>                            | To block up.                                  |
| <i>Infánte, or soldádo de pé,</i>                      | A foot soldier.                               |
| <i>Granadeiro,</i>                                     | Grenadier.                                    |
| <i>Bigódes,</i>                                        | Whiskers.                                     |
| <i>Dragão,</i>                                         | Dragoon.                                      |
| <i>Soldádo de cavállo,</i>                             | Trooper, or horse soldier.                    |
| <i>Montár a cavállo,</i>                               | To get on horseback.                          |



|                                       |                                   |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>Abeár-se,</i>                      | To alight.                        |
| <i>Guárda da pessoa real, or</i>      | Life-guard-man.                   |
| <i>archeiro,</i>                      |                                   |
| <i>Couracêiro,</i>                    | Cuirassier.                       |
| <i>Mosquetêiro,</i>                   | Musketeer.                        |
| <i>Fuzilêiro,</i>                     | Fuselier.                         |
| <i>Alabardeiro,</i>                   | Halberdier.                       |
| <i>Genísero,</i>                      | Janissary.                        |
| <i>Soldádo armádo com lança,</i>      | A spearman.                       |
| <i>Soldádo que léva pique, or</i>     | A pikeman.                        |
| <i>piquêiro,</i>                      |                                   |
| <i>Besteiro, ou soldádo que pelê-</i> | Cross-bow-man.                    |
| <i>ja com bêsta,</i>                  |                                   |
| <i>Pionêiro,</i>                      | A pioneer.                        |
| <i>Mineiro, ou minadôr,</i>           | Miner.                            |
| <i>Bombardeiro,</i>                   | A bombardier.                     |
| <i>O tiro da artilharia, ou o</i>     | Gunshot, or the space to          |
| <i>espáço que a bala despa-</i>       | which a shot can be thrown.       |
| <i>rada côrre; Alcance,</i>           |                                   |
| <i>Artilheiro,</i>                    | Matross, also a gunner, <i>or</i> |
|                                       | cannoneer.                        |
| <i>A árte da artilharia,</i>          | Gunnery.                          |
| <i>Generál de artilharia,</i>         | General of the artillery.         |
| <i>Voluntário,</i>                    | A volunteer.                      |
| <i>Recrútas,</i>                      | Recruits.                         |
| <i>Exploradôr, ou corredôr de</i>     | Scout.                            |
| <i>exército,</i>                      |                                   |
| <i>Espia,</i>                         | Spy.                              |
| <i>O que leva víveres ao exér-</i>    | Sutler.                           |
| <i>cito, ou vivandeiro,</i>           |                                   |
| <i>Soldádo que faz correrias,</i>     | A marauder, a soldier that        |
|                                       | goes a marauding.                 |
| <i>Timbále or atabale,</i>            | Kettle-drum.                      |
| <i>Infanteria,</i>                    | The infantry.                     |
| <i>Cavalaria,</i>                     | Cavalry.                          |
| <i>Cavalaria ligeira,</i>             | Light-horse.                      |
| <i>Vanguárda,</i>                     | The vanguard.                     |
| <i>Côrpo de batálha,</i>              | The main body of an army.         |
| <i>Retaguárda,</i>                    | The rear.                         |
| <i>Côrpo de resêrva,</i>              | The corps de reserve.             |
| <i>Côrpo de guárda,</i>               | The corps de guard.               |
| <i>Piquête,</i>                       | The piquets of an army, <i>or</i> |
|                                       | piquet guard.                     |
| <i>Ala,</i>                           | The wing of an army.              |
| <i>Batalhão,</i>                      | Battalion.                        |



|                                       |                                                |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Destacamêto,</i>                   | Detachment.                                    |
| <i>Regimêto,</i>                      | Regiment.                                      |
| <i>Companhía,</i>                     | A company.                                     |
| <i>Esquadrão,</i>                     | A squadron.                                    |
| <i>Mochila,</i>                       | Knapsack.                                      |
| <i>Bagagem, ou bagáge,</i>            | Baggage.                                       |
| <i>Batedôres do câmpo,</i>            | Discoverers.                                   |
| <i>Almazém, ou armazém,</i>           | Magazines.                                     |
| <i>Murálhas,</i>                      | Walls.                                         |
| <i>Améa, ou amêya,</i>                | A battlement.                                  |
| <i>Parapeito,</i>                     | The parapet.                                   |
| <i>Castéllo,</i>                      | A castle.                                      |
| <i>Fôrte,</i>                         | A fort.                                        |
| <i>Fortalêza,</i>                     | A fortress.                                    |
| <i>Fortificação,</i>                  | Fortification.                                 |
| <i>Tôrre,</i>                         | A tower.                                       |
| <i>Citadélla, or cidadélla,</i>       | A citadel.                                     |
| <i>Baluárte,</i>                      | Bulwark.                                       |
| <i>Fileira,</i>                       | A file.                                        |
| <i>Cortina,</i>                       | A curtain.                                     |
| <i>Méya lúá,</i>                      | Half moon.                                     |
| <i>Troneira,</i>                      | A loop-hole.                                   |
| <i>Terra-pléno,</i>                   | A platform of earth.                           |
| <i>Rebelím, ou Revelím,</i>           | A ravelin.                                     |
| <i>Contrascárpa,</i>                  | Counterscarp.                                  |
| <i>Barreira,</i>                      | A barrier.                                     |
| <i>Falsabrága,</i>                    | A faussbraye.                                  |
| <i>Fósso,</i>                         | A ditch.                                       |
| <i>Guarita,</i>                       | A centry-box.                                  |
| <i>Casamáta,</i>                      | A casemate.                                    |
| <i>Corredôr, ou estráda enco-</i>     | The covered way.                               |
| <i>Cestôens,</i>                      | Gabions.                                       |
| <i>Estacáda, ou palissáda,</i>        | A palisade.                                    |
| <i>Redúto,</i>                        | A redoubt.                                     |
| <i>Ataláya,</i>                       | A watch tower.                                 |
| <i>Mânta, ou Mantelête,</i>           | A mantelet, or cover for men<br>from the shot. |
| <i>Faxina,</i>                        | Fascines.                                      |
| <i>Mína,</i>                          | A mine.                                        |
| <i>Contramína,</i>                    | A countermine.                                 |
| <i>Fazêr voár a mína,</i>             | To spring a mine.                              |
| <i>Trincheira,</i>                    | A trench.                                      |
| <i>Abrir as trincheiras,</i>          | To open the trenches.                          |
| <i>Câmpo,</i>                         | Camp.                                          |
| <i>Viveres, ou munigôens de bôca,</i> | Provisions.                                    |



|                                                       |                                              |
|-------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|
| <i>Bisôinho,</i>                                      | A new recruit.                               |
| <i>Batálha,</i>                                       | A battle.                                    |
| <i>Dár batálha,</i>                                   | To give battle.                              |
| <i>Escaramúça,</i>                                    | A skirmish.                                  |
| <i>Sítio, or cerco,</i>                               | A siege.                                     |
| <i>Quartél,</i>                                       | A quarter.                                   |
| <i>Encamisáda,</i>                                    | A camisado.                                  |
| <i>Sortida,</i>                                       | A sally.                                     |
| <i>Batér,</i>                                         | To batter.                                   |
| <i>Brécha,</i>                                        | A breach.                                    |
| <i>Pontão,</i>                                        | A pontoon.                                   |
| <i>Escaláda,</i>                                      | An escalade.                                 |
| <i>Assálto,</i>                                       | An assault.                                  |
| <i>Dar assálto,</i>                                   | To storm.                                    |
| <i>Tomár por assálto,</i>                             | To take by storm.                            |
| <i>Chamáda,</i>                                       | The chamade.                                 |
| <i>Capitulár,</i>                                     | To capitulate.                               |
| <i>Capitulaçãõ,</i>                                   | Capitulation.                                |
| <i>Trégoas,</i>                                       | Truce.                                       |
| <i>Guarniçãõ,</i>                                     | Garrison.                                    |
| <i>Preboste,</i>                                      | A provost.                                   |
| <i>Preboste-generál,</i>                              | A provost-marshal.                           |
| <i>Léva,</i>                                          | Levy.                                        |
| <i>Levantár soldádos, ou fazer<br/>léva de gente,</i> | To raise men, to levy, or raise<br>soldiers. |
| <i>Levantár o sítio,</i>                              | To raise the siege.                          |
| <i>Levantár o câmpo,</i>                              | To decamp.                                   |
| <i>Assentár o câmpo,</i>                              | To pitch one's camp.                         |
| <i>Câmpo volánte,</i>                                 | A flying camp.                               |
| <i>Campãha,</i>                                       | A campaign.                                  |
| <i>Metér-se em campãha,</i>                           | To begin the campaign, to<br>open the field. |
| <i>Guerreâr,</i>                                      | To war, to fight.                            |
| <i>Péça de campãha,</i>                               | A field-piece.                               |
| <i>Forragem,</i>                                      | A forage.                                    |
| <i>Quarteís de invérno,</i>                           | Winter quarters.                             |
| <i>Dar quartél,</i>                                   | To give quarter.                             |
| <i>Aquartelár-se,</i>                                 | To take quarter.                             |
| <i>Marchár,</i>                                       | To march.                                    |
| <i>Marchár com bandeíras des-<br/>pregádas,</i>       | To march with flying colours.                |
| <i>Tocár a recolhêr,</i>                              | To beat tap-tow.                             |
| <i>Entregár húma práça,</i>                           | To surrender a place.                        |
| <i>Fila da vanguárda,</i>                             | Front rank.                                  |
| <i>Fila do Cêntro,</i>                                | Centre rank.                                 |



|                                |                 |
|--------------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>Fila da Rectaguárda,</i>    | Rear rank.      |
| <i>Dirêita,</i>                | Right.          |
| <i>Esquérda,</i>               | Left.           |
| <i>Têmpos,</i>                 | Motions.        |
| <i>Exercício,</i>              | Exercise.       |
| <i>Féchos,</i>                 | Lock.           |
| <i>O Caõ ou Perro da Arma,</i> | Cock.           |
| <i>Crónha,</i>                 | Butt.           |
| <i>A bôca da Arma,</i>         | Muzzle.         |
| <i>O câno,</i>                 | The barrel.     |
| <i>Varêta,</i>                 | Ramrod.         |
| <i>Gatilho,</i>                | Trigger.        |
| <i>Pellotão,</i>               | Platoon.        |
| <i>Batalhaõ,</i>               | Battalion.      |
| <i>A'la,</i>                   | Wing.           |
| <i>Devisão,</i>                | Division.       |
| <i>Linha ou Fileira,</i>       | Line.           |
| <i>Caçadôres,</i>              | Riflemen.       |
| <i>Flânco,</i>                 | Flank.          |
| <i>Estâdo Mayór,</i>           | Staff.          |
| <i>Frênte,</i>                 | Front.          |
| <i>Infantaria Ligeira,</i>     | Light infantry. |
| <i>Regulamêntos,</i>           | Regulations.    |

## Palávras de Comândo.

*Military words of Command.*

|                                  |                     |
|----------------------------------|---------------------|
| <i>Sentido,</i>                  | Attention.          |
| <i>Armas ao Hombro,</i>          | Shoulder arms.      |
| <i>Descançar sobre as Armas,</i> | Order arms.         |
| <i>Metêr as Bayonêtas,</i>       | Fix bayonets.       |
| <i>Apresentár as Armas,</i>      | Present arms.       |
| <i>Calár as Bayonêtas,</i>       | Charge bayonets.    |
| <i>Descançar as Armas,</i>       | Support arms.       |
| <i>Tirár as Bayonêtas,</i>       | Unfix bayonets.     |
| <i>Cruzár as Armas,</i>          | Pile arms.          |
| <i>Preparár,</i>                 | Make ready.         |
| <i>Carregár,</i>                 | Load.               |
| <i>Tirár o Cartúcho,</i>         | Handle cartridge.   |
| <i>Escorvâr,</i>                 | Prime.              |
| <i>Tirár as Varêtas,</i>         | Draw ramrods.       |
| <i>Atuchár o Cartucho,</i>       | Ram down cartridge. |
| <i>Fôgo,</i>                     | Fire.               |
| <i>Armas á Cara,</i>             | Present.            |



|                               |                              |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>Metêr o cartúcho,</i>      | Cast about.                  |
| <i>Fôgo por pelotões,</i>     | Firing by platoons.          |
| <i>Fôgo de Filas,</i>         | File firing.                 |
| <i>Alto,</i>                  | Halt.                        |
| <i>Formár em linha,</i>       | To form in line.             |
| <i>Fôgo obliquo,</i>          | Oblique firing.              |
| <i>Formár,</i>                | Form.                        |
| <i>Márcha,</i>                | March.                       |
| <i>Ordem cerráda,</i>         | Close order.                 |
| <i>Desfilár,</i>              | To file.                     |
| <i>Colúmna cerráda,</i>       | Close column.                |
| <i>Meia vólta á esquerda,</i> | On your left backward wheel. |
| <i>Voltár,</i>                | Wheel.                       |
| <i>Avançar,</i>               | Advance.                     |
| <i>Cerrar as Filéiras,</i>    | Close the ranks.             |

## Navegação.

## Navigation.

|                                      |                                                |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Navío,</i>                        | A ship.                                        |
| <i>Náo,</i>                          | A large ship.                                  |
| <i>Náo de guerra,</i>                | A line of battle ship.                         |
| <i>Navío de carga, ou mercantíl,</i> | A merchant-ship, a merchantman.                |
| <i>Navío veléiro,</i>                | A very good sailer, or a ship that sails well. |
| <i>Navío roncéiro,</i>               | A bad sailer.                                  |
| <i>Galé,</i>                         | A galley.                                      |
| <i>Galeáça,</i>                      | A galleass.                                    |
| <i>Galeão,</i>                       | A galleon.                                     |
| <i>Galeóta,</i>                      | A galliot, a small galley.                     |
| <i>Comitre,</i>                      | The boatswain of a galley.                     |
| <i>Fragáta,</i>                      | A frigate.                                     |
| <i>Carráca,</i>                      | A carrack.                                     |
| <i>Fústa,</i>                        | A foist.                                       |
| <i>Pináça,</i>                       | A pinnace.                                     |
| <i>Bárca de passágem,</i>            | A ferry-boat.                                  |
| <i>Bárco,</i>                        | A boat.                                        |
| <i>Bárca,</i>                        | A bark, great boat.                            |
| <i>Canóa,</i>                        | A canoe.                                       |
| <i>Gondóla,</i>                      | Gondola, a small boat, much used in Venice.    |
| <i>Esquífe,</i>                      | A skiff.                                       |
| <i>Chalúpa, ou balândra,</i>         | A sloop.                                       |
| <i>Chalúpa pequêna,</i>              | A shallop.                                     |



|                                                                                                     |                                      |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>Bergantim,</i>                                                                                   | A brigantine, <i>or</i> brig,        |
| <i>Balsa,</i>                                                                                       | A float.                             |
| <i>Capitania,</i>                                                                                   | The admiral's ship.                  |
| <i>Almiranta,</i>                                                                                   | The vice-admiral's ship.             |
| <i>Armada,</i>                                                                                      | A fleet, a navy.                     |
| <i>Fróta,</i>                                                                                       | A fleet of merchant ships.           |
| <i>Esquádra,</i>                                                                                    | A squadron, part of a fleet.         |
| <i>A bordo,</i>                                                                                     | On board.                            |
| <i>Pópa,</i>                                                                                        | The poop, stern, <i>or</i> steerage. |
| <i>Próa,</i>                                                                                        | The prow, <i>or</i> head.            |
| <i>Péças de próa para dar caça</i><br><i>ao inimigo,</i>                                            | Chase guns.                          |
| <i>Tartana,</i>                                                                                     | A tartan.                            |
| <i>Brulote,</i>                                                                                     | A fire-ship.                         |
| <i>Patáxo,</i>                                                                                      | A patache.                           |
| <i>Falua,</i>                                                                                       | A felucca.                           |
| <i>Batél, or bateira,</i>                                                                           | A small bark, a wherry.              |
| <i>Caravela,</i>                                                                                    | A caravel.                           |
| <i>Sorte de patáxo para serviço</i><br><i>de huma não de guerra,</i>                                | A tender.                            |
| <i>Não de linha,</i>                                                                                | A line of battle-ship.               |
| <i>Guarda costa,</i>                                                                                | A guard-ship.                        |
| <i>Galeota da qual se lançam as</i><br><i>bômbas,</i>                                               | Bomb-ketch.                          |
| <i>Navio que serve para andar</i><br><i>a corso,</i>                                                | A cruiser.                           |
| <i>Corsário,</i>                                                                                    | A privateer.                         |
| <i>Hyacte,</i>                                                                                      | Yacht.                               |
| <i>Navio de transporte,</i>                                                                         | A transport.                         |
| <i>Não da India Oriental,</i>                                                                       | East India-man.                      |
| <i>Não da India Occidental,</i>                                                                     | West India-ship.                     |
| <i>Sorte de embarcação pequena</i><br><i>Hollandéza de hum só mastro,</i>                           | A Dutch dogger.                      |
| <i>Navio para levar carvão,</i>                                                                     | A collier.                           |
| <i>Embarcações pequenas,</i>                                                                        | Small craft.                         |
| <i>Embarcação, ou barco grande</i><br><i>que serve para levar fa-</i><br><i>zendas a bordo,</i>     | A barge, a lighter.                  |
| <i>Embarcação grande, ou ca-</i><br><i>ravela, que serve para</i><br><i>commercear pella costa,</i> | A coasting vessel.                   |
| <i>Embarcação de avizo,</i>                                                                         | Advice-boat.                         |
| <i>Paquete,</i>                                                                                     | Packet-boat.                         |
| <i>Barco de pescar,</i>                                                                             | A fishing-boat.                      |
| <i>Lancha,</i>                                                                                      | Boat.                                |



|                                                                   |                                                       |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Rêmos,</i>                                                     | Oars.                                                 |
| <i>Pá do remo,</i>                                                | The blade of the oar.                                 |
| <i>Sentina,</i>                                                   | The well.                                             |
| <i>Lástro, ou lásto,</i>                                          | Ballast.                                              |
| <i>Lastár, ou lançar lástro ao navio,</i>                         | To ballast a ship.                                    |
| <i>Mástro, or árvore,</i>                                         | A mast.                                               |
| <i>Mástro grande,</i>                                             | The main mast.                                        |
| <i>Mástro de mezêna,</i>                                          | The mizen mast.                                       |
| <i>Mástro do traquête,</i>                                        | The fore mast.                                        |
| <i>Gurupês,</i>                                                   | The bowsprit, <i>or</i> boltsprit.                    |
| <i>Gávea,</i>                                                     | The round-top, main-top, <i>or</i> scuttle of a mast. |
| <i>Quilha,</i>                                                    | The keel.                                             |
| <i>Vérge, ou entêna,</i>                                          | A yard.                                               |
| <i>Laiz, ou extremidades das vêrgas,</i>                          | The yard-arm.                                         |
| <i>Prâncas, que cobrem os costados do navio da parte de fóra,</i> | Side-planks, <i>or</i> side of a ship.                |
| <i>Véla,*</i>                                                     | A sail.                                               |
| <i>Véla méstra, or a véla do mastro grande,</i>                   | The main sheet.                                       |
| <i>Véla da Gávea,</i>                                             | The main-top-sail.                                    |
| <i>Véla do joanête do mástro grande,</i>                          | Main-top-gallant-sail.                                |
| <i>Papafigos,</i>                                                 | The mizen and fore-sail.                              |
| <i>Mezêna,</i>                                                    | Mizen-sail.                                           |
| <i>Gáta, ou véla de cima da mezêna,</i>                           | Mizen-top-sail.                                       |
| <i>Traquête,</i>                                                  | The fore-sail.                                        |
| <i>Velácho,</i>                                                   | The fore-top-sail.                                    |
| <i>Joanête do traquête,</i>                                       | The fore-top-gallant-sail.                            |
| <i>Cevadêira,</i>                                                 | The sprit-sail.                                       |
| <i>Véla latina,</i>                                               | A shoulder of mutton sail.                            |
| <i>Fazér fôrça de véla,</i>                                       | To crowd the sail.                                    |
| <i>Mastaréos,</i>                                                 | The topmasts, <i>or</i> top-gallant-masts.            |
| <i>Mastaréo da mezêna, ou mastaréo da gáta,</i>                   | Mizen-top-mast.                                       |
| <i>Portinhóla,</i>                                                | A port-hole.                                          |
| <i>Bandêiras,</i>                                                 | The colours.                                          |
| <i>Flémmulas ou galhardetes,</i>                                  | Streamers, pendants.                                  |

\* By *vela* is oftentimes meant the ship itself.



|                                                                         |                                                   |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Agulha de mareár,</i>                                                | The mariner's compass.                            |
| <i>Bitácola,</i>                                                        | Bittacle.                                         |
| <i>Costúras do navio,</i>                                               | The seams of a ship.                              |
| <i>Léme,</i>                                                            | Helm, <i>or</i> rudder.                           |
| <i>Câna do léme,</i>                                                    | The whip, <i>or</i> whip-staff.                   |
| <i>Cubérta,</i>                                                         | Deck.                                             |
| <i>Cubérta corréda,</i>                                                 | Flush fore and aft.                               |
| <i>Escotilhas,</i>                                                      | The hatches; scuttles.                            |
| <i>Escotilhão,</i>                                                      | A room by the hatches, to keep the provisions.    |
| <i>Castéllo de pôpa,</i>                                                | The hind castle.                                  |
| <i>Castéllo de prôa,</i>                                                | The fore castle.                                  |
| <i>Garrár a âncora,</i>                                                 | To drive; <i>or</i> when a ship drags her anchor. |
| <i>Ancora,</i>                                                          | The anchor.                                       |
| <i>Metér a âncora na láncha,</i><br><i>ou bóte depóis de levantála,</i> | To boat the anchor.                               |
| <i>Ancora de rebóque,</i>                                               | A kedger.                                         |
| <i>Ancora de esperança,</i>                                             | Sheet anchor.                                     |
| <i>Unhas da âncora,</i>                                                 | The flocks of an anchor.                          |
| <i>Argóla da âncora,</i>                                                | The ring of an anchor.                            |
| <i>Estár a âncora a pique,</i>                                          | Is for the anchor to be a-peak.                   |
| <i>Amárra,</i>                                                          | A cable.                                          |
| <i>Picár, ou cortár as amárras,</i>                                     | To cut the cables.                                |
| <i>Sóna, ou prúmo,</i>                                                  | The sounding lead.                                |
| <i>Cutélos,</i>                                                         | Studding sails.                                   |
| <i>Maré,</i>                                                            | The tide.                                         |
| <i>Bosina,</i>                                                          | A speaking trumpet.                               |
| <i>Preparár hum navio, de vé-</i><br><i>las, córdas, &amp;c.</i>        | To rig a ship.                                    |
| <i>Piloto,</i>                                                          | Pilot, <i>or</i> steersman.                       |
| <i>Escrivão,</i>                                                        | A purser.                                         |
| <i>Pilotagem,</i>                                                       | Pilotage.                                         |
| <i>Cárta de mareár,</i>                                                 | Sea-chart.                                        |
| <i>Capitão,</i>                                                         | A captain.                                        |
| <i>Capitão tenênte,</i>                                                 | First lieutenant.                                 |
| <i>Contraméstre,</i>                                                    | A boatswain.                                      |
| <i>Marinheiro,</i>                                                      | A sailor.                                         |
| <i>Camaróte,</i>                                                        | A cabin.                                          |
| <i>Marinheiro que he camaráda</i><br><i>ou pertence ao mesmo rancho</i> | A messmate.                                       |
| <i>Tormênta,</i>                                                        | A tempest.                                        |
| <i>Borrásca,</i>                                                        | A storm.                                          |
| <i>Bonança,</i>                                                         | Fair weather.                                     |
| <i>Calmaria,</i>                                                        | Calm.                                             |



|                                                                            |                                                    |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Vênto em pôpa,</i>                                                      | The wind full a-stern, a fore-wind.                |
| <i>Navio arrasádo em popa,</i>                                             | A ship that sails before the wind.                 |
| <i>Derróta,</i>                                                            | The course, <i>or</i> way of a ship.               |
| <i>Alár a bolína,</i>                                                      | To sharp the main bowling, to haul up the bowling. |
| <i>Ir pela bolína,</i>                                                     | To tack upon a wind, sail upon a bowling.          |
| <i>Nó da bolína,</i>                                                       | The bowling knot.                                  |
| <i>Barlavênto,</i>                                                         | Windward.                                          |
| <i>Ganhár a barlavênto,</i>                                                | To get the wind.                                   |
| <i>Barlaventeár, ou deitár a barlavênto,</i>                               | To ply to windward.                                |
| <i>Sotavênto,</i>                                                          | Leeward.                                           |
| <i>Escovêns,</i>                                                           | Hawsers.                                           |
| <i>Escôtas,</i>                                                            | Tacks.                                             |
| <i>Velâme, córdas, e o máis que he necessário pâra preparar hum navio,</i> | Tackle, or tackling, the rigging of a ship.        |
| <i>Córda,</i>                                                              | A rope.                                            |
| <i>Enxârcias,</i>                                                          | Shrouds.                                           |
| <i>Arribár,</i>                                                            | To put into a harbour.                             |
| <i>Bombórdo,</i>                                                           | Larboard.                                          |
| <i>Estibórdo,</i>                                                          | Starboard.                                         |
| <i>Ló,</i>                                                                 | Loof.                                              |
| <i>Metêr de lô,</i>                                                        | To loof, or keep the ship nearer the wind.         |
| <i>Bômba,</i>                                                              | A pump.                                            |
| <i>Dár á bômba,</i>                                                        | To pump,                                           |
| <i>Bálde pâra deitár ágoa na bômba,</i>                                    | Pump-can.                                          |
| <i>Escúma que sáhe da bomba depóis de ter tirádo a ágoa,</i>               | Pump-suck.                                         |
| <i>Navio, cúja ágoa se não pôde tirár com a bâmba,</i>                     | A ship that is stoaked.                            |
| <i>Mânga de couro por ónde sáhe a ágoa da bômba,</i>                       | Pump-dale.                                         |
| <i>Bráço da bômba,</i>                                                     | The pump handle.                                   |
| <i>Faról,</i>                                                              | Light, lantern, <i>or</i> lighthouse.              |
| <i>Vênto,</i>                                                              | Wind.                                              |



Rósa da Agúlha, ou dos  
Vêntos.

*The Fly of the Mariner's  
Compass.*

|                                         |                                          |
|-----------------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| <i>Nórte,</i>                           | North.                                   |
| <i>Nórte 4<sup>a</sup> a nordéste,</i>  | N. by E.                                 |
| <i>Nor nordéste,</i>                    | N. N. E.                                 |
| <i>Nordéste 4<sup>a</sup> a nórte,</i>  | N. E. by N.                              |
| <i>Nordéste,</i>                        | N. E.                                    |
| <i>Nordéste 4<sup>a</sup> a léste,</i>  | N. E. by E.                              |
| <i>Les nordéste,</i>                    | E. N. E.                                 |
| <i>Léste, 4<sup>a</sup> a nordéste,</i> | E. by N.                                 |
| <i>Léste,</i>                           | East.                                    |
| <i>Léste 4<sup>a</sup> a suéste,</i>    | E. by S.                                 |
| <i>Lés suéste,</i>                      | E. S. E.                                 |
| <i>Suéste 4<sup>a</sup> a léste,</i>    | S. E. by E.                              |
| <i>Suéste,</i>                          | S. E.                                    |
| <i>Suéste, 4<sup>a</sup> a sul,</i>     | S. E. by S.                              |
| <i>Susuéste,</i>                        | S. S. E.                                 |
| <i>Sul 4<sup>a</sup> a suéste,</i>      | S. by E.                                 |
| <i>Sul,</i>                             | South.                                   |
| <i>Sul 4<sup>a</sup> a sudoéste,</i>    | S. by W.                                 |
| <i>Susudoéste,</i>                      | S. S. W.                                 |
| <i>Sudoéste 4<sup>a</sup> sul,</i>      | S. W. by S.                              |
| <i>Sudoéste,</i>                        | S. W.                                    |
| <i>Sudoéste 4<sup>a</sup> a oéste,</i>  | S. W. by W.                              |
| <i>Oés sudoéste,</i>                    | W. S. W.                                 |
| <i>Oéste 4<sup>a</sup> a sudoéste,</i>  | W. by S.                                 |
| <i>Oéste,</i>                           | West.                                    |
| <i>Oéste 4<sup>a</sup> a noroéste,</i>  | W. by N.                                 |
| <i>Oés noroéste,</i>                    | W. N. W.                                 |
| <i>Noroéste 4<sup>a</sup> a oéste,</i>  | N. W. by W.                              |
| <i>Noroéste,</i>                        | N. W.                                    |
| <i>Noroéste 4<sup>a</sup> a nórte,</i>  | N. W. by N.                              |
| <i>Nor noroéste,</i>                    | N. N. W.                                 |
| <i>Nórte 4<sup>a</sup> a noroéste,</i>  | N. by W.                                 |
| <i>Vênto travessaõ, ou travessia,</i>   | Contrary wind.                           |
| <i>Dar a embarcaçaõ a travéz,</i>       | To hull.                                 |
| <i>Pairár,</i>                          | To ply to and again in one's<br>station. |
| <i>Esporaõ,</i>                         | Beak.                                    |
| <i>Colhêr hum cábo,</i>                 | To coil a cable.                         |
| <i>Largár mais cábo,</i>                | To pay more cable.                       |
| <i>Abrir ágoa,</i>                      | To leak, or spring a leak.               |
| <i>Fazêr agoáda,</i>                    | To take in fresh water.                  |
| <i>Arpaõ,</i>                           | A grapple.                               |



|                                                                                                      |                                                            |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Arpár hum navio,</i>                                                                              | To grapple a ship.                                         |
| <i>Fatéxa,</i>                                                                                       | Grapple.                                                   |
| <i>Pedáço de lóna breáda que se põem ao redor do másto e das bômbas para que a água não penétre,</i> | Tarpaulin.                                                 |
| <i>Passadôr,</i>                                                                                     | A fidd, or pin of iron to open the strands of ropes,       |
| <i>Córda com que se prénhe o bóte, ou láncha á pópa do navio,</i>                                    | Boat rope, or gift-rope.                                   |
| <i>Apito,</i>                                                                                        | A boatswain's call.                                        |
| <i>Abadérnas,</i>                                                                                    | Nippers.                                                   |
| <i>Abíta,</i>                                                                                        | Bits.                                                      |
| <i>Emproár,</i>                                                                                      | To steer right forward, to turn the prow straight forward. |
| <i>Guinár o navio,</i>                                                                               | To yaw or make yaws.                                       |
| <i>Parte superior, ou máis álta da pópa de hum navio,</i>                                            | The tafferel.                                              |
| <i>Apagafanões,</i>                                                                                  | Leech-lines.                                               |
| <i>Arreigádas,</i>                                                                                   | Puttocks.                                                  |
| <i>Briões,</i>                                                                                       | Bunt lines.                                                |
| <i>Barredôuras,</i>                                                                                  | Bow-studding-sails.                                        |
| <i>Bartidôuro,</i>                                                                                   | Boat's skit.                                               |
| <i>Bastárdos,</i>                                                                                    | Parrels.                                                   |
| <i>Bigóta,</i>                                                                                       | A dead-eye.                                                |
| <i>Botálos,</i>                                                                                      | Studding-sail-booms.                                       |
| <i>Braceár,</i>                                                                                      | To brace.                                                  |
| <i>Bráços,</i>                                                                                       | Braces.                                                    |
| <i>Bragueíro, or vergueíro,</i>                                                                      | The rudder's rope.                                         |
| <i>Brandáes,</i>                                                                                     | Back-stays.                                                |
| <i>Buçárdas,</i>                                                                                     | Breast-hooks.                                              |
| <i>Cachólas,</i>                                                                                     | Cheeks.                                                    |
| <i>Cadáste,</i>                                                                                      | Stand-post.                                                |
| <i>Cadernál,</i>                                                                                     | A large block with more than one shive.                    |
| <i>Cavérnas,</i>                                                                                     | The floor-timbers.                                         |
| <i>Colhedôres,</i>                                                                                   | Lines of the shrouds.                                      |
| <i>Compassár hum navio,</i>                                                                          | To trim a ship.                                            |
| <i>Cossôuros,</i>                                                                                    | Trucks.                                                    |
| <i>Cráca,</i>                                                                                        | The foulness of the ship's bottom.                         |
| <i>Estár hum navio lançádo á bándá,</i>                                                              | Is for a ship to heel.                                     |
| <i>Cabrestante,</i>                                                                                  | The capstan.                                               |
| <i>Dar cáça,</i>                                                                                     | To chase.                                                  |



|                                                                                            |                                                              |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Cúrvas,</i>                                                                             | The knees.                                                   |
| <i>Mésas da guarnição,</i>                                                                 | Chain-wales.                                                 |
| <i>Desástre,</i>                                                                           | Boat's skit.                                                 |
| <i>Enbornâes,</i>                                                                          | Scupper-holes.                                               |
| <i>Poraõ,</i>                                                                              | The hold of a ship.                                          |
| <i>Máca,</i>                                                                               | Hammock.                                                     |
| <i>Convéz,</i>                                                                             | Deck <i>or</i> quarter-deck.                                 |
| <i>Camaróte do cirurgião,</i>                                                              | Cockpit.                                                     |
| <i>Fréte,</i>                                                                              | Freight.                                                     |
| <i>Cárga,</i>                                                                              | Cargo.                                                       |
| <i>O'rdem que o capitão recebe</i><br><i>para dar á vèla,</i>                              | Sailing orders.                                              |
| <i>A acção de imbarcár se,</i>                                                             | Embarkation.                                                 |
| <i>Desembárque,</i>                                                                        | Landing.                                                     |
| <i>Embárgo,</i>                                                                            | Embargo.                                                     |
| <i>Ancoragem,</i>                                                                          | Anchorage.                                                   |
| <i>Batálha naval,</i>                                                                      | Naval battle.                                                |
| <i>Caravéla mexeriqueira, ou de</i><br><i>espia,</i>                                       | A ship for espial, <i>or</i> look out.                       |
| <i>Arriár, ou arreár,</i>                                                                  | To veer.                                                     |
| <i>Arreár as vélas,</i>                                                                    | To strike sail.                                              |
| <i>Arreár bandeira,</i>                                                                    | To strike the flag.                                          |
| <i>Levantár ferro, levár áncoras,</i><br><i>levar ferro, levar-se,</i><br><i>ou levar,</i> | To weigh anchor.                                             |
| <i>Léva,</i>                                                                               | The action of weighing <i>or</i><br>taking up the anchor.    |
| <i>Boleár a peça,</i>                                                                      | To move a gun towards star-<br>board <i>or</i> larboard.     |
| <i>Péça de léva,</i>                                                                       | The signal gun.                                              |
| <i>Rebocár, ou levár de rebóque,</i>                                                       | To tow.                                                      |
| <i>Fazér costúras,</i>                                                                     | To splice.                                                   |
| <i>Passágem,</i>                                                                           | Passage.                                                     |
| <i>Passageiro,</i>                                                                         | Passenger.                                                   |
| <i>Viagem,</i>                                                                             | Voyage.                                                      |
| <i>Navio cujo capitão tem cartas</i><br><i>de represálias,</i>                             | Letters of marque.                                           |
| <i>Querenár hum navio,</i>                                                                 | To careen a ship.                                            |
| <i>Breár as costúras do navio,</i>                                                         | To pay the seams of a ship.                                  |
| <i>Dar á cósta,</i>                                                                        | To run a-ground <i>or</i> on shore.                          |
| <i>Soluçár a não,</i>                                                                      | Is for a ship to roll, <i>or</i> to float<br>in rough water. |
| <i>Naufragár,</i>                                                                          | To suffer a wreck, to be<br>wrecked.                         |
| <i>Naufrágio,</i>                                                                          | Shipwreck.                                                   |
| <i>Patraõ, ou méstre de não,</i>                                                           | Shipmaster.                                                  |



|                                                                                          |                                                                                               |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Carpentéiro de navíos,</i>                                                            | Shipwright.                                                                                   |
| <i>Estaleíro,</i>                                                                        | Stocks.                                                                                       |
| <i>Embarcár,</i>                                                                         | To ship.                                                                                      |
| <i>Embarcár,</i>                                                                         | To go aboard, to take ship-<br>ping.                                                          |
| <i>Gruméte,</i>                                                                          | The meanest sort of sailors ;<br>or servant to the sailors.                                   |
| <i>Rapáz que sérvé como môço<br/>do navío,</i>                                           | Ship-boy.                                                                                     |
| <i>Rapáz que sérvé ao capitão,</i>                                                       | A cabin-boy.                                                                                  |
| <i>Calafáte,</i>                                                                         | A calker.                                                                                     |
| <i>Calafetár hum navío,</i>                                                              | To calk a ship.                                                                               |
| <i>Calafêto,</i>                                                                         | Oakham.                                                                                       |
| <i>Arsenál, ou ribeíra das náos,</i>                                                     | An arsenal, a store-house,<br>dock-yard.                                                      |
| <i>Emmasteár hum navío,</i>                                                              | To fit a ship, or vessel, with<br>masts.                                                      |
| <i>Remár,</i>                                                                            | To row.                                                                                       |
| <i>Remadór,</i>                                                                          | Rower.                                                                                        |
| <i>Forçádo,</i>                                                                          | Galley-slave.                                                                                 |
| <i>Despenseíro,</i>                                                                      | Steward.                                                                                      |
| <i>Marinheiros, e tôda a ôutra<br/>gênte que pertênce ao navío,</i>                      | The crew of a ship.                                                                           |
| <i>Chúsma,</i>                                                                           | Crew of galley slaves.                                                                        |
| <i>Guarnição da náao,</i>                                                                | Marines, soldiers who serve<br>on board of ships.                                             |
| <i>O sobrecárga do navío,</i>                                                            | Supercargo.                                                                                   |
| <i>Balestíilha,</i>                                                                      | Cross-staff.                                                                                  |
| <i>Quadránte,</i>                                                                        | Quadrant.                                                                                     |
| <i>Ouíánte,</i>                                                                          | Hadley's quadrant.                                                                            |
| <i>De ré,</i>                                                                            | Aft.                                                                                          |
| <i>Paravánte,</i>                                                                        | Fore.                                                                                         |
| <i>Situação de húma cósta, ilha,<br/>&amp;c. a respeito de qualquér<br/>ôutro lugár,</i> | The bearing.                                                                                  |
| <i>Quarentêna,</i>                                                                       | Quarantine.                                                                                   |
| <i>Balíza,</i>                                                                           | Sea mark.                                                                                     |
| <i>Lárga,</i>                                                                            | Large.                                                                                        |
| <i>Amarár,</i>                                                                           | To bear off.                                                                                  |
| <i>Caçár a véla,</i>                                                                     | To turn the sail to the wind<br>side.                                                         |
| <i>Caceár hum navío,</i>                                                                 | It is said of a ship that is hur-<br>ried away from her course<br>by strong winds, tides, &c. |
| <i>Lançár hum navío áo már,</i>                                                          | To launch a ship.                                                                             |
| <i>Fugír,</i>                                                                            | To bear away.                                                                                 |



|                                                   |                                                              |
|---------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Entrár com vênto frêsko e bôm no pôrto,</i>    | To bear in the harbour.                                      |
| <i>Bórdo,</i>                                     | Tack.                                                        |
| <i>Bórdo, ou bânda,</i>                           | Broadside.                                                   |
| <i>Navío de álto bórdo,</i>                       | First rate man of war.                                       |
| <i>Cáça,</i>                                      | Chace.                                                       |
| <i>Prêsa, ou tomadia,</i>                         | Prize, or capture.                                           |
| <i>Estár de verga álto,</i>                       | To stand for the offing.                                     |
| <i>Vêntos de monção, ougeroes,</i>                | Trade winds.                                                 |
| <i>Andár de consêrva,</i>                         | To keep company together, to sail under a convoy.            |
| <i>Dar, ou fazêr hum bórdo,</i>                   | To tack the ship. or tack about, or to bring her head about. |
| <i>Estár á cápa, ou por-se á cápa,</i>            | To lie by at sea, to back the sails.                         |
| <i>Do Commércio, e do que lhe pertênce.</i>       | <i>Of Trade, and of Things relating to it.</i>               |
| <i>Cônta,</i>                                     | Account.                                                     |
| <i>Cônta de vênda,</i>                            | Account of sales.                                            |
| <i>Fazêr húma cônta,</i>                          | To cast up an account.                                       |
| <i>Pedír côntas,</i>                              | To call to an account.                                       |
| <i>Dar á cônta,</i>                               | To pay on account.                                           |
| <i>Cônta corrênte,</i>                            | Account current.                                             |
| <i>Dinheiro de contádo,</i>                       | Ready money.                                                 |
| <i>Fundos Publicos,</i>                           | Stocks.                                                      |
| <i>O que negocêa em comprár e vendêr acçóens,</i> | Jobber.                                                      |
| <i>Ballânço,</i>                                  | Balance.                                                     |
| <i>Fárdo,</i>                                     | Bale.                                                        |
| <i>Bânco,</i>                                     | Bank.                                                        |
| <i>Banqueíro,</i>                                 | Banker.                                                      |
| <i>Quebra,</i>                                    | Bankruptcy.                                                  |
| <i>Falído, ou quebrádo,</i>                       | Bankrupt.                                                    |
| <i>Ajúste, ou concêrto,</i>                       | Bargain.                                                     |
| <i>Tróca,</i>                                     | Barter.                                                      |
| <i>Portadôr,</i>                                  | Bearer.                                                      |
| <i>Lançadôr,</i>                                  | Bidder.                                                      |
| <i>O que lança máis,</i>                          | Out bidder.                                                  |
| <i>Lêtra de câmbio,</i>                           | Bill of exchange, a draught.                                 |
| <i>Negociár húma lêtra de câmbio,</i>             | To negotiate a bill of exchange.                             |
| <i>Cônta,</i>                                     | Bill.                                                        |
| <i>Partída,</i>                                   | Parcel.                                                      |
| <i>Conhecimêto,</i>                               | Bill of lading.                                              |



|                                                                                                      |                             |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>Escritura de obrigação,</i>                                                                       | Bond, engagement.           |
| <i>Guárdalivros, ou o que em</i><br><i>húma casa de negócio tem</i><br><i>a seu cargo os livros,</i> | Book-keeper.                |
| <i>Occupação, or negócio,</i>                                                                        | Business.                   |
| <i>Comprador,</i>                                                                                    | Buyer.                      |
| <i>Dinheiro,</i>                                                                                     | Cash.                       |
| <i>Pórté, ou carrêto,</i>                                                                            | Carriage.                   |
| <i>Caxéiro, ou o que guarda a</i><br><i>caixa,</i>                                                   | A cashier, or cash-keeper.  |
| <i>Cênto,</i>                                                                                        | Cent.                       |
| <i>Certidão,</i>                                                                                     | Certificate.                |
| <i>Câmbio,</i>                                                                                       | Change, exchange.           |
| <i>Freguêz,</i>                                                                                      | Chap, chapman, or customer. |
| <i>Góstos,</i>                                                                                       | Charges.                    |
| <i>Baráto,</i>                                                                                       | Cheap.                      |
| <i>Cáro,</i>                                                                                         | Dear.                       |
| <i>Recibo da alfândega,</i>                                                                          | Clearance, or cocket.       |
| <i>Commissão,</i>                                                                                    | Commission.                 |
| <i>Mercancia,</i>                                                                                    | Commodity.                  |
| <i>Compromisso,</i>                                                                                  | Compromise.                 |
| <i>Consignação,</i>                                                                                  | Consignment.                |
| <i>Consumo,</i>                                                                                      | Consumption.                |
| <i>Conteúdo,</i>                                                                                     | Contents.                   |
| <i>Contráto,</i>                                                                                     | Contract.                   |
| <i>Correspondência,</i>                                                                              | Correspondence.             |
| <i>Correspondente,</i>                                                                               | Correspondent.              |
| <i>Prêço,</i>                                                                                        | Price, rate.                |
| <i>Alfândega,</i>                                                                                    | Custom-house.               |
| <i>Guárdas d' alfândega,</i>                                                                         | Custom-house officers.      |
| <i>Guárdas que estão vigiando</i><br><i>até que os navios estejam</i><br><i>desearegados,</i>        | Tidesmen, or tide waiters.  |
| <i>Feitoria,</i>                                                                                     | Factory, settlement,        |
| <i>Escritório,</i>                                                                                   | Counting-house.             |
| <i>Crédito,</i>                                                                                      | Credit.                     |
| <i>Acredôr,</i>                                                                                      | Creditor.                   |
| <i>Corrénte,</i>                                                                                     | Current.                    |
| <i>Costúme,</i>                                                                                      | Custom.                     |
| <i>Dáta,</i>                                                                                         | Date.                       |
| <i>Contratador,</i>                                                                                  | Dealer.                     |
| <i>Tráfego, ou negócio,</i>                                                                          | Dealing, traffick.          |
| <i>Dívida,</i>                                                                                       | Debt.                       |
| <i>Devedôr,</i>                                                                                      | Debtor.                     |
| <i>Dinheiro desembolçado,</i>                                                                        | Disbursement.               |
| <i>Descônto,</i>                                                                                     | Discount.                   |



|                                                                                                                                                                                             |                                    |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>Extracção, ou cópia,</i>                                                                                                                                                                 | Docket.                            |
| <i>Depósito,</i>                                                                                                                                                                            | Deposit.                           |
| <i>Direitos que a alfandega torna a dar a os exportadores de certas fazendas, que já os tinham pago na suposição de serem para consumo interior: servindo isto para animar o commercio,</i> | Draw-back.                         |
| <i>Acredor importuno,</i>                                                                                                                                                                   | Dun.                               |
| <i>Cópia,</i>                                                                                                                                                                               | Duplicate.                         |
| <i>Corretor,</i>                                                                                                                                                                            | A broker.                          |
| <i>Corretor de letras de câmbio,</i>                                                                                                                                                        | Exchange-broker.                   |
| <i>Assegurador, ou segurador,</i>                                                                                                                                                           | Insurer or under-writer.           |
| <i>Endosso,</i>                                                                                                                                                                             | Endorsement.                       |
| <i>Endossador,</i>                                                                                                                                                                          | Endorser.                          |
| <i>Abarcador,</i>                                                                                                                                                                           | Engrosser.                         |
| <i>Levantamento de preço,</i>                                                                                                                                                               | Enhancement.                       |
| <i>Entrada or assento no registo,</i>                                                                                                                                                       | Entry.                             |
| <i>Equivalente,</i>                                                                                                                                                                         | Equivalent.                        |
| <i>Exigência,</i>                                                                                                                                                                           | Exigency.                          |
| <i>Despesa,</i>                                                                                                                                                                             | Expence.                           |
| <i>Extracção, or exportação,</i>                                                                                                                                                            | Export, or exportation.            |
| <i>Extorsão,</i>                                                                                                                                                                            | Extortion.                         |
| <i>Feitor, or commissario,</i>                                                                                                                                                              | Factor.                            |
| <i>Féira,</i>                                                                                                                                                                               | Fair.                              |
| <i>Fio, ou arame no qual se enfião os papéis num escritório,</i>                                                                                                                            | File for papers.                   |
| <i>Quatro, cinco, &amp;c. por cento,</i>                                                                                                                                                    | Four, five, &c. per cent.          |
| <i>Fretar,</i>                                                                                                                                                                              | To freight a ship.                 |
| <i>Fréte,</i>                                                                                                                                                                               | Freight.                           |
| <i>O que fréta hum navio,</i>                                                                                                                                                               | A freighter.                       |
| <i>Cabedal, ou quantia de dinheiro destinado para alguma cousa,</i>                                                                                                                         | Fund.                              |
| <i>Ganho,</i>                                                                                                                                                                               | Gain, or profit.                   |
| <i>O que ganha,</i>                                                                                                                                                                         | Gainer.                            |
| <i>Fazendas ou effeitos,</i>                                                                                                                                                                | Goods, effects.                    |
| <i>Estréa,</i>                                                                                                                                                                              | Handsel.                           |
| <i>Escritura, or lettra,</i>                                                                                                                                                                | Hand-writing.                      |
| <i>Entrada,</i>                                                                                                                                                                             | A custom for imported commodities. |
| <i>Importador,</i>                                                                                                                                                                          | Importer.                          |
| <i>Renda,</i>                                                                                                                                                                               | Income.                            |
| <i>Interesse,</i>                                                                                                                                                                           | Interest.                          |
| <i>Comunicação, ou commercio</i>                                                                                                                                                            | Intercourse.                       |



|                                                            |                               |
|------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>Inventário,</i>                                         | Inventory.                    |
| <i>Insufficiência, ou falta de<br/>meios para pagar,</i>   | Insolvency.                   |
| <i>Factura,</i>                                            | Invoice.                      |
| <i>Arras,</i>                                              | Jointure.                     |
| <i>Escritura de arrendamento,</i>                          | Lease.                        |
| <i>Arrendador,</i>                                         | Lessee.                       |
| <i>Livro de razão,</i>                                     | Ledger-book.                  |
| <i>Empréstimo,</i>                                         | Loan.                         |
| <i>Dinheiro emprestado,</i>                                | Money lent.                   |
| <i>Carta,</i>                                              | Letter.                       |
| <i>Sobrescrito da carta,</i>                               | The direction of a letter.    |
| <i>Fechár húma carta,</i>                                  | To make or close up a letter. |
| <i>Fechár húma carta com sinete,</i>                       | To make and seal up a letter. |
| <i>Mála em que o corréo tráz as<br/>cartas,</i>            | Mail.                         |
| <i>Hypotheca,</i>                                          | Mortgage.                     |
| <i>Acredôr hypothecário,</i>                               | Mortgagee.                    |
| <i>O que hypotheca,</i>                                    | Mortgager.                    |
| <i>Fiador,</i>                                             | Bail.                         |
| <i>Pagamento,</i>                                          | Payment.                      |
| <i>Falta de pagamento,</i>                                 | Non-payment.                  |
| <i>Escríto de dívida,</i>                                  | Note, or promissory note.     |
| <i>Dôno,</i>                                               | Owner.                        |
| <i>Pacóte,</i>                                             | Pack, a truss.                |
| <i>Serapilheira,</i>                                       | Packcloth, wrapper.           |
| <i>Brabante,</i>                                           | Packthread.                   |
| <i>Máço de cartas,</i>                                     | Packet of letters.            |
| <i>Companheiro de alguém no<br/>negócio, ou sócio,</i>     | Partner.                      |
| <i>Sociedade, ou companhia no<br/>negócio,</i>             | Partnership.                  |
| <i>Penhór,</i>                                             | Pawn, or pledge.              |
| <i>Contráto do seguro de mer-<br/>cancias,</i>             | Policy of insurance.          |
| <i>Seguro,</i>                                             | Insurance.                    |
| <i>Segurar,</i>                                            | To insure.                    |
| <i>Protestár húma letra,</i>                               | To protest a bill.            |
| <i>Aceitár húma letra,</i>                                 | To accept a bill.             |
| <i>Protêsto,</i>                                           | Protest.                      |
| <i>Saçar húma letra,</i>                                   | To draw a bill.               |
| <i>Corréo aonde se lançaõ as cartas</i>                    | Post-office.                  |
| <i>Corréo que léva cartas,</i>                             | Post-man, or letter carrier.  |
| <i>Porte de cartas,</i>                                    | Postage.                      |
| <i>Prémio ou dinheiro que se<br/>paga aos seguradôres,</i> | Premium.                      |



|                                                                          |                                                          |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------|
| <i>Dinhêiro que se pága aos marinheiros por terem carregado o navio,</i> | Primage.                                                 |
| <i>Capítal,</i>                                                          | Principal, or capital.                                   |
| <i>Pêrdas e danos,</i>                                                   | Losses and damages.                                      |
| <i>Importância,</i>                                                      | Proceed.                                                 |
| <i>Importância líquida,</i>                                              | Neat proceed.                                            |
| <i>Promessa,</i>                                                         | Promise.                                                 |
| <i>Bens,</i>                                                             | Property.                                                |
| <i>Pontualidade,</i>                                                     | Punctuality.                                             |
| <i>Cômpra,</i>                                                           | Purchase.                                                |
| <i>Recíbo,</i>                                                           | Receipt.                                                 |
| <i>Recâmbio,</i>                                                         | Re-exchange.                                             |
| <i>Arbitro, ou louvado,</i>                                              | Referee or umpire.                                       |
| <i>Louvamento, ou arbitrio,</i>                                          | Reference.                                               |
| <i>Regatão,</i>                                                          | Regrater.                                                |
| <i>Quitação,</i>                                                         | Release.                                                 |
| <i>Remessa,</i>                                                          | Remittance.                                              |
| <i>Vênda das cousas por miúdo, como fazem os mercadores de retalho,</i>  | Retail.                                                  |
| <i>Mercador de retalho,</i>                                              | Retailer.                                                |
| <i>Riquêzas,</i>                                                         | Riches, wealth.                                          |
| <i>Vênda,</i>                                                            | Sale.                                                    |
| <i>Padrão,</i>                                                           | A pattern.                                               |
| <i>Amostra,</i>                                                          | Sample.                                                  |
| <i>Sinete,</i>                                                           | Seal.                                                    |
| <i>Lácre,</i>                                                            | Sealing-wax.                                             |
| <i>Ajustamento de contas,</i>                                            | Settlement of accounts.                                  |
| <i>Lója,</i>                                                             | Shop.                                                    |
| <i>Mercador que tem loja,</i>                                            | Shop-keeper.                                             |
| <i>Livro em que o mercador de loja tem suas contas,</i>                  | Shop-book.                                               |
| <i>Contrabandista,</i>                                                   | Smuggler.                                                |
| <i>Fazenda de contrabando,</i>                                           | Contraband, or prohibited goods, goods smuggled, or run. |
| <i>Fazer contrabando,</i>                                                | To run, to smuggle prohibited goods.                     |
| <i>Modelo, ou fiél dos pêzos e medidas públicas,</i>                     | Standard measure.                                        |
| <i>Armazém or Almazém,</i>                                               | Warehouse.                                               |
| <i>Sobrescrevente,</i>                                                   | Subscriber.                                              |
| <i>Sobscripsão,</i>                                                      | Subscription.                                            |
| <i>Tára,</i>                                                             | Tare.                                                    |
| <i>Fazenda roim,</i>                                                     | Trash of goods.                                          |



|                                       |                          |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>Risco,</i>                         | Rick.                    |
| <i>Júros,</i>                         | Interest.                |
| <i>U'so,</i>                          | Usance.                  |
| <i>Usurário.</i>                      | Usurer.                  |
| <i>Usúra,</i>                         | Usury.                   |
| <i>Obréa,</i>                         | Wafer.                   |
| <i>Mercancias,</i>                    | Wares.                   |
| <i>Valór,</i>                         | Worth, <i>or</i> value.  |
| <i>Avaria,</i>                        | Average.                 |
| <i>Direítos,</i>                      | Duties <i>or</i> custom. |
| <i>Tribúto, ou contribuição,</i>      | Cess, tribute.           |
| <i>Táxas,</i>                         | Taxes.                   |
| <i>Sisa,</i>                          | Excise.                  |
| <i>Siseíro,</i>                       | Exciseman.               |
| <i>Cáes,</i>                          | Wharf.                   |
| <i>Direíto que se pága, por des-</i>  | Wharfage.                |
| <i>embarcár fazêndas no cáes,</i>     |                          |
| <i>Collectôr do mêsmo direíto,</i>    | Wharfinger.              |
| <i>ou tribúto.</i>                    |                          |
| <i>Dízimos,</i>                       | Tithes.                  |
| <i>Dizimadôr, ou dizimeíro,</i>       | Tithe-gatherer.          |
| <i>Louça vidrada, sem ser da</i>      | Dutch ware.              |
| <i>Chína,</i>                         |                          |
| <i>Mercadôr de atacádo,</i>           | Wholesale dealer.        |
| <i>Vênda que se faz por partidas,</i> | Wholesale.               |

*Da Moéda, ou Dinheiro Por-*  
*tuguêz.*

*Of the Portuguese Coin.*

This mark \* is prefixed to the imaginary money.

|                                     |                                     |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| * <i>Reál,</i>                      | A ree, equal to $\frac{27}{40}d.$   |
| <i>Dês réis,</i>                    | 10 rees, $\frac{27}{40}d.$          |
| <i>Vintém,</i>                      | A vintin, $1\frac{7}{20}d.$         |
| <i>Tostão, ou 5 vintêms,</i>        | A testoon, $6\frac{3}{4}d.$         |
| <i>4 Tostôens, ou hum crusado,</i>  | A crusade, 2s. 3d.                  |
| <i>Crusado nôvo, ou 24 vintêns,</i> | A new crusade, 2s. $8\frac{1}{2}d.$ |
| <i>8 Tostôens,</i>                  | 8 testoons, 4s. 6d.                 |
| <i>Hum quárto de ouro, ou 12</i>    | 12 testoons, 6s. 9d.                |
| <i>tostôens,</i>                    |                                     |
| * <i>Milréis, ou 10 tostôens,</i>   | A milree, 5s. $7\frac{1}{2}d.$      |
| <i>16 Tostôens,</i>                 | 16 testoons, 9s.                    |
| <i>Mêya moéda de ouro,</i>          | Half moidore, 13s. 6d.              |
| <i>3,200, ou 32 tostôens,</i>       | 32 testoons, 18s.                   |
| <i>Moéda de ouro de 4,800,</i>      | A moidore, 1l. 7s.                  |
| <i>Pêga de 6,400,</i>               | Joanese, 1l. 16s.                   |
| <i>Dóbraõ ou 12,800,</i>            | 128 testoons, 3l. 12s.              |



## COLLECÇÃO A COLLECTION

DE

OF

Adágios Portuguêses.

Portuguese Proverbs.

*A Ágoa o dá, a ágoa o léva,**Na ágoa envólta péscia o pescadôr,**Está cómo o peixe n' ágoa,  
Trazêr a ágoa pára o moínho,  
Levár ágoa ao már,  
As ágoas estão báixas,  
O que não póde al sér, déves  
soffrêr,**Cóme cómo hum alárve,  
Metêr a pálha na albárda,  
Alazaõ tostado ántes mórto  
que cançado,  
Húma disgráça alcânça a  
óutra,  
Estár na aldêa, e não vêr as  
cásas,**Quem trabálha, tem alfáya,  
Fállo-lhe em álhós, respõde-  
me em bugálhos,  
Em têmpo nevádo o álho vále  
hum cavállo,***W**HAT is got over the  
devil's back will be  
spent under his belly; also  
lightly come, lightly go.To fish in troubled waters,  
(to make a benefit of public troubles.)

He lives in clover.

To bring grist to the mill.

To carry coals to Newcastle.

He *or* she is at a low ebb.What can't be cured must be  
endured.

He eats like a thresher.

To cheat, to impose upon.

A dark sorrel horse will die  
before he'll jade.

One mischief draws on another.

We say; you can't see wood  
for trees: *or* to be like the  
butcher that looked for his  
knife when he had it in his  
mouth.He that works has furniture.  
I talk of chalk and you of  
cheese.Garlick in the foggy weather  
is as good as a horse; it  
means that garlick is a  
good defence for travellers  
against dampness and cold  
weather.



*Têzo como hum álho,*

As stiff as garlick; that is a healthy, strong, robust person.

*Súa alma, sua páлма,  
Na almoéda tem a bárba  
quéda,*

As you brew, even so bake.  
At a sale keep your beard on your chin still; that is, let not your beard wag too fast in bidding, lest you overbid and repent.

*Pagár os áltos de vasío,*

To have but little *or* no sense at all.

*Quem áma a beltrão, áma a  
sêu cão,*

Love me, love my dog.

*Cáda qual áma sêu semel-  
hãnte,*

Like will to like, *or* like loves to like.

*Também os ameaçados cómem  
pão,*

Threatened folks eat bread; we say, threatened folks live long.

*Côntas de pértó, e amigos de  
lônge,*

Even reckonings make long friends.

*Não se deve perdêr a amizáde  
por dá cá aquella páلha,*

An inch breaks nō squares.

*Tam bom he Pedro cómo sêu  
ámo,*

Like master, like man.

*Furtár o carneiro, e dar os  
pés pello amôr de Déos.*

We say, to steal a goose and give the giblets in alms.

*Nem hum dêdo faz mão, nem  
húma andorinha verão,*

One swallow does not make summer. *Una hirundo non facit ver*, says Horace.

*Levár páлhas, e arálhos,  
Na arêa abêrta o jústo pécca,*

To sweep stakes.  
That is, it is opportunity that makes the thief.

*De hum argueiro, fazer hum  
cavalleiro,*

We say to make mountains of mole-hills.

*Com ártē, e com engãno se  
vive méyo áнно; com en-  
gãno, e com ártē se vive a  
ôutra pártē,*

That is, all a man's life is a cheat.

*Quem a bôa árvore se chêga,  
bôa sômbra o cóbre,*

That is, he that relies on good worthy people, reaps a benefit.

*A'sno mórto, ceváda ao rábo,*

A day after the fair, *or* after meat, mustard.

*A'sno que tem fome, cárdos  
côme,*

We say, hungry dogs will eat dirty pudding.



*Sôpa de mel não se fez para  
a boca do ásno,*

*Máis quero ásno que me leve,  
que cavállo que me derrúbe,*

*Máis val má avênça que boa  
sentença,*

*Quem não se aventura, não  
anda a cavállo, nem em múla*

*Não deítes azeíte no fogo,*

*Bôca não admite fiador,*

*Da mão á boca se perde a  
sôpa,*

*Em boca cerrada não entra  
môscas,*

*Quem tem boca vái a Rôma,*

*Pélla boca morre o peixe,*

*Cada bofarinheiro louva seus  
alfinêtes,*

*Quem tem quatro, e gasta cin-  
co, não ha mistér bolsa  
nem bolsinho,*

*Cavár vái pella vinha por onde  
vái a máy, vái a filha,*

*Matár dous coelhos de húma  
cajadada,*

*Quem cânta, seus máles es-  
pânta,*

*Deitár a cápa a tóuro,*

*Viva el réy, e dá cá a cápa,*

Good things are not fit for  
fools.

Better be an old man's dar-  
ling, than a young man's  
warling.

It is better to agree at any  
rate, than go to law.

Nothing venture, nothing  
have.

Do not throw oil into the fire.

The belly has no ears.

Much falls between the cup  
and the lip.

A close mouth catches no  
flies.

That is, a man may go any  
where, if he has language  
to speak for himself and  
ask his way.

Much talking brings much  
woe.

Every man thinks his own  
geese swans.

He that hath four and spends  
five hath no need of a  
purse.

Like father like son.

We say, to kill two birds  
with one stone.

The person who sings makes  
easy his misfortunes; that  
is, singing causes him not  
to reflect on it so much as  
he otherwise would.

To throw one's cloak at the  
bull; that is, to venture  
all a man has to save his  
life.

Let the king live, and give  
me the cloak; that is spo-  
ken of persons who, under  
a pretence of authority,  
rob and plunder other peo-  
ple, and at the same time



*Andár de cápa cahida,*

*O cão com raiva de seu dono  
tráva,*

*Quem com cães se lança, com  
púlgas, se levanta,  
A carne de lóbo dente de cão,*

*Quem faz casa na praça,  
huns dizem que he alta,  
óutros que he baixa,*

*A cavállo dádo não ólhes o  
dente,*

*Quem quer cavállo sem tácha,  
sem elle se ácha,*

*Na terra dos cégos, o tórto  
he réy,*

*Cóbra boa fama, e deita-te a  
dormir,*

*Fazêr as contas sem a hós-  
peda,*

*Do contádo cóme o lóbo,*

*Em casa de ladrão não fáalles  
em córda,*

*Do couro lhe sáhem as cor-  
réas,*

pretend they are doing jus-  
tice to the power reposed  
in their hands.

To be behind-hand in the  
world.

A mad dog bites his own mas-  
ter ; there is no trusting to  
madmen, *or* people in a rage.

We say, lie with beggars and  
you will get fleas.

That is, to return railing for  
railing ; *or*, as our modern  
proverb says, give him a  
Rowland for his Oliver ;  
the Latins say, *par pari  
referre*.

That is, a man in public bu-  
siness can't please every  
body ; *or* as *Solon* says :  
'tis rare that statesmen can  
all parties please.

Never look in the mouth of  
a gift horse.

'Tis a good horse that never  
stumbles.

In a country of blind men, he  
that has one eye is the king.

When your name is up, you  
may lie a-bed till noon.

To reckon without the hos-  
tess ; *or* as we say, the host.

The wolf eats of what is  
counted ; that is, thieves  
will steal, though they  
know it will be missed,  
much more if they think  
it will not.

You should not mention a  
halter to any whose rela-  
tions or friends have suf-  
fered by it ; that is, no man  
should be hit in the teeth  
of his disgrace.

The thongs come out of his  
skin ; that is, he pays for it.



- Cortár o vestido conforme o pánno,*  
*Cría o córvo, tirárvos-há o olho,*
- Tânta culpa tem o ladrão*  
*cómo o consentidór,*  
*Dádivas quebrântão pénhas,*
- Melhór he fazer de bálde que*  
*estár debálde,*
- Deitár azeite no fogo,*
- Naõ he o démo tam feio*  
*cómo o pintaõ,*  
*Primeiro saõ dentes, que pa-*  
*rêntes,*
- Lá vái a lingoa, õnde o dente*  
*grita,*  
*Quândo cúidas metêr o dente*  
*em segúro, toparáz o duro,*
- Dár com a lingoa nos dentes,*
- Quem naõ fálla, naõ o ouve*  
*Déos,*
- Ventúra te dé Déos, filho;*  
*que saber póuco te básta,*
- Cáda qual por si, e Déos por*  
*tódos,*  
*Em bons días, boas óbras,*
- To cut one's coat according to the cloth.
- It is said of a person that, being received in distress, defrauds or grows too great for him that entertained him.
- The receiver is as bad as the thief.
- Gifts break rocks; that is, kindness overcomes the hardest hearts; and bribes or presents corrupt the most resolved.
- It is better to work for nothing than to be lazy and do nothing at all.
- To make bad worse. *Horace* says, *Oleum addere camino.*
- We say, the lion is not so fierce as his picture.
- We say, near is my coat, but nearer is my skin, &c. *Terence* says, *Heus proximus sum egomet mihi.*
- To scratch where it itches.
- Harm watch, harm catch, *Horace* says,  
*—et fragili quærens illi-*  
*dere dentem,*  
*—Offendet solido—*
- To contradict one's self, to belie.
- A man may hold his tongue in an ill time; also spare to speak and spare to speed.
- God give you good luck, child, for a little learning will serve your turn; because it is fortune that raises men more than merit.
- Every one for himself, and God for all.
- The better days the better



*Para día de saõ ceréjo,*

*Túdo póde o dinheiro,  
O hómem propõem, e Déos  
dispõem,*

*Dórme cômo hum arganáç,  
A bom entendedôr pôucas pa-  
lávras bastaõ,*

*Gáto escaldádo da ágoa fría  
ha mêdo,  
No escudellár verás quem te  
quer bem, ou mal,*

*Esmolôu sãõ Matthéus, es-  
molôu pára os séus,  
Naõ ha melhor espélho que o  
amigo vélho,*

*Nem estôpa com tigôens, nem  
molhér com varôens,*

*Fallár sem cuidár, he atirár  
sem afrontár,*

*Fállá pouco e bem, têrte háõ  
por alguêm,*

*Quêm a fâma tem perdída,  
môrto ánda nésta vída,*

*A quem má fâma tem, nem  
accompãhes, nem dígas  
bem,*

*Aproveitadôr de farélos,  
esperdiçadôr de farinha,*

*Naõ fázem boa farinha,*

deeds.

We say, when two Sundays  
come together, that is ne-  
ver.

Money governs the world.  
Man proposes, and God dis-  
poses.

He sleeps like a dormouse.  
A word to the wise is enough.

We say, a burnt child dreads  
the fire.

That is, people's affections  
are discovered by their li-  
berality.

Charity begins at home.

There is no better looking-  
glass than an old friend;  
that is, such a one will not  
flatter a man, but tell him  
the truth.

That is, conversation of wo-  
men is dangerous; it is not  
good jesting with edged  
tools.

To let one's tongue run, with-  
out reflecting on what one  
says, is like shooting at  
random.

Talk little and well, and  
you'll be counted some-  
body; that is, you'll be  
esteemed.

He who has lost his reputa-  
tion is as good as dead  
whilst living.

Do not keep company with,  
nor be fond, of one that  
has an ill name.

That is, one that saves at the  
spiggot and lets it run out  
at the bung; also, penny  
wise and pound foolish.

They can't set their horses



- Quem má a faz nélla jáz,  
Agóra dá pão e mel, e depóis  
dará pão e fel,  
Língua doce cómo mel, e co-  
ração amargoso cómo fel,  
Batér o férro quando está  
quênte,*
- Quem com férro máta, a  
férro mórre,  
Carregádo de férro, carre-  
gádo de medo,*
- Quem te faz festa, não soendo  
fazér, ou te quer enganár,  
ou te ha míster,*
- Não fies, nem profies, nem  
arrêndes, vivirás éntre as  
gêntes,*
- Mijár claro, dar húma figa  
ao médico,  
Se não bébe na taverna, fólga  
nélla,  
Achôu fóрма pára o seu sa-  
páto,*
- Não se jáis fornêiro se têndes  
a cabeça de manteiga,*
- A'o hêmêm ousádo a fortuna  
lhe dá a mão,  
Rôupa de francêzes,*
- Cahir da frigideira nas bra-  
sas,  
Dizem os filhos ao soalheiro,  
o que ouvem dizer a seus*
- together.  
Self do self harm.  
After sweet meat comes sour  
sauce.  
An honey tongue, an heart  
of gall.  
To beat the iron whilst it is  
hot, or, to make hay whilst  
the sun shines.  
He who kills by the sword  
dies by the sword.  
He who is loaded with iron  
is loaded with fear; that  
is, he who loads himself  
with armour and weapons  
against danger, discovers  
he is much afraid.  
He that makes more of you  
than he is wont to do, ei-  
ther designs to cheat you,  
or stand in need of you.  
Do not trust, nor contend,  
nor hire, and you'll live  
among men; that is, you'll  
live peaceably.  
Tell the truth and shame the  
devil.  
We say he does not smoke  
but smokes.  
He has found a last to his  
shoe; that is, he has met  
with his match.  
Do not undertake to be a  
baker if your head is made  
of butter; that is, do not  
take upon you any busi-  
ness you are unfit for.  
Fortune favours the bold.  
Things left at random, or  
exposed to be pillaged.  
To fall out of the frying-pan  
into the fire.  
Little pitchers have great  
ears.



*páys ao fumeiro,  
Perto vái o fumo da chãma,*

*Quem húma vêz fúrta, fiél  
núnca,*

*Mal vái ao fúso quando a  
bárba não anda em cima,*

*Cãda tẽrra com sêu úso, cãda  
róca com seu fúso,*

*Quãtas cabêças, tãntas ca-  
rapúças,*

*Quem lhe doêr a cabêça que  
a apêrte,*

*Se quêres sabêr quem hé o  
villão, mételhe a vára na  
mão,*

*Naõ ha rósa sem espínhos,*

*Andár, andár, vír morrêr á  
beíra,*

*Quem não déve, não téme,  
Quem quando póde, não quér,  
quando quér, não póde.*

*Hómem honrado não ha mis-  
tér gabádo,*

*Hómem grãde, bêsta de páo,*

*Debáixo de má cápa jáz bom  
bebedór,*

We say there is no smoke  
without some fire.

He who once steals is never  
trusty; or, once a thief,  
always a thief.

Alas for the spindle when the  
beard is not over it! By  
the spindle is meant the  
woman, and by the beard  
is meant the man.

So many countries, so many  
customs.

Several men, several minds.

We say, if any fool finds the  
cap fit him, let him put it  
on.

Set a beggar on horseback,  
and he will ride to the  
devil.

There is no rose without  
thorns, there is no sweet  
without some sweat.

To eat an whole ox and  
faint at the tail. This pro-  
verb is spoken when any  
body falls short of a thing  
after having used all his  
endeavours.

Out of debt out of danger.

It is good to make hay while  
the sun shines.

We say, a good face needs  
no band.

This proverb intimates, that  
things are not to be valued  
by their bulk, but accord-  
ing to their intrinsic worth  
and value; and so we say,  
a lark is better than a  
kite.

A tattered cloak may cover a  
good drinker; that is, men  
are not to be judged by



*Quem muito abraça, pouco  
aperta,  
No açôgue, quem mal fália,  
mal ouve,*

outward appearance.  
All grasp, all lose; or covet  
all, and lose all.

He that speaks knavishly shall  
hear knavishly. Terence  
says, *Qui pergit ea, quæ  
vult, dicere, ea, quæ non  
vult, audiet.*

*Quem em mais álto náda,  
mais présto se afôga,*

This is, the highest charges  
are the more liable and  
nearer to the downfall.

*Hóspede com sol, ha honôr,  
Hospeda formôsa, dâno faz  
â bôlsa,*

First come, first served.

*O hóspede e o peixe aos três  
días féde,*

A beautiful hostess, or land-  
lady, is bad for the purse.

Fresh fish, and new come  
guests, smell when they  
are three days old.

*Hórta sem ágoa, cása sem  
telhádo, molhér sem amôr,  
marído sem cuidádo, de  
gráça he cáro,*

That is, a garden without  
water, a house untiled, a  
wife without love, and a  
careless husband, are all  
alike, being all stark  
nought.

*Hônra ao bôm para que te  
hônre, e ao máo pára que  
te não deshônre,*

Honour a good man, that he  
may honour you; and an  
ill man, that he may not  
dishonour you.

*Hônra hé dos âmos, a que se  
faz aos criádos,  
Offício de conselho, hónra  
sem provéito,*

The honour done to servants  
redounds to their masters.

An office in the council is  
honour without profit;  
that is, to be of the coun-  
cil of a town, by which  
nothing is got in Portugal.

*Hómem apercebido, méyo com-  
batído,*

A man that is prepared, has  
half the battle over.



## DIÁLOGOS

## FAMILIARES.

## DIÁLOGO I.

**T**ÊNHA *vm. muito bons dias,*

*Cômo está vm.? ou cômo passa vm.?*

*Bem, não muito-bém, vou passando,*

*Muito bem para servir a vm. A's ordens de vm.*

*Fico-lhe muito obrigádo, Agradecido,*

*Cômo está, ou pássa o senhór seu irmão?*

*Muito bem, não muito bém,*

*Elle terá gosto de ver a vm.*

*Não teréi tẽmpo para hir a vélo hõje,*

*Fáça favôr de assentár-se,*

*Dá húma cadeira ao senhór,*

*Não hé necessário,*

*Tenho que hir a fazer húma visita aquí nesta visinhança*

*Vm. tem préssa,*

*E'u logo voltaréi,*

*Adêos meu senhór,*

*Fólgo de vér a vm. com boa saúde,*

*Béijo as mãos de vm.*

*Sôu criádo de vm.*

*Sôu muito seu criádo,*

## FAMILIAR

## DIALOGUES.

## DIALOGUE I.

**G**OOD morrow, sir.

How do you do, sir?

Well; not very well; so, so.

Very well to serve you.

At your service.

I am obliged to you.

I thank you.

How does your brother do?

He is very well; not very well.

He will be glad to see you.

I shall have no time to see him to day.

Be pleased to sit down.

Give a chair to the gentleman.

There's no occasion.

I must go to make a visit in the neighbourhood.

You are in haste.

I'll be back, or return presently.

Farewell, sir.

I am glad to see you in good health.

I kiss your hand.

I am your servant.

Your most humble servant.



## DIALOGO II. DIALOGUE II.

Para fazêr húma Visíta de  
Manhaã.

*To visit in the morning.*

**O**NDE está teu ámo?  
Ainda dórme?

*Naõ, senhór, elle está acordádo*

*Está elle ja levantádo?*

*Naõ, senhór, elle ainda está  
na câma,*

*Que vergõha de estár ainda  
na câma a éstas horas!*

*Ontem á nõite fui para a câma  
taõ tárde, que naõ me púde  
levantár cedo esta manhaã,*

*Que fizérãõ vm<sup>cs</sup>. de pôis de cêa?*

*Dançámos, cantámos, rimos,  
e jugámos,*

*A que jôgo?*

*A'os cêntos,*

*Quânto me péza de o naõ tér  
sabído!*

*Quem ganhôu? quem perdéo?*

*Eu ganhêi dèz moédas,*

*Até que horas jugáraõ vm<sup>cs</sup>?*

*Até dúas horas despóis da  
mêya nõite,*

*A que horas fôí vm. para a  
câma?*

*A's três, ás três horas e mêya,*

*Naõ me admíro que vm. se  
levánte taõ tárde,*

*Que horas são?*

*Que horas lhe parece a vm.  
que sêjaõ,*

*Paréceme que apénas são oito,*

*Sím! oito! ja déraõ dèz,*

*Entãõ he preciso que me le-  
vãnte quãto mais deprés-  
sa pudér,*

**W**HERE is your master?  
Is he asleep still?

No, sir, he is awake.

Is he up?

No, sir, he is still a-bed.

What a shame 'tis to be a-bed  
at this time a-day.

I went to bed so late last  
night I could not rise early  
this morning.

What did you do after supper?

We danced, we sung, we  
laughed, we played.

At what game?

We played at piquet.

How grieved am I, I did not  
know it?

Who won? who lost?

I won ten moidores.

Till what hour did you play?

Till two in the morning.

At what o'clock did you go  
to bed?

At three, half an hour after  
three.

I don't wonder at your rising  
so late.

What's o'clock?

What do you think it is?

Scarce eight, I believe yet.

How! eight! it has struck  
ten.

Then I must rise with all  
speed.



## DIÁLOGO III.

## DIALOGUE III.

Para vestir-se.

*To dress one's self.*

**Q**UÉM está ahí?  
Que quer vm.?

**W**HO is there?  
What will you please  
to have?

*Despáxa-te, acênde o lume, e  
véste-me,*

Be quick, make a fire, dress  
me.

*Ha muito bom lume,  
Dá-me a minha camisa,  
Eila aquí está, senhór,  
Não está quente, está muito fria,  
Eu a aqueclaréi, se vm. quizer  
Não, não; tráze-me as mín-  
has méyas de seda,  
Huma déllas está róta,  
Da-lhe hum pônto, concérta-a,  
Dei-a ao que as concérta,*

There is a fine fire.  
Give me my shirt.  
Here it is, Sir.  
'Tis not warm, 'tis quite cold.  
If you please I'll warm it.  
No, no; bring me my silk  
stockings.  
One of them is torn.  
Stitch it a little, mend it.  
I have given it to the stock-  
ing mender.

*Fizéste-bem,  
O'nde estão as minhas chinélas  
O'nde está a minha roupa de  
châmbre?*

You have done right.  
Where are my slippers?  
Where is my night gown.

*Pentêa-me,  
Procúra outro pente,  
Dá-me o meu lenço,  
Eis aquí hum lavádo,  
Dá-me o que está na minha  
algibéira,  
Dei-o á lavandêira, elle está-  
va sújo,  
Trôuxé ella ja a minha roupa?  
Sim, senhór, e não falta nada,  
Tráze-me os meus calçôens,  
Que vestido quer vm. para  
hóje?*

Comb my head.  
Look for another comb.  
Give me my handkerchief.  
Here is a clean one.  
Give me that which is in my  
pocket.  
I gave it to the washer-wo-  
man, it was foul.  
Has she brought my linen?  
Yes, there wants nothing.  
Bring me my breeches.  
What clothes will you wear  
to-day?

*O mesmo de ontem,  
O alfaiáte ha de trazér logo  
o seu vestido,  
Bátem á porta, vé lá quem hé,*

Those I wore yesterday.  
The taylor will bring your  
cloth suit presently.  
Somebody knocks, see who  
it is.

*Quem hé?  
Hé o alfaiáte,  
Deixa-o entrár,*

Who is it?  
It is the taylor.  
Let him come in.



## DIÁLOGO IV. DIALOGUE IV.

O Senhôr e o Alfaiáte.

*The Gentleman and the  
Taylor.***T**RAZÊIS o meu vestido?**D**O you bring my suit of  
clothes?

*Sim, senhôr, eilo aquí,  
Há muito tẽmpo que estõu  
esperando por elle,  
Nãõ pũde vir até agõra,  
Nãõ estava acabado,  
Ainda nãõ estava forrado,  
Querem. vestir a casaca para  
vẽr se lhe está bẽm?  
Vejãmos se está bem feita,*

*Yes, sir, here it is.  
You make me wait a great  
while.*

*Tẽho para mim que lhe haja  
de agradar,  
Parece-me muito comprida,*

*I could not come sooner.  
It was not finished.  
The lining was not sewed.  
Will you please to try the  
close coat on?  
Let us see whether it be well  
made.*

*He costume agõra de trazẽ-  
las compridas,  
Abotoai-a,  
He muito apertada,  
Assim dẽve sẽr para que lhe  
estẽja bẽm ao cõrpo,  
Nãõ sãõ as mãngas demasiá-  
damẽte lãrgas?*

*I believe it will please you.  
It seems to me to be very  
long.  
They wear them long now.*

*Nãõ, senhôr, estãõ-lhe admi-  
rãvelmẽte,  
Os calcõens sãõ muito aper-  
tados?*

*Button it.  
It is too close.  
To fit properly, it ought to  
be close.  
Are not the sleeves too wide?*

*Esta he a mõda de agõra,  
Este vestido estã-lhe bizar-  
ramẽte,*

*No, sir, they fit very well.*

*He muito cõrto, muito com-  
prido, muito grãnde, muito  
pequẽno,*

*The breeches are very nar-  
row.  
That is the fashion.  
This suit becomes you migh-  
ty well.*

*Tẽdes feito a võssa cõnta?  
Nãõ, senhôr, nãõ tive tẽmpo,  
Trazei-a amanhaã, e pagãr-  
vos hei,*

*'Tis too short, too long, too  
big, too little.*

*Have you made your bill?  
No, sir, I had no time.  
Bring it to-morrow, I'll pay  
you.*



## DIÁLOGO V. DIALOGUE V.

Para almoçar.

To breakfast.

**T**RAZE-nos alguma coisa  
para almoçar,  
Sim, senhor, ha linguiças e  
pastelinhos,  
Gosta um de presunto?

**B**RING us something for  
breakfast.

Yes, sir, there are some sausages and petty-patees.  
Do you choose the gammon of bacon?

Sim, traze-o; comeremos  
huma talhada d'elle,  
Estênde hum guardanapo sobre  
aquella mesa,  
Dá-nos pratos, facas, e garfos,  
Láva os copos,  
Dá huma cadeira ao senhor,  
Assente-se um. assente-se ao  
pé do lume,  
Não tenho frio, aqui ficarei  
muito bem,  
Vejâmos se o vinho he bom,

Yes, bring it; we will eat a slice of it.

Lay a napkin on that table.

Give us plates, knives, and forks.

Rinse the glasses.

Reach the gentleman a chair.  
Sit down, sir; sit by the fire.

Dá cá aquella garráfa com  
aquelle copo,  
Fáça favor de provar aquella  
vinho,  
Como lhe agrada; que diz  
um. d'elle?  
Não hé máo, he muito bom,  
Eis aqui as linguiças, tira  
aquelle prato,  
Côma um. linguiças,  
Fa comi algumas, ellas são  
muito boas,  
Dá-me de beber,  
A saúde de um.  
Bom proveito faça a um.  
Dá de beber ao senhor,

I am not cold, I shall be very well here.

Let us see whether the wine be good.

Give me that bottle and a glass.

Taste that wine, pray.

How do you like it? what say you to it?

It is not bad, it is very good.  
Here are the sausages, take away this plate.

Eat some sausages, sir.

I have eat some, they are very good.

Give me some drink,

Your health, sir.

Much good may it do you.

Give the gentleman some drink.

I drank but just now.

The petty-patees were very good.

They were baked a little too much,

E'u bebi ainda agora,  
Os pastelinhos éraõ bem bons,  
Estávão hum pouco mais cozidos  
que devião estar,



*Vm. não come,  
Tenho comido tanto, que não  
poderei jantar,*

*Vm. está zombando, vm. não  
tem comido nada,  
Tenho comido com muito  
gosto, tanto das linguiças  
como do presunto,*

You do not eat.

I have eat too much, I shall  
not be able to eat any din-  
ner.

You only jest, you have eat  
nothing at all.

I have eat very heartily both  
of sausages and gammon of  
bacon.

## DIALOGO VI.

Para fallár Portuguêz.

**C**ÔMO vái vm. com o seu  
Portuguêz?

*Está vm. ja muito adiantado  
nêlle?*

*Ainda me falta muito; não  
sei quasi nada,*

*Dizem porém que vm. o falla  
muito bem,*

*Prouvera a Deos que assim  
fôsse!*

*Os que dizem isso, estão muito  
enganados,*

*Estéja vm. na certêza que  
assim mo dissêrao,*

*Posso fallár algumas paláv-  
ras que aprendi de cor,*

*E unicamênte o que hé neces-  
sário para começár a fallár,*

*O começár não he bastânte,  
he preciso que vm. acábe,*

*Falle vm. sêmpre ou bem, ou  
mal,*

*Tenho medo de dar êrros,*

*Não tenha vm. medo; a lín-  
goa Portuguêza não hé  
diffícil,*

*Conheço isso, e também que  
êlla he muito engraçada,*

*Que felicidade seria a minha  
se eu a soubêsse bem!*

## DIALOGUE VI.

To speak Portuguese.

**H**OW goes on your Po-  
tuguese?

Are you much improved in  
it now?

Far from it; I know nothing  
almost.

It is said, however, you speak  
it very well.

Would to God it were true!

Those that say so are much  
mistaken.

I assure you I was told so.

I can say a few words which  
I have learnt by heart.

And so much as is necessary  
to begin to speak.

The beginning is not all, you  
must make an end.

Be always speaking, whether  
well, or ill.

I am afraid to commit blun-  
ders.

Never fear; the Portuguese  
language is not hard.

I know it; and that it has  
abundance of graces.

How happy should I be, if I  
were master of it!



*A applicação hé o único méyo  
para aprendê-la,*

*Quanto tẽmpo há que vm. a-  
prẽnde?*

*Apẽnas há hum mēz,*

*Cómo se chãma o sêu mēstre?*

*Chãma-se——*

*Há muito tẽmpo que o con-  
hẽço,*

*Elle tem ensinãdo a muitos  
dos mēus amigos,*

*Não lhe diz elle ser preciso  
que fãlle sēmpre Portu-  
guêz?*

*Sim, senhôr, assim me diz  
muitas vêzes,*

*Pôis, porquê não fãlla vm.?*

*Com quem quẽr vm. que eu  
fãlle,*

*Com os que faliãrem com vm.*

*E'u quizêra fallár, mas não  
me atrẽvo,*

*He preciso que vm. não tẽnha  
mêdo, nem se pẽje dos que  
o ouvirem fallár,*

Application is the only way  
of learning it.

How long have you been  
learning?

Scarce a month yet.

What is your master's name?

His name is ——

I have known him a great  
while.

He has taught several friends  
of mine.

Does not he tell you that you  
must constantly talk Por-  
tuguese?

Yes, Sir, he often tells me so:

Why do not you talk then?

Who would you have me  
talk with?

With those who shall talk to  
you.

I would fain talk, but dare  
not.

You must not be afraid, you  
must be bold.

## DIÁLOGO VII.

### Do Tẽmpo.

**Q**UE tẽmpo faz?

*O tẽmpo está admirãvel,*

*O tẽmpo está roim,*

*Faz fríio? faz cálma?*

*Não faz fríio, não faz cálma,*

*Chóve? não chóve?*

*Não o crẽyo,*

*O vẽnto está mudãdo,*

*Terẽmos chũva,*

*Hôje não há de chovêr,*

*Chóve, Chóve a cântaros,*

*Estã nevãdo,*

*Trovêja,*

## DIALOGUE VII.

### Of the Weather.

**W**HAT sort of weather  
is it?

It is fine weather.

It is bad weather.

Is it cold? is it hot?

It is not cold, it is not hot.

Does it rain? does it not rain?

I do not believe it.

The wind is changed.

We shall have rain.

It will not rain to-day.

It rains, it pours.

It snows.

It thunders.



*Cáhe pédra,  
Relampaguêa,  
Faz muita calma,  
Geôu a nôite passáda?  
Naõ, senhór, mas agóra está  
geándo,  
Paréce-me que há nevoeiro,  
  
Vm. naõ se engána, assim hé,  
  
Vm. tem hum grãnde catarro,  
ou deflúxo,  
Há quinze días que o ténho,  
Que horas são,  
He cedo, naõ he tarde,  
He tẽmpo de almoçar?  
Pouco fálta para serem horas  
de jantar,  
Que faremos depóis de jan-  
tár?  
Darẽmos hum passéyo, ou  
irẽmos passeár,  
Vãmos dár húma vólta,  
Naõ vãmos fóra com este  
tẽmpo,*

It hails.  
It lightens.  
It is very hot.  
Has it freezed last night?  
No, Sir, but it freezes now.  
  
It appears to me to be a great  
fog.  
You are not mistaken, it is  
very true.  
You have caught a violent  
cold.  
I have had it this fortnight.  
What's o'clock?  
'Tis early, 'tis not late.  
Is it breakfast-time?  
'Twill be dinner-time imme-  
diately.  
What shall we do after din-  
ner?  
We'll take a walk.  
  
Let us take a turn now.  
We must not go abroad this  
weather.

## DIÁLOGO VIII.

Para perguntár que nóvas há.

**Q**UE vái de nóvo? ou que  
nóvas há?

Sábe vm. algúma cõusa de nó-  
vo?

Naõ ténho ouvído náda de  
nóvo,

De que se fálla pèlla cidáde?

Naõ se fálla de náda,

Naõ tẽdes ouvído fallár de  
guerra,

Naõ ouço fallár náda díssõ,

Porém fálla-se de hum cêrco,

Fallôu-se nísso, mas naõ hé  
verdáde,

## DIALOGUE VIII.

*To enquire after news.*

**W**HAT news is stirring?

Do you know any news?

I have heard none.

What's the talk of the town?

There's no talk of any thing.

Have you heard no talk of  
war?

I have heard nothing of it.

There's a talk however of a  
siege.

There was such a discourse,  
but it was not true.



*Antes pello contrario fállase de páz,  
Assim o créyo,  
Que se diz na córte?  
Fállase de húma viágem,  
Quando vos parece que el réy  
partirá?  
Não se sabe. Não se diz  
quando,  
O'nde, ou para onde se diz  
que elle irá?  
Huns dizem que irá para  
Flândres, e outros para  
Alemânia,  
E que diz a Gazêta?  
E'u não a lí,  
He verdáde o que se diz do  
Sr. — ?  
Pôis que se diz d'elle?  
Dizem que está ferido mortalmente,  
Muito me pesaria disso; elle  
he hum homem de bem,  
Quem o ferio?  
Dôus marôtos que o investi-  
raõ,  
Sabe-se o porquê?*

*A notícia que córre hé, que  
dêu num dëlles hum bo-  
fetaõ,  
E'u não créyo isso; nem êu  
taõ pouco,  
E'ilo vái, cedo saberêmos a  
verdáde,*

### DIÁLOGO IX.

*Para escrevêr.*

*DAI-ME húma fólha de  
papél, húma penna, e hú-  
ma pouca de tinta,  
I'de ao meu quáрто, e achareis  
em cima da mêsa tudo o que  
vos fôr preciso,*

On the contrary there's a  
talk of peace.

I believe so.

What say they at court?

They talk of a voyage.

When do you think the king  
will set out?

'Tis not known, they do not  
say when.

Where do they say he'll go?

Some say into Flanders,  
others into Germany.

And what says the Gazette?  
I have not read it.

Is it true what's reported of  
Mr. — ?

What of him?

They say he is mortally  
wounded.

I should be sorry for that,  
he's an honest man.

Who wounded him?

Two rogues that set upon  
him.

Is it known upon what ac-  
count?

The report is that he gave  
one of them a box on the  
ear.

I don't believe it. Nor I  
neither.

However, we shall soon know  
the truth.

### DIALOGUE IX.

*To write.*

**G**IVE me a sheet of pa-  
per, a pen, and a little  
ink.

Step to my closet, you'll find  
on the table whatever you  
want.



*Naõ há pënnas,  
 Há grãnde quantidãde dellas  
 na escriptaninha,  
 Naõ prestão para náda,  
 Lá há ôutras,  
 Naõ estão aparãdas,  
 O'nde está o vósso canivete?  
 Sabéis vós aparár pënnas?  
 Eu apáro-as a meu módo,  
 Esta não está má,  
 Em quãto acábo ésta cãrta,  
 fazêime o favôr de fechár  
 as ôutras, e fazer hum  
 máço déllas,  
 Que sêllo quér vm. que eu lhe  
 põha?  
 Sella-o com o meu sinête, ou  
 com as mínhas ármãs,  
 Com que lácre quer vm. que  
 as fêche,  
 Fechái-as com o vermêlho ou  
 com o prêto; sêja quãl fôr,  
 não impôrta,  
 Tem vm. pôsto a data?  
 Parece-me que sim, mas ainda  
 não a assinêi,  
 A quãtos estãmos hõje do  
 mēz?  
 A ôuto, a dêz, a quínze, a  
 vinte,  
 Põnde o sobrescritô?  
 O'nde está a arêa?  
 Vós núnca têndes arêa,  
 Ahí há algúma no areêiro,  
 Ahí está o sêu criãdo; quér  
 vm. que êlle lêve as cãrtas  
 ao corrêo,  
 Léva as mínhas cãrtas ao  
 corrêo, e não te esqueças de  
 pagár o pôrte,  
 Naõ ténho dinhêiro,  
 Ahí está húma moêda de ôuro,  
 Vã deprêssa, e vem lôgo,*

There are no pens.  
 There are a great many in the  
 standish.  
 They are good for nothing.  
 There are some others.  
 They are not made.  
 Where is your penknife.  
 Can you make pens?  
 I make them my own way.  
 This is not bad.  
 While I make an end of this  
 letter, do me the favour to  
 make a packet of the rest.  
 What seal will you have me  
 put to it?  
 Seal it with my cypher, or  
 coat of arms.  
 What wax shall I put to it?  
 Put either red, or black, no  
 matter which.  
 Have you put the date?  
 I believe I have, but I have  
 not signed it.  
 What day of the month is  
 this?  
 The eighth, the tenth, fif-  
 teenth, twentieth.  
 Put the address.  
 Where is the powder?  
 You never have powder or  
 sand.  
 There's some in the sand box.  
 There's your servant, will  
 you let him carry the let-  
 ter's to the post-office?  
 Carry my letters to the post-  
 office, and don't forget to  
 pay postage.  
 I have no money.  
 There's a moidore.  
 Go quickly, and return as  
 soon as possible.



## DIÁLOGO X.

Para comprar.

**Q**UE quer um.

*Quero hum bom panno fino  
para hum vestido,  
Tenha um. a bondade de en-  
trar, e verá o mais bello  
panno que há em Londres,  
Deixe-me ver o melhor que  
um. tem,*

*Aquí tem um. hum excellente,  
que agora se costuma tra-  
zer,*

*He hum bom panno, mas a  
côr não me agrada,*

*Ahí tem um. outra peça que  
tem a côr mais clara,*

*Agradame a côr, mas o panno  
não he forte, não tem cor-  
po,*

*Vêja esta peça; um. não ac-  
hará em nenhuma parte  
outra tão boa como ella,*

*Quanto pede um. por cada  
ana?*

*O seu justo preço he —*

*Sr. não he meu costume pôr-me  
a regatear; faça-me favor  
de dizer me o último preço,*

*Ja disse a um. que aquelle he  
o seu justo preço,*

*He muito caro, dar lhe hei a  
um. —*

*Não posso abatêr hum ceitil,  
Um. não há de vender por  
esse preço,*

*Um. quíz sabêr o último pré-  
ço, e eu disse-lho,*

## DIALOGUE X.

To buy.

**W**HAT do you want, sir?  
What would you please  
to have?

I want a good fine cloth to  
make me a suit of clothes.  
Be pleased to walk in, sir,  
you'll see the finest in  
London.

Shew me the best you have.

There's a very fine one, and  
what's worn at present.

'Tis a good cloth, but I don't  
like the colour.

There's another lighter piece.

I like that colour well, but  
the cloth is not strong, 'tis  
too thin.

Look upon this piece here,  
sir, you'll not find the like  
any where else.

What do you ask for it an  
ell?

Without exacting, it is  
worth —

Sir, I am not used to stand  
haggling; pray tell me  
your lowest price.

I have told you, sir, 'tis  
worth that.

'Tis too dear, I'll give you—

I can't bate a farthing.

You shall not have what you  
ask.

You asked me the lowest  
price, and I have told you.



*Hôra vâmos, côrte um. lá  
dúas ánas d'elle,  
Assegúro-lhe a um. cómo hó-  
mem de bem que sôu, que  
não gánho náda com um.  
Ahí tem um. cinco moédas de  
ôuro, dê-me a demasia,  
Tê nha a bondáde de dár-me  
ôutra em lugar désta, por-  
quê não he de pézo,  
Ahí esta ôutra,  
A Déos, criádo de um.*

Come, come, cut off two ells  
of it.

I protest, on the word of an  
honest man, I don't get  
any thing by you.

There's five moidores, give  
me the change.

Be pleased, sir, to let me have  
another for this, it wants  
weight.

There's another.

Farewell ; sir, your servant.

## DIALOGO XI.

*Para húma Jornáda.*

**Q**UANTAS légoas há da-  
quí a N.?

*Ha ôuto légoas,*

*Nós não poderêmos chegár  
lá hõje, hé muito târde,*

*Naõ hé senãõ mêyo día, um<sup>ces</sup>  
aínda têm bastãnte, têmpo,*

*Hé a estráda bõa?*

*Naõ he muito bõa pássaõ-se  
bósques e ríos,*

*Há algúm perígo nélla?*

*Naõ há notícias díso; hé  
estráda réal em que se en-*

*cõtra gẽte a cáda páso,*

*Póis não dízem que há ladrõ-  
ens nos bósques?*

*Naõ ha de que têr mêdo, nem  
de día, nem de nôite,*

*Por onde se vái?*

*Quãdo um<sup>ces</sup> chegárem ao pé  
do outeiro, he preciso, que  
tómem á mão dirêita,*

*Pó s não hé necessário subir  
hum outeiro?*

## DIALOGUE XI.

*For a Journey.*

**H**OW many leagues is it  
from this place to N.?

It is eight leagues.

We shall not be able to get  
thither to day, it is too late.

It is not more than twelve  
o'clock, you have time  
enough yet.

Is the road good?

So, so ; there are woods and  
rivers to pass.

Is there any danger upon that  
road?

There's no talk of it, it is a  
highway, where you meet  
people every moment.

Do not they say there are  
robbers in the woods?

There's nothing to be feared  
either by day or night.

Which way must one take?

When you come near the  
hill, you must take to the  
right hand.

Is it not necessary to ascend  
a hill then?



*Naõ, Sr. naõ há outro outeiro  
ro senaõ húma pequena  
ladêira, (ou descida) no  
bósque,  
Cústa a atínár com o camínho  
pello méyo dos bósques?  
Vm<sup>ces</sup> naõ pódem errá-lo,  
Lógo que vm<sup>ces</sup> sahírem do  
bósque, lembrem-se de to-  
már á maõ esquêrda,  
Vm<sup>ces</sup> múitos ánnos, fico-lhe  
múito obrigádo,  
Vámos, vámos, senhóres, to-  
mêmos hum cavállo,  
Onde está o marquêz?  
Elle foí adiãnte,  
E'lle há de estár esperándo por  
vós lógo alí fóra da cidade,  
Porqué está vm<sup>ce</sup> agóra espe-  
rándo? hóra, vámo-nos  
daqui, acabêmos,  
Fiquem-se embóra, senhóres,  
a Dêos,  
Fáçaõ vm<sup>ces</sup> múito bóa jor-  
náda,*

No, sir, there is no other hill  
but a little declivity in the  
wood.

Is it a difficult way through  
the woods?

You can't lose your way.

As soon as you are out of the  
wood, remember to keep  
to the left hand.

I thank you, sir, and am very  
much obliged to you.

Come, come, gentlemen, let's  
take a horse,

Where is the marquis?

He is gone before.

He'll wait for you just out of  
town.

What do you stay for now?  
come, come, let's be gone,  
let's have done.

Farewel, gentlemen, fare-  
wel.

I wish you a very good jour-  
ney.

## DIÁLOGO XII.

Da Cêa e da Pousáda.

**C**OMQUE assim estâmos  
chegádos á estalágem,  
Apeêmo-nos, senhóres,  
Pêga nos cavállos dêstes sen-  
hóres, e tráta dêlles,  
Vejâmos agóra o que vm. nos  
há de dár para ceár,  
Hum capão, méya dúzia de  
pômbos, húma saláda, seis  
codornízes, e húma dúzia  
do calhândras,  
Quêrem vm<sup>ces</sup> mais algúma  
côusa?  
Isto he bastânte, daí-nos al-  
gúm vinho que sêja bôm, e  
húma sobremêsa,

## DIALOGUE XII.

*Of the Supper and Lodging.*

**S**O, we are arrived at the  
inn.

Let's alight, gentlemen.

Take these gentlemen's horses,  
and take care of them.

Now let's see what you'll  
give us for supper.

A capon, half a dozen of pi-  
geons, a sallad, six quails,  
and a dozen of larks.

Will you have nothing else?

That's enough, give us some  
good wine, and a dessert.



*Deixem v<sup>m</sup> isso por minha  
Conta, eu lhes prometo que  
fiquem bem servidos,*

*Alumia aos senhores,*

*Dai-nos de ceár o máis de-  
préssa que fôr possível,*

*Antes que v<sup>m</sup> tenhaõ des-  
calçado as bótas, estará a  
cêa na mēsa,*

*Tênde cuidádo que tragaõ  
para cima as nossas malas  
e pistólas,*

*Descalcái-me as bótas, e de-  
spóis iréis vêr se tem dádo  
algúm fêno aos cavállos,*

*Leváí-os ao rio, e tênde cui-  
dádo que lhes dêm alguma  
avêa,*

*E'u terêi cuidádo de tudo,  
estêjaõ v<sup>m</sup> descangádos,*

*Senhores, a cêa está prômptá,  
está na mēsa,*

*Nós vâmos já,*

*Vâmos ceár, senhores, para  
nos hírmos deitár cêdo,*

*Dái-nos ágoa pára lavár as  
maõs,*

*Sentêmo-nos, senhores, sentê-  
monos á mēsa,*

*Dái-nos de bebêr,*

*Asaúde de v<sup>m</sup> meus senhores,*

*He bôm o vinho?*

*Naõ he máo,*

*O capão, naõ esta bem assádo,*

*Dái-nos húmas pôucas de  
laránjas, e huma pôuca de  
pimênta,*

*Porque naõ come v<sup>m</sup> dêstes  
pômbos?*

*Eu ténho comido hum pômbo,  
e três calhândras,*

*Dize ao estalajadêiro que lhe  
querêmos, fallár,*

Let me alone, I'll please you,  
I warrant you.

Light the gentlemen.

Let's have our supper as  
soon as possible.

Before you have pulled your  
boots off, supper shall be  
upon the table.

Let our portmanteaus and  
pistols be carried up stairs.

Pull off my boots, and then  
you shall go to see whether  
they have given the horses  
any bay.

You shall carry them to the  
river, and take care they  
give them some oats.

I'll take care of evêry thing,  
don't trouble yourself.

Gentlemen, supper is ready,  
it is upon the table.

We'il come presently.

Let's go to supper, gentle-  
men, that we may go to  
bed in good time.

Give us water to wash our  
hands.

Let us sit down, gentlemen,  
let's sit down at table.

Give us some drink.

To your health, gentlemen.

Is the wine good?

It is not bad.

The capon is not done enough

Give us some oranges with a  
little pepper.

Why don't you eat of these  
pigeons?

I have eaten one pigeon and  
three larks.

Tell the landlord we want to  
speak with him.



## DIÁLOGO XIII. DIALOGUE XIII.

Do saltár e do corrêr.

*Of jumping and running.***H**Ó R A vámos, quer um.  
saltár?**C**OME, will you go to  
jumping?Não hé bôm saltár logo des-  
póis de comêr,It is not good to jump imme-  
diately after dinner.De que módo de saltár gôsta  
um. máis?What leaping do you like  
best?O máis commúm he a pés jun-  
tos,The most usual is with one  
foot close to the other.Quer um. que saltêmos só com  
hum pé?

Shall we hop with one leg?

Cômo um. quizer,

As you please.

Estehéhum saltomuítogrãde  
Quântos pés saltôu um.?

This is a very great leap.

How many feet have you  
leap'd?

Máis de quátro,

More than four.

Apôsto que salto por cima da-  
quelle barrânco,I lay I leap clearly over that  
ditch.Vm. salta com hum pão com-  
prido,

You jump with a long stick.

Dêmos húma carreira,

Let us run races.

Quer um. que corrámos a pé  
ou a cavállo?Shall we run on foot or on  
horseback?

De húma e ôutra sôrte,

Both ways.

Diga um. dônde se há de  
começar, e ônde se há de  
acabár,

Appoint the race.

Começêmos a corrêr da quí,

This shall be the starting  
place.Correrêmos até chegár a ésta  
árvore,

This tree shall be the goal.

Têngo corrido três vêzes  
dêsde o lugár assinaládo  
até a árvore,I have run three times from  
the starting-place to the  
tree.Vm. não esperôu pello sinál  
para principiár a corrêr,You did not stay for the sig-  
nal to start.Aquêlle cavállo corréo muito  
bêm,That horse has run his race  
very well.Quântas carreíras tem êlle  
dádo?

How many heats has he run?

Três ou quátro,

Three or four.

Vm. tem ganhádo,

You have won the plate.



## CARTAS

DE

## COMMERCIO.

## LETTERS

ON BUSINESS, OR

## MERCANTILE AFFAIRS.

Senhor F. F. 30 de Janeiro  
Londres. de 1813.

Mr. F. F. The 30th of Jan.  
London. 1813.

**R**ECEBI as suas de 3 e 5 do passado, no dia 5 do corrente, vindas pelo Navio F. F. capitão B. B. pelas quaes vejo, Vm<sup>ca</sup>. pretênde carregár as fazêndas que recommendei ao seu cuidádo pela minha última, no primeiro Navio para ésta.

Inclúsas remêto a Vm<sup>ca</sup>. mais algúmas amóstras, porém dezêjo que queira recommendár ao Tintureiro, que as côres sejam vivas e firmes.

Pelo último Navio que daqui partio lhe remetí a conta de vênda, da sua partida de méias de seda, e das três Cáxas de Chapeós, pelo Navio A; e achándo Vm<sup>ca</sup>. algúmas partidas de qualquér dêstes dous gêneros, que lhe agrádem, as pôde mandár, pois são agora mui procurádos; deve comtúdo têr muito cuidádo em que sejam da última móda. Tenho verificádo o ajúste das 20 Pipas de Azeite da safra proxima, para partirem

**Y**OURS of the 3d and 15th of last Month, came to Hand on the 5th Current by the Ship F. F. Captain B. B.; and therein I take Notice, that you intend to put on board the next good Ship bound hither, the Goods I recommended to your Care in my last. Herewith I send you more Patterns, but I would desire you to be solicitous with your Dyer, that the Colours may be lively and durable. By the last Ship I remitted you Account of Sales, of the Parcel of Silk Stockings, and the three Boxes of Hats, by the Ship A; and if you meet with a Parcel of either, or both, to your Mind, please to send them, such Articles being now in Demand, but great Care must be taken of the Fashion and Make. I have taken care to secure your twenty Pipes of Oil for the first Ships in the Season, and



*pelos primeiros Navios: igualmente tenho carregado no Navio N. Capitão F. as suas 20 Pipas de Vinho tinto; assim como também as doze e três quartos de branco, cuja Factura remeto inclusa: Os conhecimentos, lhos remeterêi pelo correio. Heide estimar chégue tudo a salvamento. He quanto por hora se me offerêce a dizêrlhe; no entretanto sou*

*De Vm<sup>ca</sup>. muito.  
Veneradôr e Criado.*

---

*Senhôr Diôgo Jones.*

*VOU por ésta avisar a Vm<sup>ca</sup>. que pelo Navio Derby, lhe remetêi duas saquinhas de diamântes, importando em Pagódas 4396. 25 Fan. 10 Casks, em retôrno dos seus fundos em meu poder; os quaes fiz registrar nos livros da Companhia em conformidade com as suas ordems.*

*Inclusos achará o Conhecimento, Factura e a sua Conta corrente fechada, que desejo chéguem a salvamento e me alegrarei de que faça grandes interêces.*

*Cômo eu estou para voltar para a Európa, á minha chegada a Lóndres, terei a honra de o vêr, e lhe darêi então, huma relação exacta do commercio da India.*

*Tenho o gosto de sér,  
De Vm<sup>ca</sup>. Reverênte Crd<sup>o</sup>.  
e Veneradôr.*

*Forte de S. Forge.  
12 de Jan<sup>o</sup>. 1813.*

put on board the Ship N. Capt. F. your twenty Pipes of Red, and twelve Pipes and three Hogsheads of White Wine, of which the Invoice goes herewith, and the Bills of Lading shall be sent by the post, and I hope will come safe to hand; which being all that is necessary at present, I remain,

Sir,  
Your humble Servant.

---

Mr. James Jones.

Sir,

THESE will advise you, that by this Ship the Derby, I have made the return of your Stock in my Hands in two Bulses of Diamonds, amounting to Pagodas 4396, 25 Fan. 10 Casks, having registered them according to your Order in the Company's Books; inclosed is a Bill of Lading, together with Invoice, and your Account current closed, which I wish may come safe to you, and turn to a good Account. As I am returning to Europe, at my Arrival in London, I shall have the honour to see you, and give you an exact Account of the Trade in India. I am entirely,

Sir,  
Your humble Servant.

Fort St. George,  
Jan. 12, 1813.



Lisboa 4 de Março de 1811.

Sñr. João Ferrier.

Londres:

*ACHO-ME favorecido com a sua de 3 do passado, e vejo, que em execução ás minhas ordens, Vm<sup>ca</sup>. têm comprado os quinhentos Barris de Arenques de fumo, a 11l. por Last. Estou certo que esse hé o menor preço por que Vm<sup>ca</sup>. os pôde obter, e não tenho a menor dúvida que haõ de correspondêr na sua qualidade.*

*O meu Navio se está a aparelhár pára os ir buscár, e visto elle não demandár mais de nóve pés d' água, poderá mesmo carregár no seu Cáes (como Vm<sup>ca</sup>. teve a bondade de me dizêr) o que poupará quatro pennys por barril, de despêsas. Julgo que elle poderá carregár sette centos Barris, ou mais. O Capitão visto não ter despêzas a fazêr, não necessitará de dinheiro.*

*Agradêço-lhe muito a sua informação relativamente ao câmbio entre Lõndres e ésta Praça, mas como júlgo as remessas sobre o Exchêquer hum pouco arriscádas, Vm<sup>ca</sup>. se servirá sacár sobre mim ao câmbio mais vantajoso possível, ficando na certêza, que as suas Léttras serão pagas com a ponctualidade do costume.*

*Tenho o gòsto de sér,  
De Vm<sup>ca</sup>. m<sup>to</sup>. Attênto Ven<sup>to</sup>.*

Lisbon, 4 March, 1811.

Mr. John Ferrier,  
London.

Sir,

I AM favoured with yours of the 3d of last month, and find, in Compliance to my Order, you have bought the five hundred Barrels of red Herrings, at 11l. per Last. I make no doubt, but that was the lowest Price you could get them for, and the goodness of them does answer it. My Ship is getting ready with all speed to go down to fetch them, and she may be laden at your Quay, as she draws no more than nine feet of water, (as you are pleased to mention,) which will save the Charge of four Pence per Barrel; I judge she will carry seven hundred Barrels, or more. The Captain will not have Occasion for any Money, so will want no Supply. I thank you for the Information you gave me in relation to the Exchange between London and this Place, but as I look upon the Remittance of the Money hence, as hazardous in Exchequer Bills, you will be pleased to draw on me at the most commodious Exchange possible, and your Bills at the usual Course, which shall meet with all due honour from,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.



Londres 18 de Março  
de 1813.

Sñr. J. Morrice.  
Cadiz.

TENHO recebido em seu devido tempo as suas diferentes cartas, assim como também a minha conta corrente, a qual tenho lauçado nos meus Livros em conformidade com Vm<sup>ca</sup>.

A sua última hé de 29 do passado, e nella me mânda o recibo das três Léttras, emportando em seis mil Peças de Oito, que meu Irmão Jozé lhe remetêu por minha Conta e ordem: espéro fazer triste Negócio com ellas depóis de hum desembólço de tanto tempo, e com hum câmbio tão desfavorável. Acho que os limites que elle lhe dêu, fôraõ muito abáxo do câmbio, e preço da prata: porém visto eu ter esperádo tódo este tempo, e não havér probabilidade de hum ou outro baixár, Vm<sup>ca</sup>. se servirá remetêr-me o meu dinhéiro, ao câmbio corrente, para ésta Praça, ou Amsterdam, como lhe parecer mais conveniênte aos meus interêsses.

Se o preço da cochenilha, ou da Prata descêsset tanto, que Vm<sup>ca</sup>. julgásse sêr mais conveniênte para mim, empregár o meu dinhéiro em qualquér destes dõis gêneros, do que remetêr-me Léttras, nêsse cazo o poderá fazer, deixando eu isso inteiramente á sua disposiçaõ, na certêza

London, March 18, 1813.

Mr. J. Morrice.  
Cadiz.

Sir,

YOUR several Letters came to hand in due Time, as did my Account Current, which I have noted in conformity with you; your last to me was of 29 of last Month, wherein you give me Receipt of the three Bills, amounting to six thousand Pieces of Eight, which my Brother Joseph sent to you for my Account and by my Order; I shall make but a sorry Bargain of them, after so long a Disbursement; besides they cost me a dear Exchange; I find his limits to you were much under the Price of Plate and Exchange: Now since I have waited all this Time, and there being no Probability of their falling, be pleased to send my Money, as the Exchange comes, either for this Place or Amsterdam, which you judge will turn most to Account. If the Plate or Cochineal should fall to a Price, which you may conceive will answer better than by Remittance at a due Exchange, in such case invest my Money in either of them, which I do entirely leave to you, being persuaded, you will act in my Affairs equal to your own. I should be glad to hear of the Fleet's Arrival; for perhaps, it might give some fa-



de que tratará dos meus interesses, com o mesmo disvêlo como se fôsem seus próprios.

Estimaria saber da chegada do cambóy, porque poderia ser produzisse alguma mudança favorável no Comércio, e que cada hum podesse fazer uso dos seus capitães; pois ao presente as circumstancias não convidão a náda. Hé quanto por agora se me offerêce a dizer-lhe. No entretanto tenho o gosto de ser

De Vm<sup>ce</sup>. m<sup>to</sup>. Attênto  
Ven<sup>or</sup>. e Criado.

Londres 3 de Abril  
de 1813.

Sen<sup>res</sup>. Mills & C<sup>a</sup>.

Porto.

ESTA serve de informar a Vm<sup>ces</sup>. que de Sexta feira a ioto dias se haõ de abrir os Livros do Banco de Inglaterra, para pagar os devidendos vencidos até aquêlle dia, em que eu não deicharei de receber o que lhes pertence dos juros respectivos até a esse tempo, em virtude dos poderes que me conferirão para esse fim, e depois de os ter recebido, lhos remeterei.

Deos guarde a Vm<sup>ces</sup>.

m<sup>tes</sup>. annos.

De Vm<sup>ces</sup>. m<sup>to</sup>.

Ven<sup>or</sup>. e Crd<sup>o</sup>.

vourable turn to business, so that one could make some use of one's money, for at present, it does not invite one to any thing; which is all from,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

London the 3d of April,  
1813.

Messieurs Mills & Co.

Oporto.

THIS may serve to inform you that the Books will be opened at the Bank of England on Friday se'nnight, to pay the dividends due up to this time to the parties concerned, when I shall be ready to receive whatever belongs to you both, with the respective interests thereon, by virtue of your powers given to me for that purpose, and on receipt thereof, shall remit the same to you, whom God preserve many years.

Your most humble Servant.



Hum Escrito, ou Bilhete aberto, a hum Amigo ou Vezinho, em qualquer occasião.

*AO Senr. G. S. que seu creado T. M. lhe róga o favor, de lhe enviar pelo Portadór*

*de que agora precisa, e por que lhe ficará muito obrigado.*

*A short open Escrito, or Message, to a Friend or Neighbour, for any thing upon occasion.*

TO Mr. G. S. that T. M. his most humble Servant, desires the favour of him, to send by the Bearer

having at present immediate occasion for it, and he shall always remain obliged to him as his  
Humble Servant.

Carta, ou Instrumêto de Procuração.

*SAIBAM tôdos quântos este instrumêto, ou Carta de procuração virem, que eu A. B. de Londres, hómem de negócio, ténho nomeádo e constituído e por esta presente nomêo, ordêno, constituo e faço o Senhor B. C. de Negociante, méo verdadêiro e legítimo procuradór, por mim e em meu Nôme e ao meu uso, pôde demandár, arecadár, e recebêr de T. B. Negociante a sôma de a mim devída pelo ditto T. B. dândo e por esta concedêdo ao meu ditto Procuradór o meu poder plenario e autoridade de exercitár, e de usar de todas e taes acções e ôutras cousas em direito necessárias, para a cobrança da ditta dívida, e em meu nôme, de dar, e fazer quitações ôu ôutras descárgas, e geralmente de fazer e executar na materia sobreditta tão plenáriamênte*

*A Letter of Attorney.*

KNOW all Men by these Presents, That I A. B. of London, Merchant, have named and constituted, and by these presents do name, ordain, appoint, and make my trusty friend, B. C. of Merchant, my true and lawful Attorney, for me, and in my name, and to my Use, to Demand, sue for, recover, and receive of T. B. of Merchant, the Sum of

to me due and owing by and from the said T. B. giving, and hereby granting unto my said Attorney, my full Power and Authority to use and exercise all such Acts, Things, and Devices in the Law, as shall be necessary for the recovering of the said Debt, and give Acquittance, or other Discharges, in my Name; to make and give, and generally to do and exe-



como se eu mesmo fizesse ou pudesse fazer, estando pessoalmente presente; ratificando, confirmando, e outorgando toda e qualquer cousa que o ditto meu procurador legitimamente fizer ou causar de se fazer nella por esta presente. Em testemunha do que Assinei e sellei esta em  
aos 20 dias do mēz de Março de 1807. por A. B.

Assinado e Sellado

diante de

T. A. }  
M. B. } Testemunhas.

cute on the Premises, as fully as myself might or could do, were I personally present; ratifying, confirming and allowing all and whatsoever my said Attorney shall lawfully do, or cause to be done therein, by these Presents. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal, in the 20th of March, 1807.

Sealed and delivered A. B.

In the Presence of

T. A.

M. B.

Carta ou o Instrumēto de Fretamēto.

ESTA carta ou Instrumēto de Fretamēto contratado, feito aos dias do mēz de do Anno de do nacimēto de nōsso Senhor Jhesus Christo, &c. Entre T. B. Mestre, debaixo de Deos, do navio nomeado, de dozentas e cincoenta toneladas que ao presēte estā Surto e ancorado no Rio de de hūma parte, e E. T. M. B. L. &c. homens de negōcio da outra parte: Certificaō que o ditto Mēstre tem dado em aluguel e fretado o ditto Navio aos dittos hōmens de negōcio e que elles os dittos Hōmens de negōcio têm tomado em aluguel pēlla viagem aos concētos e às condiçōes, asaber; o ditto Mēstre faz concēto, promete e otōr-

*The Copy of a Charter-Party of Affreightment.*

THIS Charter Party of Affreightment, indented, made the of the Month of Anno Domini, between T. A. Master, under God, of the good Ship or Vessel, called the of the Burthen of Tuns, or thereabouts, now riding at Anchor, in the River of of the one Part, and E, T, M, B, L, &c. Merchants, of the other Part, witnesseth, that the said Master has granted and let the said Ship to freight unto the said Merchants, and that they the said Merchants have accordingly hired her for the Voyage, and upon the Terms and Conditions following: That is to say, the said Master does cove-



ga, por elle mesmo, seus Testamenteiros, e Administradores, e com os dittos homens de negócio, e qualquer dëlles, ou seus, e a qualquer dos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes, por estes presentes; que o ditto Navio forte e saõ de quilha, e bem provido de mantimentos, enxárcias e gente, e aparelhado de tôdas as cousas convenientes e necessárias para fazer a viagem adiante declarada; com o primêiro vento favorável e bom tempo que Deos permitir despóis da data da presente, partirá do pôrto de com tôdas as tâes fazêndas e Mercadorias que os dittos homens de negócio ou os Seus Constituintes, entremêntes carregaraõ ou meteraõ abôrdo dëlle, e com elle em direitura dará á vela e applicará ao como o vento e o tempo mais favorecerem ao ditto Navio na sua viagem; e em chegãdo taõ perto do ditto lugar de elle o ditto Mestres ou os Seus Constituintes dentro de Dias de trabalho para se contárem logo despois de tal sua chegada, não sômênte descargaraõ, entregaraõ as dittas fazêndas e mercadorias metidas abôrdo do ditto Navio ao sobre ditto, aos dittos homens de negócio, aos seus Feitores ou Constituintes, ou a algúns ou algúm dëlles a Salvamêto e bem acondi-

nant, promise, and grant for himself, his Executors, and Administrators, to and with the said Merchants, and either of them, their and either of their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents; That the said Ship, strong and sound, and well and sufficiently victualled, tackled, manned, and apparelled, with all Things fit, needful and necessary for the Performance of the Voyage hereafter mentioned, shall, with the first fair Wind and Weather, which God shall send, after the Date of these Presents, depart from the Port of with all such Goods and Merchandize as the said Merchants, or their Assigns, shall in the mean time lade and put on board of her, and therewith directly sail, and apply unto as Wind and Weather shall best serve for the said Ship to sail, and being arrived as near to the said Place of he the said Master, or Assigns shall and will, within working Days next from and after such her Arrival to be accounted, not only unlade and deliver the said Goods and Merchandize put on board the said Ship at aforesaid, unto the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one of them, in Safety, and well conditioned, the Dangers of the Seas, and



*cionadas, salvo o risco dos mares, e o tolhimêto de principes e Governadôres, mas também receberão, tornarão a carregár, e tomarão abórão do ditto Navio, de e dos dittos homens de negócio, dos seus Feitores ou Constituintes, ou de algúns ou algúm dëlles, tôdas as tues fazêndas e mercadorias que êlles ou qualquer dëlles ali carregaráõ, ou meterão abórdo dêlie até o comprimêto inteiro da carga do ditto Navio; asabêr; tanto quanto bêm se poder arrumár debaixo da cubêrta no convês, e adiãnte do mastro grãde, Salvo o lugar para os mantimêtos, enxârcias e aparêlhos do ditto Navio, e os dittos dias de trabalho sêndo acabâdos, ou o ditto navio sêndo ali mais deprêssa despachâdo, o que primêiro succedêr, elle o ditto Méstre ou os seus constituintes com a primêira bôa occasião de têmpo e vênto favorável em dereitura navegarrão e tornarão a vir côm o ditto Navio e a Sua Carga, do ditto pôrto de descaregar, e recaregar de aqui dêntro de*

*diás de trabalho logo despôis da entrâda do ditto Navio dáda na alfândega desta ditta elle o ditto Méstre ou os seus Constituintes descaregarão e entregaráõ as dittas fazêndas e mercadorias carregâdas abórdo do ditto Navio ao*

Restraint of Princes and Rulers excepted, but also shall and will receive, relade, and take on board the said Ship, of and from the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one of them, all such Goods and Merchandize, as they or any of them shall there please to lade and put on board her, to the said Ship's full and compleat Lading; that is to say, as much as can conveniently be stowed in the whole Hold, and between Decks, afore the main mast, Room only reserved for the said Ship's Provisions, Tackle, and Apparel, and the said working Days being expired, or the said Ship there sooner dispatched, which first shall happen, he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will, with the then next Opportunity of Wind and Weather from her said unlading and relading Port of aforesaid, directly sail, return, and come back with the said Ship and Lading unto the Port of and here within working Days next after the said Ship shall be entered in the Custom-House of this said

he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will unlade, and deliver the said Goods and Merchandizes, laden on board the said Ship at her lading and relading aforesaid, unto the said Merchants, their Execu-



*sêu descarregár e recarregár  
sobre ditto, aos dit-  
tos hómens de negócio, e os  
seus Testamenteiros, Admi-  
nistradores, ou Constituintes,  
a salvamêto, salvo o risco  
dos mares e o tolhimêto de  
Príncipes e Governadores, e  
assim se acabará a ditto des-  
tináda Viagem*

*E os  
dittos hómens de negócio con-  
cêrtam, prométem, e otórgam  
por elles mêsmos e qualquér  
dêlles, ou sêus, e qualquér de  
sêus Testamenteiros, Admi-  
nistradores, e Constituintes  
por esta presente: que  
os sêus Testamenteiros, Ad-  
ministradores, Feitores ou  
Constituintes não sómênte des-  
caregarão e recaregarão o  
ditto navio ao seu pôrto, de  
descaregár, e recaregar de  
sobre ditto, e despa-  
charão e descaregarão o mê-  
mo nêste*

*na ma-  
nêira e fôrma acima decla-  
rada: e dêntro dos cêrtos  
dias e têmpos sôbre nomeá-  
dos; Mas também por in-  
têiro de tôdo o frête que se  
vencêr, para se pagar e  
pedir por e durânte ésta pre-  
sênte destináda viagem; bêm  
e verdadeiramente pagarão  
ou causarão que se págue ao  
ditto Méstre, aos sêus Testa-  
menteiros, Administradores  
ou Constituintes a  
somma de de din-  
hêiro corrênte de  
na manêira e fôrma seguinte;  
Asabêr parte  
dêlle dêntro em  
diás despóis da entráda do*

tors, Administrators, or As-  
signs, in safety, and well con-  
ditioned, the Dangers of the  
Seas, and Restraint of Princes  
and Rulers, excepted, and so  
end the said intended Voyage;  
and the said Merchants do co-  
venant, promise, and grant, for  
themselves, and either of them,  
their, and either of their Exe-  
cutors and Administrators, to  
and with the said Master, his  
Executors and Administra-  
tors, and Assigns, by these  
Presents, that their

Executors, Administrators,  
Factors, or Assigns, shall and  
will not only unlade and re-  
lade the said Ship, at her un-  
lading and relading Port of  
aforesaid, and dis-  
patch, and discharge the same  
at this in the Man-  
ner and Form as above ex-  
pressed, and within the re-  
spective Days and Times  
above mentioned, but also  
shall and will, in full of all  
Freight to be due, payable, or  
demandable, for or during  
this present intended Voyage,  
well and duly pay, or cause  
to be paid, unto the said  
Master, his Executors, Ad-  
ministrators, or Assigns,

the Sum of  
of lawful mo-  
ney of in the Man-  
ner and Form following:  
That is to say,  
Part thereof within  
Days after the said Ship shall  
be entered into the Custom  
House of Item,

more thereof



*ditto navio dáda na alfândega de*      *Item*  
*máis . . . . . dentro em*

*dias proximos seguintes,*  
*e o restante do ditto frete inteiro dentro em*      *dias*

*logo despóis da descárça do ditto Navio aquí em*

*sobre ditto, E acórdase reciprocamente por e entre ambas as partes por elles mesmos, os seus particuláres Testamenteiros, e Administradores que todos os gastos dos portos que se vencêrem para pagárse ou pedirse, durante esta presente destináda viagem; serão pagos e satisfeitos na maneira e forma seguinte; Asaber*

*délles, péllos dittos homens de negocio ou seus Testamenteiros ou Constituintes:*

*Além disso, por ésta se concerta que poderá sér e seja lícito aos, e péllos dittos homens de negocio, os seus feitôres, ou Constituintes de retêr o ditto navio em detença ao seu porto, descarga e recárça sobre ditta, e também em . . . . . sobre ditto,*

*tanto tempo e tantos dias que se requêirão, além dos dias certos acima apontados, salvo que não passem*

*dias por inteiro; Elles os dittos homens de negocio, os seus Feitôres, Constituintes por cáda húm e cáda tál dia pagando ao ditto Mestre ou aos seus Constituintes de dia em dia, como mesmo se vencer para se pagar, qualquér cousa sobreditta em contrario*

*within*

*Days then next following, and the remaining part of the said whole Freight within*

*Days next after the said Ship shall be delivered after lading here at*      *aforesaid; and*

*it is mutually agreed by and between the said Parties to these Presents, for themselves, their several Executors and Administrators, That all Port Charges which shall grow due, payable, or demandable, during this present intended Voyage, shall be paid and satisfied in the Manner and Form following; That is to say,*

*thereof by the said Merchants, their Executors, Factors, or Assigns, and the other*      *thereof*

*by the said Master, his Executors or Assigns: Further, it is hereby agreed, that it shall and may be lawful unto and for the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, to keep the said Ship in Demurrage at her unlading and relading Port above mentioned, and also at*      *aforesaid, over and above the respected Daysaforementioned, such other Time and Number of Days as will be requisite, so as the same exceed not*

*Days in the whole, they the said Merchants, their Factors, for each and every such Day, paying unto the said Master, or his Assigns*

*Day by Day, where the same shall grow due and payable, any thing*



*não obstante; e pello comprimêto de tôdas, e de câda, huma das côusas acima declaradas, as quâes por parte e pello que tôca ao ditto Mestres, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores ou Constituintes e câda hum dëlles são e devem de ser avidas, tidas, observadas e compridas, o ditto Mestre se obriga a si mesmo, os seus Testamenteiros, e Administradores, juntamente com o ditto Navio, o seu frête, enxárcias e aparêlhos aos dittos homens de negócio, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, e câda hum dëlles na sôma ou pênna de dinheiro corrénte de para se pagar bêm e verdadeiramente por ésta presênte, e também pello comprimêto de tôdas e de câda huma das côusas sôbre dittas, os quâes por parte e pello que tôca aos dittos homens de negócio, aos seus Testamenteiros Administradores, Constituintes ou qualquér dëlles, são e devem de ser guardadas, pagas, e Compridas; os dittos homens de negócio se obrigão a si mesmos, os seus Testamenteiros, e Administradores, junta e separadamente com a suas fazendas que se carregaraõ abôrdo do ditto Navio nesta presênte destináda viagem, ao ditto Mestre aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, e a câda hum dëlles, na semelhãnte Sôma da pênna de*

aforesaid to the contrary notwithstanding; and for the Performance of all and singular the Premises, which on the Part and Behalf of the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, are and ought to be well and truly holden, observed, and performed, the said Master doth bind and oblige himself, his Executors, and Administrators, together with the said Ship and her Freight, Tackle and Apparel unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, in the Sum or Penalty of

Pounds of lawful Money of well and truly to be paid by these Presents, and likewise for the Performance of all and singular the Premises, which on the Part and Behalf of the said Merchants their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, or any of them, are and ought to be kept, paid and performed, the said Merchants do bind and oblige themselves, their Executors, and Administrators, jointly and severally, together with their Goods, to be laden on board the said Ship, this present intended Voyage, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, in the like Sum and Penalty of of

like lawful Money of also well and truly



de Semelhante dinheiro corrente de para ser pago bem e verdadeiramente por esta presente; Em Testemunha do que as partes Sobredittas assinaraõ e Selaraõ reciprocamente estas presentes Cartas de freteamento contratadas, ao dia e anno primeiro acima declarado.

T. B.

Sellado e entregue  
diante de  
A. B. C. D.

#### Apólice de Seguro.

Em o Nome de Deos,  
Amen,  
Tanto no seu próprio nome, como, por, ou em o nome, ou nomes de todos e cada pessoa ou pessoas a quem o mesmo pertencer, possa ou poderá pertencer, em parte ou em todo, faz o Seguro, causa asi mesmo e a elles, e a cada hum delles, de assegurar-se, perdidos ou não perdidos

sobre qualquer género de fazendas e Mercadorias quaesquer, carregadas ou para se carregarem abordo do bom Navio por nome do porte de toneladas, de que he Mestre debaixo de Deos P. M. ou quem quer que for por Mestre do ditto Navio, ou o Mestre, delle se nomee ou nomeará; principiando a aventura sobre as dittas fazendas e Mercadorias de, e

to be paid by these Presents. In Witness whereof, the Parties aforesaid to these present Charter-Parties indented, have interchangeably put their Hands and Seals the Day and Year first above written.

T. B.

Sealed and delivered in  
the Presence of  
A. B. C. D.

#### A Policy of Assurance.

In the Name of God,  
Amen, as well  
in his own Name, as for and in the Name and Names of all and every other Person and Persons to whom the same doth, may or shall appertain, in Part, or in all, does make Assurance, and causes himself and them, and every of them, to be insured, lost, or not lost upon any kind

of Goods and Merchandize whatsoever, laden or to be laden aboard the good Ship called the Burthen

Tons, or thereabouts; whereof P. M. is Master, under God, for this present Voyage or whosoever else shall go for Master in the said Ship, or by whatsoever Name or Names the said Ship, or the Master thereof, is or shall be named or called;



*logo despóis de carregállas abórdo do ditto Navío e assim se continuará e ficará até que o ditto Navío côm as dittas fazêndas e Mercadorías quâesquér chegar e as mesmas ahí descarregádas em Salvamênto; e será lícito parao ditto navío, nesta viágem, de parár e detêrse em quâesquér pórtos, ou lugáres sêm prejuízo a êste Segúro. As dittas fazêndas e Mercadorías por concêrto, são, e serão avaliádas em Sêm que se dê ôutra conta déll asmêsmas, tocânte as Aventúras e ríscos com que nós os Seguradóres nos contentamos e que tomámos sôbre nós nésta viágem; Ellas são dos Máres, das náos de guér-ra, de fôgo, inimígos, Corsarios, Ladrões, Roubadôres, Alijamêntos ou fazêndas perdidas e deitádas no már, lettras de Marca, e contra Marca, sobresáltos, tomadiás no Már, citações, tolhimêntos e detênças de tôdos os Réys, Príncipes e póvos de nação, condição ou qualidáde qualquér, barratría e contrástes enganósos do méstre e dos Marinheiros, e de tôdos os ôutros perígos; pérdas e desástres que ja viêraõ ou que viráõ, ou prejuízo, desaproveitamento ou dâno das dittas fazêndas e mercadorías, ou de alguã páрте déllas. E se acáso succedêr algúma pérda ou desventúra, será lícito aos Asseguradóres, Feitôres, Sér-*

*beginning the Adventure upon the said Goods and Merchandise from and immediately following the Lading thereof aboard the said Ship and so shall continue and endure until the said Ship, with the said Goods and Merchandise whatsoever shall be arrived and the same there safely landed; and it shall be lawful for the said Ship in this Voyage to stop and stay at any Port or Places without prejudice to this Assurance. The said Goods and Merchandise by Agreement, are and shall be valued at*

*without further Account to be given for the same, touching the Adventures and Perils which we the Assurers are contented to bear, and do take upon us in this Voyage; they are of the Seas, Men of War, Fire, Enemies, Pirates, Rovers, Thieves, Jetsons, Letters of Marque and Counter-marque, Surprisals, Takings of Sea, Arrests, Restraints, and Detainments of all Kings, Princes, and People of what Nation, Conditions, or Quality soever, Baratry of the Master and Mariners, and of all other Perils, Losses and Misfortunes, that have or shall come to the Hurt, Detriment, or Damage of the said Goods and Merchandise, or any part thereof; and in Case of any Loss or Misfortune, it shall be lawful to the assured Fac-*



*vos e Constituintes de mandár  
fazêr diligências e trabalhár  
por, em, e ácerca da defêza,  
Salvamêto, e recobramêto  
das dittas fazêndas e merca-  
dorias, ou de algúma pártē  
dellas sêm prejuízo dēste Se-  
guro, aos gástos do que nós  
os asseguradôres contribui-  
rêmos cada hum confôrme a  
Sua quantia nêlle assegu-  
rada; e nós os Assegura-  
dôres estâmos de acôrdo e  
concêrto que ésta escritúra e  
segúro terá tanta fôrça e  
valôr cômô a máis authêntica  
Apolice ou Escritúra de Se-  
gúro dântes feita em qual-  
quêr pártē de*

*E assim nós os  
Asseguradôres sômos con-  
têntes e por ésta prometêmos e  
nos obrigâmos cada hum por  
sua própria pártē, os nossos  
Herdeiros, Testamentêiros,  
Administradôres e Consti-  
tuíntes pêllo verdadêiro com-  
primêto das côusas acima  
declarâdas, confessâdo que  
estâmos págos e satisfêitos do  
que se nos dêve áconta dēste  
Segúro.*

*Em testemúnha do que nós  
os Seguradôres, assinâmos ao  
pé dēste, com as quantias as-  
segurâdas, &c.*

*Eu A. B. sôu contênte com  
este Segúro por cêm libras  
Esterl. L. em de £. 100.*

tors, Servants, and Assigns,  
to sue, labour, and travel,  
for, in, and about the De-  
fence, Safeguard, and Reco-  
very of the said Goods and  
Merchandise or any part  
thereof, without Prejudice to  
this Assurance, to the Charges  
whereof, we the Assurers  
will contribute each one ac-  
cording to the Rate and  
Quantity of his Sum herein  
assured: And it is agreed by  
us the Insurers, that this  
Writing and Assurance shall  
be of as much Force and Ef-  
fect, as the surest Policy or  
Writing of Assurance here-  
tofore made in  
or elsewhere in

and so we the Assurers are  
contented, and do hereby  
promise and bind ourselves,  
each one for his own Part,  
our Heirs, Executors, and  
Assigns, to the Assured,  
their Executors, Administra-  
tors, and Assigns, for the  
true Performance of the Pre-  
mises, confessing ourselves  
paid the Consideration due  
unto us for this Assurance,  
by

In Witness  
whereof, we the Assurers  
have subscribed our Names  
and Sums assured in

I A. B. am contented with  
this Assurance for One hun-  
dred Pounds. Witness my  
Hand the 15th of } £. 100  
March, 1811.

Conhecimento.

DIGO eu T. B. de

*A Bill of Lading.*

SHIPPED, by the Grace



*Mestre ou Capitão que  
 sou do Navio que Deos salve  
 por Nome                      que ao  
 presente está surto e anco-  
 rado no porto de  
 para com o favor de Deos  
 seguir a sua viagem ao porto  
 de                      aonde he minha  
 direita descarga, que he ver-  
 dade, que recebi, e tenho car-  
 regado dentro do ditto Na-  
 vio debaixo de cuberta en-  
 xuta e bem acondicionada de  
 Mercado coma-  
 marca de fora, o qual me  
 obrigo o prometo, levandome  
 Deos a bom salvamento e  
 ditto Navio ao ditto Porto,  
 de entregár em nome do so-  
 breditto a T. M.  
 auzente a quem seus poderes  
 tiver                      pagandome de  
 frete                      para assim com-  
 prir e guardár, obrigo minha  
 pessoa, e bens e ditto Navio;  
 em certesa do qual dei tres  
 conhecimentos de hum theór,  
 assinados por mim ou por  
 meu Escrivão; hum com-  
 prido os outros não válhaõ;  
 feito em                      14 de  
 Março de 1811 Annos.*

*Ignoro o conteúdo.*

*Instrumento ou Escritura de  
 Compromisso.*

*A TODOS quantos este  
 presente Instrumento ou  
 Escritura de Compromisso  
 virem, de nós Acredôres de*

*of God, in good Order, and  
 well-conditioned, by*

*in and upon the good  
 Ship called the  
 whereof is Master under God,  
 for this present Voyage*

*and now riding at  
 Anchor in                      and,*

*by God's Grace, bound for  
 to say*

*being marked and numbered  
 as in the Margin, and are to  
 be delivered in like good  
 Order, and well-conditioned,  
 at the aforesaid Port of*

*the Danger of the  
 Seas only excepted, unto Mr.*

*or his Assigns, he  
 or they paying for the said  
 Goods                      with*

*Primage and Average, as is  
 accustomed. In Witness*

*whereof, the Master and  
 Purser of the said Ship has  
 affirmed to three Bills of  
 Lading, all of this Tenor and  
 Date; the one of which three  
 Bills being accomplished, the  
 other two to stand void.*

*And so God send the good  
 Ship to her desired Port in  
 Safety. Amen. Dated in*

*the 14th of March  
 1811.*

*Inside and Contents un-  
 known.*

*A Letter of Licence.*

*TO all People, to whom  
 this present Writing shall  
 come, We the Creditors of  
 G. M. of*



G. M. *Negociante de*  
*Saúde; Como o ditto*  
 G. M. *ao presente fica de-*  
*vendo e em direito deve a*  
*nós os Acredôres d'elle ditto*  
 G. M. *várias e diversas sôm-*  
*mas de Dinheiro, &c. As*  
*quaes em razão de muitas*  
*dívidas e algúmas déllas mui*  
*grâdes, que também em di-*  
*reito se lhe devem a elle, não*  
*se podem arrecadár sem al-*  
*guma, dilação de tempo, e*  
*por serem algúmas déllas ir-*  
*recuperáveis sem demânda,*  
*elle está por ora muito desa-*  
*bilitado de fazer pagamêto*  
*a nós os seus Acredôres da*  
*nóssa intêira e justa dívida*  
*conforme a sua vontade e*  
*desêjo; a respeito de que,*  
*elle nos pede com todo o en-*  
*carecimento que nós os dittos*  
*Acredôres, e cada hum de*  
*nós fôssemos servidos de dár*  
*e conceder a elle o Ditto G.*  
 M. *aos seus Testamenteiros,*  
*Administradores, ou Consti-*  
*tuíntes, tanta larguêsa ou*  
*dilação de tempo pello paga-*  
*mêto e satisfação de nóssas*  
*dívidas particulâres, que lhe*  
*parecêr justo, e rasão pello*  
*alcance e cobrança das dittas*  
*dívidas: Asabêr, que nós e*  
*câda hum de nós ficássemos*  
*contêntes a tomár e receber*  
*de nóssas dívidas intêiras*  
*em para se repartirem*  
*em partes, para se*  
*pagarem em paga-*  
*mentos diversos na maneira*  
*e fórma Seguinte: Asabêr, o*  
*primeiro pagamêto délla há*  
*de ser e o resto pagar-*

Merchant, send greeting.  
 Whereas the said G. M. at  
 this present Time, does stand  
 indebted, and does justly owe  
 unto us the said Creditors of  
 him the said G. M. divers  
 and sundry Sums of Money,  
 &c. which, by reason of many  
 Debts, and some of them very  
 great, that are likewise justly  
 owing unto him, and cannot  
 be had or recovered without  
 some Respite of Time, and  
 some of them not without  
 Suit, he is very much dis-  
 abled at present to make  
 Payment unto us the said  
 Creditors, our whole and just  
 Debt, as he seems willing and  
 desirous; in consideration  
 whereof, he instantly desires  
 us, That we the said Credi-  
 tors, and every one of us,  
 would be pleased to give and  
 grant unto the said G. M. his  
 Executors, Administrators,  
 or Assigns, such Liberty or  
 Respite of Time, for the  
 Payment and Satisfaction of  
 our several Debts, as he  
 thinks reasonable for the ob-  
 taining, getting, and reco-  
 vering of the said Debts:  
 viz. That we and every one  
 of us would be content to  
 take, and accept of our whole  
 Debts in to be di-  
 vided in Parts, to  
 be paid at several  
 Payments, in Manner and  
 Form following: viz. The  
 first Payment thereof to be  
 and the Residue to  
 be paid at next  
 in full Payment and Satisfac-



se-há em proximo  
 pélla intêira pága e  
 Satisfação das dittas dívidas  
 especeficadas; E pélla máis  
 plenário comprimento dos  
 vários pagamentos sobre-  
 dittos em tal manêira e fórma  
 cômo acima se limita e de-  
 clára; ao verdadeiro intênto  
 destas presêntes elle o ditto  
 G. M. ao ou ântes do  
 será obrigádo a nós os dittos  
 acrédores na mesma confor-  
 midade, por húma obrigação  
 que se fará na melhor fórma  
 de derêito com tôdos e cada  
 hum dos pagamentos, na ma-  
 neira acima limitáda, em hum  
 certo lugár ou lugáres con-  
 veniêntes de nós os dittos  
 Acredôres nomeádos, e a pena  
 de cada húma das obrigações  
 há de ser dobráda da Somma  
 intêira, inclusa nella mesma,  
 para sêr a nós entrêgue e a  
 cada hum de nós, os nossos  
 Testamentêiros, ou Consti-  
 tuíntes, ao ou ântes do  
 próximo Seguinte da data  
 desta; por esta cáusa Sáiba-  
 se; que nós os dittos Acre-  
 dores aqui a baixo assinádos,  
 e cada hum de nós para si em  
 particular, e por seus Testa-  
 mentêiros, Administradôres e  
 Constituíntes ao respêito do  
 emcima especificádo e decla-  
 rádo, por êstes presêntes, de  
 vontade própria, consentí-  
 mos, contratámos, prometê-  
 mos e concordámos, ao e com  
 o ditto G. M. ou seus Testa-  
 mentêiros, Administradôres  
 e Constituíntes por êstes pre-  
 sêntes que nós os dittos Acre-

tion of the said several Debts:  
 And for the more full Per-  
 formance of the said several  
 Payments aforesaid, in such  
 Manner and Form as is above  
 limited and declared, accord-  
 ing to the true meaning of  
 these Presents, he the said  
 G. M. shall and will, at, or  
 before the become  
 bound unto us the said Cre-  
 ditors respectively, by one  
 Obligation in due Form of  
 Law to be made, including all  
 and every one of the Payments  
 in such Sort as is above li-  
 mited at some convenient  
 Place or Places by  
 each of us the said Creditors  
 to be nominated and ap-  
 pointed, and the Penalty of  
 every Obligation to be dou-  
 bled the whole Sum included  
 in the Condition of the same  
 to be delivered unto us, and  
 every one of us, our Execu-  
 tors or Assigns, at or before  
 the next ensuing the  
 Date hereof: Know ye there-  
 fore, that we the said Cre-  
 ditors, whose Names are here  
 under-written, and every one  
 of us for his own Part, and  
 for his Executors, Adminis-  
 trators and Assigns, for the  
 Consideration above specified  
 and expressed, do by these  
 Presents willingly consent,  
 covenant, promise and agree  
 to and with the said G. M.  
 his Executors, Administra-  
 tors, and Assigns, to accept  
 of the said G. M. his Execu-  
 tors and Assigns, all and  
 every of the said Debts and



*dôres, e cada hum de nós, os, nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, aceitaremos do ditto G. M. dos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, todas e cada huma de táes dívidas e quantias de dinheiro do ditto G. M. a nós e cada hum de nós, devidas e vencidas em virtude de táes obrigações, Segurança ou Seguranças sobredittas, para se pagarem em tál modo e maneira, e aos táes dias e témpos que acima se limitaõ e requêrem. E além disso, que nós os dittos Acredôres e cada hum ae nós, ou nossos e cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes, em conformidade á entrega da ditta Obrigação a nós e a cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes ao cústo do ditto G. M. os seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes, Sellarêmos, assinarêmos, e na melhor fôrma e direito entregaremos ao ditto G. M. a nossa geral e sufficiente descárga, para sêr rendida por elle o ditto G. M. ou seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes, á data e á limitação, antes do dia e data desta abrigação nova; em testemunha do que temos assinádo e selládo esta.*

*Datáda aos 15 de Maio  
de 1813.*

Sums of Money by the said G. M. unto us, and every one of us, owing, and paying upon such Obligations, Assurance and Assurances, as aforesaid, to be paid in such Manner and Sort, and at such Days and Times, as is above limited and required. And further, that we the said Creditors, and every of us, our, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns respectively, upon the Delivery of the said Obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, shall and will, at the Charge of the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, seal, subscribe, and, in due form of Law, deliver to the said G. M. our sufficient general release, for him, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, to bear Date and Limitation, before the Day of the Date of this new Obligation to be made for the Debt. In Witness whereof, we have hereunto set our Hands and Seals.

Dated the 15th of May  
1813, &c.



## Lêtra de Cambio.

*Bills of Exchange.*

Londres, por 300 Milreis.  
5 de Junho, 1811.

London, for 300 Milreas.  
5th of June, 1811.

*A VISTA desta minha  
primêira Lêtra de Cambio,  
pagará Vm. ao Senhor T. M.  
ou Ordem a somma de tre-  
zêntos Milreis em dinheiro  
corrênte de Portugal, Valor  
recebido do Senhor T. D.  
como por aviso de  
Seu Venerador e Creádo.*

*Ao Senhor T. M. Nego-  
ciante em Lisboa.*

*T. M.*

AT Sight of this my first  
Bill of Exchange, please to  
pay to Mr. T. M. or Order,  
the Sum of Three Hundred  
Milreas in current Money  
of Portugal, Value received  
of Mr. T. D. placing it to  
Account, as per Advice,  
from, Sir,

Yours, H. S.

To Mr. T. M. Merchant  
in Lisbon.

*T. M.*

Lisboa, 250l. Esterl.  
7 de Junho 1811.

Lisbon, for 250l. Sterling.  
7th of June, 1811.

*A QUARENTA Dias  
Vista desta minha Segunda  
Letra de Cambio, (a primeira  
não sendo pága) pagará Vm.  
ao Senhor F. G. & Com-  
panhia, ou Ordem a Somma  
de dozêntas e Cinquenta libras  
Esterlinas em moéda corrente  
de Inglaterra, valor recebido  
do Senhor J. D. como por  
aviso de*

*Seu Venerador e Creádo.*

*H. S.*

*Ao Senhor T. B. Nego-  
ciante em Londres.*

AT Forty days Sight, of  
this my second Bill of Ex-  
change, my first and third  
not being paid, please to pay  
to Mr. F. G. and Company,  
or Order, the Sum of two  
Hundred and fifty Pounds  
Sterling, in current Money  
of England, Value received  
of Mr. J. D. and place it to  
account, as per Advice, from  
Sir,

Yours, H. S.

To Mr. T. B. Merchant  
in London.

*F. P.*



Protesto de huma Letra de  
Cambio.

*SAIBAM todos a quem  
ésta presénte escritúra tocar  
que aos 21 de maio do mês  
de, do anno de 1822  
a requeriméto de P. C. Ne-  
gociante de ... eu  
M. N. Tabaliaõ de nótas ju-  
rádo e admitido pella auto-  
ridade del Rei, &c. fui á  
cása da moráda do Senhor  
T. B. sôbre quem a Letra de  
Cambio acima referida hé  
sacáda, e mostrei a originál  
ao ditto T. B. requeréndo a  
sua aceitaçãõ délla: o qual  
me respondéo que não aceita-  
ria a ditta Létra por humas  
rasôens que escreveria ao  
Senhor T. P. sacadôr; pella  
qual rasão eu o ditto Taba-  
liaõ protestei, por este pre-  
sente protéstto, tanto cóntra  
o ditto F. P. o sacadôr cõmo  
também cóntra o ditto T. B.  
sôbre quem hé sacáda, de-  
máis cóntra todas as outras  
pessôas, Endossadôres, ou  
outras nélla interessádas,  
por tódos os Câmbios, Re-  
câmbios, dânos e interêsses  
quâesquér: Em preséncia de  
H. J. S. T. chamados por  
Testemúnhas a éste presénte  
ácto, fêito no meu Escritório  
em o dia e anno acima de-  
clarado.*

*M. N. Notario Publico.*

*A Protest of a Bill of Ex-  
change.*

KNOW all Persons whom  
this present Writing may  
concern, that the ... of  
... in the Year ... at  
the Request of Mr. P. C. of  
... Merchant, I, M. N.  
Public Notary, sworn and  
admitted by authority of his  
most sacred Majesty, did go  
to the Dwelling-house or  
Habitation of Mr. T. B.  
upon whom the above named  
Bill of Exchange is drawn,  
and shewed the Original unto  
the said Mr. T. B. demand-  
ing his Acceptance of the  
same, who answered me he  
should not accept the same  
Bill, for some Reasons he  
should write Mr. F. P. the  
Drawer, Wherefore I the  
said Notary did protest, and  
by these Presents protest, as  
well against the said F. P. the  
Drawer, as likewise against  
the said T. B. upon whom  
it is drawn; as also against  
all other Persons, Indorsers,  
or others therein concerned,  
for all Changes, Rechanges,  
Damages and Interest what-  
soever, in Presence of H. J.  
and S. T. called for Wit-  
nesses to this present Act,  
done in my Office in  
the Day and Year above men-  
tioned.

*M. N. Notary Public.*



## Formas de Recibos.

*Forms of Receipts.*

## Dinheiro recebido por inteiro.

*Money received in Full.*

*Recebi, do Senhor Thomas Crew, Seis Livras Sete Shilins Seis pennys resto de todas as contas, com o ditto. 1º de Janeiro.*

RECEIVED 1st January 1811, of Mr. Thomas Crew, Six Pounds Seven Shillings and Sixpence, in full of all Demands per

## Dinheiro recebido por Conta de meu Amo.

*For another's Use.*

*Recebi do Sr. Jonas Lee, quatro Livras e Cinco Shilins por Conta de meu amo Moises Trust.*

W. S.

22 de Fevereiro 1811.

RECEIVED 22d February, 1811, of Mr. Jonas Lee, Four Pounds Five Shillings, for the Use of my Master Moses Trust, per

W. S.

## Dinheiro recebido á cõta.

*Money received in Part.*

*Recebi a 30 de Março, 1811, do Sr. Jacinto Cook, Cinco Livras Cinco Shilins, á cõta de doze Livras e dez Shilins, por Conta de meu pai Antonio Truelove, 30 de Março 1811.*

RECEIVED 30th of March, 1811, of Mr. James Cook, Five Pounds Ten Shillings, in Part of Twelve Pounds Ten Shillings, for my Father Anthony Truelove, per

## Dinheiro recebido á cõta de Contas que não estão ajustadas.

*Money received on Accounts unsettled.*

*Recebi, da Senhora Martha Rich, por maos de Pedro Cornet, onze Livras á Conta, 24 de Abril 1811.*

RECEIVED 24th April 1811, of Mrs. Martha Rich, by the Hands of Peter Cornet, Eleven Pounds on Account,



Quando hum Rol ou Conta  
se paga por inteiro.

Recebi, a 15 de Mayo,  
1811, o empôrte d'esta Conta,

*When a Bill is paid in Full.*

RECEIVED 15th May, 1811,  
the full Contents hereof,

Quando se paga dinheiro a  
Conta de hum rôl.

Recebi, Sete libras á conta  
deste Rol

6 de Junho de 1811.

*When a Bill is paid in Part.*

RECEIVED 26th June,  
1811, Seven Pounds in Part  
hereof,

Notas ou Obrigaçoens que  
faz hum Homem quando  
toma dinheiro emprestado.

Londres, 4 de Junho, 1811.

Eu abaixo firmado pro-  
mêto, pagar ao Sr. E D.  
Banqueiro do Thesouro de  
sua Majestade, do Excise, ou  
á sua ordem, quarênta dias  
despôis da data desta obriga-  
ção quátro cêntas e trinta  
livras por valôr recebido

Christovão Wade.

£.43<sup>0</sup>

*Promissory Notes for a  
Man's Self.*

London, June 4th, 1811.

I PROMISE to pay to Mr.  
Edward Draper, Cashier of  
his Majesty's Revenue of  
Excise, or Order, forty Days  
after Date, Four Hundred  
and Thirty Pounds, Value  
received

Christopher Wade.

£.43<sup>0</sup>

Eu abaixo firmado p. o-  
meto pagar ao Sr. Paulo  
Barker ou á sua ordem em  
sendo requerido, trezentas, e  
noventa, e quatro libras dous  
Shilins e Seis pennys por  
valôr recebido hoje 17 de  
Julho, 1811.

Philip Venham.

£. 394 2 6

I PROMISE to pay to Paul  
Barker, Esq. or Order, on  
demand, Three hundred and  
ninety-four Pounds, Two  
Shillings, and Six-pence,  
Value received this 17th of  
July, 1811.

Philip Venham.

£. 394 2 6



*EU abaixo firmado prometo pagar ao Sr. J. T. ou á sua ordem, quarênta e nôve libras, e tres Shilins 6 mezes despôis da dáta desta obrigação, por valor recebido em verdáde do que assignei esta 24 de Agosto 1811.*

£.49 3 0

*N. B. Obsérvese que em nôtas cu obrigações sêmpre se declára a sôma recebida sem a qual não são de nenhuma força nem tem Authoridade.*

I PROMISE to pay to Mr. J. T. or Order, Forty nine Pounds Three Shillings, six Months after Date, Value received. Witness my Hand this 24th of August, 1811.

William Jones.

£.49 3 0

N. B. Observe in Promissory Notes that the words "Value received" are mentioned, or they are of no Force.



---

A NEW  
P O R T U G U E S E  
G R A M M A R.

---

P A R T I V.

CONTAINING  
SEVERAL USEFUL AND ENTERTAINING PASSAGES,  
*collected from the best*  
PORTUGUESE WRITERS.

---

ENTRE os bons ditos de Souzêni, poeta Persi-  
ano, se conta, que bebendo com outro poeta,  
seu amigo, certo licor, se queixava, de que era mu-  
ito quente & dizêndolhe, amigo, pobre de ti que  
daqui a poucos dias te farão beber no inferno agoas  
sulfúreas, & ardêntes, que te abraçarão as entrân-  
has ; não impôrta, replicou Souzêni ; bastará que  
me lembre algum dos teus versos, que ellas se farão  
mais frias, que neve.

---

Catharina Parthenay, sobrinha da célebre Anna  
Parthenay, deu esta bella respôsta a Henrique IV.  
“ Saiba vossa mag<sup>de</sup> que eu sôu muito pobre para ser  
“ sua consôrte ; e que no mesmo tempo descendo de  
“ huma família muito illústre, para ser sua dama.”



Huma Princêza Cathólica, e de rara virtúde vindo reduzido o Marechal de Saxonia ás agonias da morte, disse, que era para sentir o não se poder rezar hum *De profundis* pella alma de hum que tinha feito cantár tantos *Te Deum*.

A Dom Christóvão de Moura, Marquêz de Castélllo Rodrigo, e Vice Rey de Portugal por Dom Philipe Tercêiro, indo por hum sala do Páço de Lisbôa, hum soldádo honrádo, que tinha bem servido na India, lhe dáva hum memoriál, e pedía, que se lembrásse dos seus papéis, porque havia largo tẽmpo, que andáva pretendẽdo. Respondêo-lhe o Marquêz, que havia muita Gente para despachár, e não se podião despachár todos com brevidade; o soldádo adiantando o passo se atravessou diante sem descomposição, e fazendo parár o Vice Rey lhe disse com grande confiança; “senhõr Dom Christóvão despache Vs. os hómens, e deixe a Gente.” O Marquêz aceitou o memoriál, e o despachou no mesmo dia.

---

Mandando hum Fidálgo em Lisbôa abrir em hum rua os Alicêrces para se fazêrem humas casas, sem licença da câmera, passando por alli o procuradôr da cidade, pôz pena aos officiães, que não trabalhassem na obra sem licença dos Vereadôres; e os officiães dizendo-o ao Fidálgo mandou-lhes elle que não deixassem de trabalhár, e que não fizessem caso do que dizia aquelle villão ruim; tornando o procuradôr da cidade por allí e achando os officiães trabalhâdo, mandou que dessem com elles no tronco; e não faltando quem lhe contásse o que o Fidálgo disséra, teve-o em olho; e no tempo que elle hía atravessâdo pello Rocío para sua casa, sahio-lhe ao camínho a cavállo, e com hum lança que leváva, dando na sua sômbra, lhe disse: porque o



que disséstes, fôí em minha ausência, dôu em vossa sombra; se mo tivésseis dito no rosto, déra na vossa pessoa.

---

Abou Hanífab, o mais célebre doutôr dos Musulmanes, tendo recebído huma bofetáda, disse ao que o tinha insultádo: eu poderia vingárme, pagândovos na mesma moéda; mas não o quero fazer. Poderia accusárvos ao calife: mas não quero ser accusadôr. Poderia nas minhas oraçôens queixárme a Dêos désta affrônta; mas nem isso quero fazer. Por fim poderia pedir a Dêos, que se quer no día do juizo vos castigásse; porêem o mesmo senhor me livre de semelhante pensamêto; mas ântes, se succedêsse que neste instânte chegásse aquelle formidável día; e se a minha intercessão tivésse alguma efficácia para com Dêos, não quizera por companhéiro senão a vós para entrár no Paraíso. Que admirável exêmplo para os Christãos aprendêrem a perdoár as injúrias!

---

### *Da Peregrinação.*

Passádas que se dão peregrinâdo, são degrãos para a casa do desengâno. Das suas fôntes sâhem os rios muito pequênos, e crêscem corrêdo, e lévaõ mares ao mar. Hómens, que da sua terra não sâhem, são navíos, que acábaõ no estalêiro. A sabedoria cômô vinda do céo, anda neste globo terrêstre perigrina; não he facil achála senão peregrinâdo; errâdo por este mundo, se apprênde a não comettêr erros. Vapôres, que na terra eram lôdo, apartádos della se fazem estrêllas. Aos hómens que querem luzír, déve a pátria servir, como aos planêtas o horizônte, de berço, para ensáyo do seu luzimêto, longe do ponto ortivo, e remontádos a mais alta região, apúraõ as influências, e duplicaõ as luzes. Que nome teriaõ



hoje no mundo Sócrates, Pithágoras, e Plataõ, e outros sábios da antiguidade, se a modo de cêpos, ou trôncos, que aõnde nascêraõ fazem raiz e no seu primêiro chãõ apodrécem, não buscáraõ fora da Patria as notícias, que lhes faltávaõ. Não se ornára Hercules com os despójos dos Monstros, que domôu, se os não fôra buscár pelo mundo; á sua dilatáda viagem dévem os Argonautas a conquista do vello de ouro; Se não corrêra Ulysses remótos climas, fôra a Aldêa de Ithaca de toda a sua gloria o theatro. Hómens perpétuamênte casêiros, são gallos, que só sabem do seu polêiro. Sábios peregrínos, imítaõ no seu curso as fôntes, que passâdo por vêas de prata, ouro, esmeráldas, e saffiras, tómaõ, e comsigo lévaõ a flor de suas precíósas qualidádes. Zombe embóra Plutarco dos que lóuvaõ a peregrinaçãõ, e diga, que se parecem com os que júlgãõ as estrêllas errântes mais nobres, e felíces, que as fixas. Não há escóla mais util para a vida, que as muítas vidas ou modos de vivêr, que na variedáde das Naçóens se obsêrva. Vem-se muítas cousas nunca vistas; aprêndem-se muitas, que se não sabíãõ, faz-se o hómem capaz de toda a casta de negócios, e folga de vêr este mundo, antes de sahír delle. Até para os príncipes, que das suas côrtes fazem na terra o seu paraíso, bom he que peregrínem, para conhecêrem o mundo, que elles govêrnaõ. Os commodos, as delícias, os obséquios dos subditos, pódem dar a conhecêr a hum hómem, que nascêo soberâno, mas com este conhecimêto, não o fazem digno da soberania: se não sahíra Alexandre da sua Macedonia, não passára dos límites de régulo e não chegára a avassallár o mundo.

---

### *Do Tempo futuro.*

Trate o hómem do presênte, e não quéira penetrár no futuro; quem de tão longe pôem a mira, não póde dar no alvo. Muítas vezes bom hé igno-



rár o que ha de succedêr ; porque se fôr bem, a dilacção hé tormêto ; e se for máo, o trabálho he sem proveito. Para futúros, não ha segurança. Ao Embaixadôr, que na guerra movída por Luix XI. Rey de França, a Carlos Duque de Borgonha, procuráva attrahír ao Emperadôr Frederico, com proméssa de se repartírem com elle os despójos, e os estádos, respondêo o dito Emperadôr com este apólogo : Tres caçadôres com a esperança de apanhárem hum urso, se compromettêraõ na repartição delle. Chegádos á boca da cavérna, sahio a fêra com taõ grande impeto, que hum dos caçadôres botou a fugír, outro subio a huma árvore, e o outro se estendêo no chaõ fingíndo-se môrto ; chegouse o urso a elle, poz-lhe o focínho no nariz, e nos ouvidos, e não lhe conhecêdo fôlego, nem sinal de vida, o deixou por morto. O que estava na árvore, disse ao companheiro ; hómern, que te disse o urso, quando te fallou á puridade, com o focínho nos ouvidos ? Disse-me que éra mal feito, dispôr da pelle, e carne do urso, antes de o vêrem morto. Com isto o Emperadôr dêu a entendêr ao Embaixadôr, que éra preciso apanhár priméiro ao Duque de Borgonha, que depóis se trataria da repartição dos seus estádos. Dos succéssos do tempo futuro, só Deos tem certêza.

---

### *Dos Ricos.*

Em lugáres estereis, sem hervas, nem plantas produz a naturêza o ouro, para mostrár que os amadores das riquêzas não tem fé, nem honra. Os ricos facinorósos, que ainda que celebrádos nas histórias, são o oppróbrio da sua posteridade, poderião ter boa fama, se lhes não facilitára este metal a execucação de seus danádos intêntos. Em todas as idades fôraõ as riquêzas antagonistas da virtúde ; ellas inventáraõ os mais enórmes delitos ; ellas ensináraõ os filhos a tirár a seus páis a vida ; en-



sináraõ os poderosos a opprimir os innocentes, ar-ruinár as famílias, saqueár os templos, & despír os altáres; ellas induzíraõ os amigos a que faltássem á fé, incitáraõ os vassállos a negár aos príncipes a obediência, a os libidinósos déraõ meynos para violár a pudicícia das donzéllas, e estragár a honra dos maridos: finalmente ellas ainda que boas para a vida civil, são causa de tôdos os máles; e pôsto que os sábios se soubéram aproveitar déllas, a cobiça, e o máo uso das mesmas, enchêram o mundo tôdo de criminósos. Hómens ricos ordinariamente se pérdem, por têrem muito, e sabêrem pouco; desprezaõ o sabêr, porque lhes parece, que para todo o género de vida, lhes basta o têr. A Aristippo perguntou Dionysio, porque razáo os filósofos frequentávaõ as cazas dos ricos, e não os ricos as dos filósofos. Respondêo Aristippo, que os filósofos conhecem o que lhes falta, e os ricos ignóram o de que necessítaõ. Senhores ricos, e filósofos pobres, não podem fazer cousas grandes, porque a estes lhes falta dinhêiro, e áquelles espírito. Dizia Diógenes, que muitos ricos são como as plantas, que nascem em desértos, e despenhadêiros, porque dos frutos, que ellas dão, não cómem os homens, mas córvos, milháfres, e fêras; também as riquezas de muitos não são para sugêitos beneméritos, mas para chocarrêiros, espadachins, rufiões, e meretrizes.

---

*Estado da Lusitania até ao tempo em que foi reduzida em Provincia Romana, Por A. C. do Amaral. Extrahido das Memorias da Academia de Lisboa.*

Huma historia sincéra envergonha-se da gloria vaa, que se busca em antiguidades mentirozas: Desgosta-se desses sonhos agradaveis, pasto de huma esteril recreação; e se saborêa só com a ver-



dade pura. Tal hé a sorte deste escrito, derigido a fazer presentes aos Portugueses os verdadeiros costumes, e Leis de seus Maiores: rejeita tudo quanto a impostura, ou a credulidade moderna lhe conta dos Seculos, que a Providencia quiz esconder-lhe: e se contenta com as escassas memorias, que pode colhêr dos raros monumentos antigos que lhe restaõ. Não tenta entrar pelas espêssas trevas dos primeiros 36 Seculos do mundo, em que não acha quem o encaminhe. Pois que os Hebreos unicos guias Seguros, que introduzem em muitos outros paizes, nem hum só passo dão para este que habitamos; e apenas dão motivo a conjecturar, que das Colonias sahidas do Oriente para povoár a terra, algumas se estendêrão até a esta extremidade; mas nem donde, nem quando viessem o pode colhêr a historia.

Não acha depois dos Hebreos outros, de quem se fie, senão os Romanos: e ainda estes pouco lhe sabem dizêr de hum Paiz tão apartado, em quanto a ambição de o senhorear os não avizinha a elle: mal conservaõ huma obscura tradição de que a estas partes vieraõ Celtas, Iberos, Persas, Lusos, e Gregos: de huns apenas ficára resto na derivação do nôme; de outros na herança de alguns costumes. A navegação com que alguns Póvos do fundo do Mediterrâneo comêçaõ a enriquecer, as traz até estas ultimas Costas, e vai logo espalhar pello Mundo, a fama das ricas minas, e do fertil torrão deste Paiz desconhecido ainda, antes que da qualidade de seus habitantes: não tarda com tudo a mostrar-se esta; continúa a vir em busca dos thesouros descobertos á ambição estrangeira; e vé erguer daqui, quaes féras acossadas nos seus covís, homens bravos para defender os bens que a Providencia lhes destinára. E esta hé a primeira Scena que se nos representa no Terreno Lusitano; hum Campo de Batálha, continuáda já com os Fenicios, já com os Carthaginezes; que depois de disputarem



por largo tempo com estes Barbaros a sorte das armas, os deixaõ ainda por domar aos Romanos quando lhes cedem a conquista de Mundo. Mas ao justo motivo da defeza propria succedem depois outros, que facilmente põem as armas na mão a huns homens, a quem a falta do commercio, e de artes quasi não deixa outro meio de enriquecêr, que a pilhagem; nôme com que muitas das suas guerras são infamadas pelos Póvos mais polidos que elles. E o mesmo habito de peleijar lhes vai alimentando hum natural feróz, que já os não deixa accommodar com o socêgo da paz, e que os faz buscar inimigos dentro em caza, quando lhes faltaõ os de fóra.

Estes vicios, e virtudes de guerra, hé o que de principio nelles distinguem os Romanos, não os vendo senão armados no campo; e de que não podem deixar de dar testemunho estes mesmos vaidósos desprezadores de tudo o que não hé Romano. Mas em fím á medida que se lhes chegaõ mais perto, e se envolvem com elles, lá vão divisando por entre alguns claros, que as armas deixaõ, a forma do seu governo interiôr.

Vêm que este Terreno, que designaõ pelo nome de Lusitania, hé habitado de Póvos differentes independentes huns dos outros, e governados cada hum por suas Leis, costumes particulares; leis raras, e costumes singélos, ainda com a marca da Natureza não contrafeita.

Como a segurança propria hé quem só fórma estes corpos, não largaõ da liberdade que recebêraõ da natureza, mais que o puramente preciso para conservar essa mesma segurança. A guerra a que são dados he que os obriga a criar hum Superior, a que juraõ fidelidade; mas conseguirla a paz, expira o governo do General, e a obediencia dos Soldados.

Se há que estabelecêr de novo para o bem commun da Sociedade, servem-se do meio usado das



puras Democracias, Assembléas gerâes, em que cada pessoa tem o arbitrio de approvar, ou rejeitar o que se propõem : e ainda nesta acção respira o ar militar, em que são criados ; hum batêr da espada no broquel he o signal de approvaçãõ; hum susurro inquieto o de desapprovar.

A' simplicidade da Legislaçãõ segue a das penas; são os réos do crime capital apedrejados, e para que o horror do crime se extenda além ainda do castigo, todo o que passa depois da execuçãõ, hé obrigado a lançar alguma pedra sobre o cadáver do justificado.

Não desmente da parte Legislativa, a do Commercio interior ainda pouco sujeito a fraudes; não os move a contratar a sêde insaciavel do ouro, que mal conhecem : as mutuas necessidades, a que só procuraõ soccorrêr, os ensina a trocar entre si as cousas precisas á vida. Estas lhes dictaõ tambem o que devem concedêr ao corpo ; comeres, e bebidas simples, quaes a Natureza as produzia : vestidos sem mais estudo que o do fim para que os usaõ ; câma sem regalo, nem despeza ; emfim a tudo o preciso para a conservaçãõ se accode com o menos apparato que pôde ser.

A esta sobriedade bem propria de si para dar a saude, e vigôr do corpo, ajuntaõ o trabalho aturado; os homens o da guerra quasi contínua, e nos intervallos della o de exercicios semelhantes á guerra ; as mulheres o da cultura dos campos, e de todo o trato domestico, que com discreta economia lhes he cedido pelos homens occupados com as armas. E se faz memoria dos seus bailes, e cantares, não são tanto fructo do ocio, como do innocente prazêr da vida social.

Deste modo sobrio, e trabalhado de vida era consequencia a raridade de doenças : para alguma, que accaso haja, não hé venal a cura, neim o remedio, não se tendo alguem por desobrigado de con-



correr para hum officio de rigorosa humanidade: hé o enfermo exposto em publico; e os que tem sido feridos do mesmo mal ensinaõ os remedios com que conseguirão a saude.

Nos que habitávaõ as vizinhanças do Minho, como eraõ os Gronios, ou Gravios, os Amphilocios, e outros, se vem assaz retratados os costumes dos Gregos, de quem os Antigos querem que elles descendaõ: Jogos, e certames públicos, cazamentos, arte de augurar tudo hé de Gregos. Idólatras como seus Maiores, nada conservaõ da Religião pura que a Razão lhes mostrára, mais que o reconhecimento de que há hum. Ente maior que elles, a que devem dar culto: porém estragado este natural sentimento pela corrupçãõ do coração, imaginaõ Divindades indignas, a que honraõ com hum culto igualmente indigno. Se querem dar-lhes graças pello feliz successo de huma batalha, as mãos direitas dos prizioneiros são o triste troféo que lhes levântaõ. Se antes de qualquer acção procúraõ saber o seu bom ou máo exito, dentro ás entranhas de hum inimigo he que vão buscar este fatal segredo: se querem fazer religioso hum juramento, hé preciso que as entranhas quentes de hum homem, e de hum cavallo lhes sirvaõ de banho, em que depois de mettidas as mãos, as põem sobre o altar, junto ao qual se deve fazer esta ridicula cerimonia. Emfim he sempre sangue o que applaca huns Deoses, que estes Idolatras guerreiros formávaõ á sua semelhança.

Estes são os poucos vestigios, e quasi apagados, que se encontraõ dos costumes domesticos dos Lusitanos, que de ordinario só se viaõ no campo de batalha, detendo, ou fazendo retroceder os passos aos Conquistadores do mundo. Mal o poderá crêr quem mede a força de hum Estado pelo fausto de seus habitantes, pela magnificencia de suas obras, e por todo o esplendôr que encanta os sentidos; quem



naõ avalia quanto póde hum Povo, em que todos os individuos saõ aptos para a defesa da Patria, em que há tantos Soldados como homens endurecidos todos no trabalho, e todos animados do amôr da liberdade.

Hum Povo, como este, foi o que sem arte, e sem disciplina, em tendo na frente hum homem que o soubesse mandar, escarneu por muitas vezes das tropas mais bem reguladas, e deu muitos dias de mágoa, e de deslustre aos soberbos Romanos. Viriato, Sertorio, e ainda outros de menos nôme foraõ instrumentos da gloria Lusitana, que sobrepujando á emulação ficou eternizada nos escritos de seus mesmos inimigos, e nos marmores que o tempo consumidôr não acabou de gastar.

Por mais de Seculo e meio andáraõ os Romanos na porfiada lida de subjugar este ultimo pedaço da Hespanha que já contaõ toda por huma porção certa dos seus dominios: todos os annos lhe nomeaõ Governadôr: mas por mais que tentem mandar Pretor como para Provincia pacifica, a cada passo se vem obrigados a lhe mandar Consul armado; depois de terem separado o seu Governo do de quasi todo o resto da Hespanha. E se de quando em quando algum destes Generaes consegue a gloria de a pacificar, e sujeitar ás Leis Romanas, pouco tempo lhe dura verde o louro; na sua mesma cabeça lhe murcha, ou ao mais tarde na de seu successor: até que a longa experiencia os desengana, que hé preciso mudar de systema; e que só costumando primeiro os Lusitanos a se sujeitar como amigos, hé que os poderãõ insensivelmente ir passando a obedecer como Vassallos.

---

*Sobre a Poesia Bucolica dos Poétas Portuguezes  
Por Joaquim de Foyos. Extrahido das Me-  
morias de Litteratura da Academia de Lisboa.*

Assim como entre as duas especies de oração, por



que o homem tanto excede aos outros animaes, se cultivou primeiro o Verso, assim de todas as sortes de Poesias parece ter sido primeira a Bucolica. Ainda que o genero humano não nascêo da terra, e dos duros troncos das árvores, como imagináráo muitos Poetas, e parece que chegáráo a crêr alguns Filósofos ; comtudo depois do diluvio, espalhados os homens por toda a face da terra, e perdidos pouco a pouco os conhecimentos que herdárao de seus maiores, e só conservávaõ na Sociedade, hé summamente provavel, que huma grande parte delles viesse successivamente a passar por estes tres generos de vida: Selvagem, Pastoral, Agricola. Os muitos Póvos, que ainda hoje habitaõ, e se achaõ na primeira, ou segunda destas vidas, confirmaõ a verdade desta conjectura. Mas o homem, vivendo huma vida silvestre nos bosques, separado de toda a Sociedade, e sustentando-se unicamente de caça, e dos fructos espontaneos da terra, nem se acha em circumstancias de adiantar os seus conhecimentos, nem tem tempo para cultivallos, occupado, e attento todo em buscar o necessario fysico, que não pode achar sem muita difficuldade, e trabalho. E ainda que aconteça, que por vezes lhe sobre algum espaço livre destas continuas fadigas, satisfeitos todos os seus naturaes desejos, e appetites, cançado o côrpo, e entorpecidos os membros, lhe entorpeceraõ juntamente as faculdades da alma, desacostumadas a discorrer, e a exercitar-se em outros objectos, e se entregará docemente a o somno. Não succederá assim aos Pastores, que tendo gado, que com seu leite lhes subministre o sustento, e com suas pelles o vestido, passarão huma boa parte da sua vida quietos, e descansados, sem mais outro cuidado que o de conduzir, e defender os seus rebanhos, e manadas. Obrigados de necessidades mutuas, e attrahidos do natural deleite, que causa a companhia dos que tem as mesmas precisões que nós, e nellas nos podem dar



algun auxilio, e recebello, se chegarão, quando o permittir a abundancia dos pastos, huns para os outros, communicarão entre si os seus pensamentos, e desejos, praticarão sobre as cousas que mais amaão, e celebrarão a sua felicidade.

Huma vez juntos os homens, e em ócio, contentes, e sem canção, impossivel hé, que não inventem diversos jogos, e toda a sorte de desenfado, e recreação para evitar o tédio de huma vida socegada, e satisfeita. Entre estes divertimentos não devia ter ultimo lugar a Poesia. As faculdades do homem tem huma natural disposição para ella; ou a Poesia consista na imitação, como querem Platão, e Aristoteles, ainda que clara e distinctamente nunca nos dissessem o que esta imitação seja; ou em huma oração levantada sobre as expressões vulgares, invertida com figuras, e harmoniosamente modulada, e compassada com o metro, e com o rhythmo. Em qualquer destas cousas que fazamos consistir a Poesia, ou em todas ellas, para todas recebeo o homem da Natureza huma admiravel propensão.

As nossas sensações são não sómente a origem, e fundamento de todas as nossas idéas, mas transformando-se de diversos modos, são todos os nossos juizos, e raciocinios, as nossas artes, as nossas Sciencias, e, em huma palavra, tudo quanto sabemos, e conhecemos. Mas a imitação hé huma sensação facil, e para que está disposta a conformação dos nossos orgãos, e das nossas potencias, e por consequencia huma sensaçãõ, que nós achâmos por extremo grata, e delectavel. Deste mesmo principio se segue outro, o qual aqui igualmente pertence, e vem a ser, que hé natural ao homem não só a oração, e a harmonia, mas tambem essa mesma oração variada com differentes tropos, e figuras; isto hé, com diversos modos de exprimir as cousas, e os pensamentos, já com a mesma harmonia; isto he, com o rhythmo, e já com o metro.



Conhecer-se-ha claramente a dependencia que estes dous principios tem entre si, se considerarmos, que a imitação, (a qual eu já mostrei ser hum exercicio summamente gostoso ao homem, e hum modo facillimo assim de elle aprender, como de communicar aos outros os seus sentimentos) huma vez feita, e praticada com a oração, traz necessariamente consigo todas aquellas variedades da mesma oração, que aponteí acima. Daqui vem affirmarem agudamente, e com razão justissima os mais célebres Filósofos, que quizeraõ descer a discussões deste genero, que a Poesia era tão antiga, como o genero humano. Certamente parece ter nascido logo com as primeiras Sociedades, que elles formáraõ, e quando elles conservavaõ ainda muito, assim da rusticidade, como da singeleza, e innocencia natural. Do que parece, ou claramente provado, ou deduzido com assaz probabilidade, que a Poesia nasceo, e se inventou entre Pastores. Mas em que genero de Poesia se exercitariaõ estes primeiros homens? Não será difficil conhecello, se reflectirmos, qual seria a materia que, segundo as circumstancias em que se achavaõ, se lhes offerencia para os seus cantos. Aristoteles foi de parecêr, que dos primeiros inventores os que tinhaõ genio elevado imitavaõ accções illustres, e feitas por personagens grandes, e pelo contrario os que tinhaõ engenho mais rasteiro, cantavaõ as accções dos homens vis, em cujo vitupério compunhaõ obras ridiculas, assim como os outros se exercitavaõ em hymnos e encomios.

Porém este erudito, e intelligente Filosofo não fala naquelle lugar da primeira origem da Poesia rigorosamente, mas sim do modo com que ella, depois de inventada, se foi dividindo em diversas especies; porque suppõe tempos em que hé já grande a disigualdade dos homens; o que não tem lugar nas primeiras e simplicissimas sociedades de Pastores.



Hé pois summamente verosimil, que estes homens quizessem imitar aquellas cousas, que com mais frequencia se offerecião aos seus sentidos, que satisfaziaão as suas necessidades, e que constituíão a bem-aventurança da sua socegada vida, e felice estado, por que nellas empregavaão toda a sua attençãõ, e cuidãdo. Cantariaão pois os seus rebanhos, os montes e os valles, em que os apascentavaão, os rios, e fontes, a que os levavaão a bebêr; a alva, e serêna madrugada, que os chamava ao trabalho; a sêsta, que os convidava ao descanso; e os rafeiros, que lhes guardavaão o gado. Cantariaão, como era natural, as paixões e affectos da sua alma; porém não affectos violentos, e desesperados, que não eraão próprios daquela vida, mas dôces e suaves, e que só lhes causavaão aquella inquietaçãõ, e desasocego, a que se não pudesse seguir fim algum funesto.

Como estes argumentos são todos proprios da Poesia Bucolica, segue-se ligitimamente, que ella foi a primeira, que no Mundo inventáraão os homens. Sendo pois a Poesia Pastoral a primeira origem de toda a erudiçãõ humana, e os primeiros esforços, que fizeraão as faculdades do homem para se pulirem, e cultivarem, justamente me persuadi, que a Academia, instituida toda para utilidade pública, e que alem de outros mais gloriosos, e louvaveis empenhos, tomou a si o de dar a conhecer os principios, e progressos da nossa Litteratura, havia de levar em gosto que hum Socio seu tratasse dos merecimentos dos nossos Poetas Bucolicos. Deste trabalho, Senhores, posto que maior que minhas forças, me quiz encarregar, por ser dos mais leves e faceis, que tão illustre corpo podia commetter a algum de seus membros.

Vós tratareis verdades sublimes, por extremo remotas, e escondidas á commum comprehensãõ dos homens; medireis o espaço immenso dos Céos; poreis Leis aos corpos mais vastos, mais distantes,



e até mais rebeldes do Universo ; com vossas porfiadas investigações, e rara sagacidade obrigareis a Natureza a que vos descubra, e patentêe aquillo mesmo, em que ella punha maior estudo em occultar. Assim para felicidade dos outros homens augmentareis, e aperfeiçoareis os seus conhecimentos ; mas sereis muito particularmente felices vós, e feliz a Patria, em cuja utilidade haveis de empregar os vossos talentos, e todos estes trabalhos, e fadigas : e ella vo lo saberá agradecer com o premio, que só desejão as almas grandes, do louvôr, e da gloria. Eu, gozando-me, e comprazendo-me do vosso alto merecimento, de que vós quizestes me coubesse tambem alguma parte, me contentarei com examinar a propriedade, e elegancia de huma palavra ; a verdade, novidade, e belleza de hum pensamento ; a innocencia, e sã singeleza de hum Pegureiro ; e isto *propter aquæ rivum*, ou quando muito, *sub ramis arboris altæ*.

Mas tornando ao meu assumpto, de que me fizeram desviar os vossos justos louvôres, não são pouco relevantes, nem concorrem medianamente para a instrucção, e cultura dos homens os trabalhos dos Poetas. Negallo seria não conhecer o modo, por que se dilatao, e aperfeiçoao as nossas faculdades, e ignorar inteiramente a Historia dos varios progressos do entendimento humano. A restauração das letras, com que se desterrou a ignorancia, e barbaridade, a que nos tinham reduzido as Nações do Norte, e as continuas irrupções dos Sarracenos, tem as suas sementes nos Trovadores Provençaes, e Lombardos, que fructificando felizmente chegarão a produzir os dous abalisados engenhos de Dante, e Petrarca. Cultivada por estes dous grandes homens, e por alguns mais seus contemporaneos a Lingua Toscana, preparou a Italia, e á sua imitação a toda a Europa para hum conhecimento profundo da Lingua Latina, e da Grega. Com taes



disposições, e auxilios se instruirão as Nações Europeas nas Artes, e Sciencias, e em toda a sorte de erudição daquelles sabios Póvos; e inflammadas cada vez mais no desejo de saber, tem levado muitas das Artes, e Sciencias dos antigos a hum ponto incrível de perfeição, &c.

---

*Analyse e combinações filosoficas sobre a elocução e estylo de Sá de Miranda, Ferreira, Bernardes, Caminha e Camões. Pr. Francisco Dias.*

---

Quando entrei nesta composição, julguei que devia tomar hum ponto fixo, donde viesse deduzindo a sua analyse, e que o Sá de Miranda devia indispensavelmente formar a época, donde, segundo a ordem do tempo, havia de dimanar todo o seu progresso, como de hum escritor, que lançou os fundamentos da Poesia Portugueza. Mas antes que entrasse nesta diligencia, vi que me era de precisa necessidade fazer huma descripção exacta do estado, em que se achava a Lingua, quando o Poeta Miranda appareceo e sondar as qualidades principaes da composição e estylo daquelle Padre da Poesia Portugueza, donde passou para Ferreira, para Bernardes, para Caminha, e ultimamente para Camões, o maior Poeta da Nação, e o que mais enriqueceo, e apurou o nosso Idioma; discorrendo por aquelles pontos, que mais me parecerão dignos de comparação no género Sublime, como mais nobre, e como aquelle que mais esforço pede da fantasía humana; fazendo juizo de cada hum dos Poetas da Analyse, e finalmente indicando as origens donde nascêrao as expressões, e fórmulas combinadas; no que julgo ter satisfeito ao Assumpto, que hé certamente mais difficultoso do que parece.

Na execução deste tão trabalhoso argumento me conduzi, segundo as luzes, que pude adquirir na



lição de Aristoteles, Cicero, Longino, Quintiliano, e muito mais na de Locke, Condillac, Du Marsais, e em especial na do sobre todos sabio Commentario, que o grande Voltaire fêz ás Obras de Pedro Corneille, onde se vêem as regras do gosto na sua maior elevação.

Todas estas materias são novas em Portugal, e por consequencia não tive a quem seguir: e apezar dos defeitos, posso dizer,

..... *que aqui vereis presente*  
*Cousas, que juntas se áchaõ raramente.* Camões Lus.

### *Introducção.*

Hé o talento da palavra a mais nobre faculdade do ente racional, como instrumento, com que não só expõe as suas idéas, mas até pinta os mais occultos sentimentos do espirito com rasgos tão vivos, e sublimes, que os faz passar aos corações mais izentos de interesse. Aquella Filosofia inata ao coração do homem, que preside a todas as acções, que mais o elévaõ, foi quem formou os sinaes representativos das suas idéas simples, e compostas; e quem, á força de infinitas combinações, lhe fez conceber o grande pensamento do transumpto mental consignado nas palavras por huma successão de idéas não interrompidas, cujo nexo constitue a pintura eterna não só do fysico, mas, o que hé mais prodigiõso, do moral humano.

Aquella mesma filosofia, que dirigindo e elevando o espirito humano desde as idéas simples até ás implexas, lhe dêo as primeiras noções da expressão simples e primitiva, como mais adaptada ás necessidades do homem; á proporção que lhe foi ampliando a esfera dos seus conhecimentos, lhe foi ministrando expressão compléxa, isto hé, figurada com a qual pinta aos olhos, e dá corpo, e vida ás mais sublimes abstracções, que pode concebêr o entendimento humano.



Deste immenso aggregado de idéas simples, e compostas, como consequencia natural, procedeo a vivacidade da expressãõ, e a riqueza das Linguas, que se eleváraõ ao mais distincto grão de perfeiçãõ, segundo o numero de acontecimentos, e revoluções notaveis ; e muito mais segundo o trato frequente com as nações estranhas, e communicacão social dos póvos entre si ; por isso mesmo que das grandes crizes procede a effervescencia das paixões, que pondo em movimento, e actividade a massa das idéas, gera nóvos pensamentos, e nova elocuçaõ.

Daqui se infére, que os melhores de todos os idiomas devem forçosamente ser os daquelles póvos que mais revoluções experimentáraõ, e que melhor conhecêraõ as leis da Sociedade. Vê-se pois pello que nos ensina a historia, que as Nações mais pulidas e sábias, tanto na linguagem, como nos costumes, fôraõ quasi sempre as que situadas junto ao mar conhecêraõ mais cedo a necessidade da communicacão dos póvos estranhos, por meio do Commercio ; ou aquellas, cujos acontecimentos lhes déraõ lugar distincto nos annaes do genero humano.

Por isso vemos, que as Linguas geraes do Malabar, Coromandel, e da China, regiões maritimas, assim como tambem a Arabe, são as mais bellas, e antigas de todas as Linguas da Asia. Os Póvos da Grecia, que gozando do mais formoso espectaculo da Natureza, experimentáraõ tantas, e taõ notaveis revoluções, inventaraõ o mais significativo, e harmónico de todos os Idiomas, onde se achaõ consignádos os mais insignes monumentos do génio, e dõnde procedêo a magestade da Lingua dos Romanos, não mais famosos pelas suas conquistas, que pelos escriptos immortaes, com que illustráraõ os Seculos. O mesmo se deve considerar dos Italianos, Francêzes, Hespanhóes, e Inglezes, cujos Idiomas tendo crigem na Lingua Latina, se tem elevado ao mais



alto ponto de perfeição possível, e nos quaes existem monumentos para quem todo o louvôr hé diminuto.

Mas este concurso de circumstancias parece, que ainda não foi a causa sufficiente da perfeição das Linguas: ainda ali se diviza hum vácuo, que precisa ser occupado. Aqui vem a Poesia com toda a sua pompa e magestade, desatando os vãos, pulindo e aperfeiçoando os Idiomas, dando a tudo alma, e vida, já elevando-se aos maiores assumptos nos louvôres do Ente Supremo, e no Panegyrico dos grandes homens, persuadindo a imitação das acções nobres, e dignas dos mais distinctos applausos. Ella lhe abre os seus thesouros; ella os enriquece; ella lhes dá força, elegancia, e harmonia, sem o que seriaõ huns cadáveres seccos, e inanimados. Sem a Poesia, nada seriaõ talvez os Gregos, e os Romanos, que tanto enchêraõ o mundo com a fama das suas victorias, com a grandeza das suas acções, e muito mais com a perfeição, com que cultiváraõ todas as Artes de génio, de que tantos, e tão admiraveis testemunhos nos deixáraõ principalmente nos seus escritos. A Poesia pois, que tendo entre os antigos hum caracter de harmonia muito diverso da Poesia moderna, veio pella ignorancia dos Seculos a tal decadencia, que pouco faltou par ficar inteiramente ignorada.

Das reliquias da Lingua Latina, e Grêga se formáraõ os Idiomas modernos, com diversa Syntaxe; e com elles resuscitáraõ, ou por melhor dizer, formáraõ os Provençaes huma Poesia toda nova na disposição das cesuras, e combinações harmónicas.

Os Italianos restauradôres de quasi todas as Artes, fôraõ os primeiros, que tratáraõ a Poesia com dignidade, aperfeiçoando os metros, e harmonias, que os mesmos Provençaes, e Sicilianos tinhaõ inventado; e tanto se applicáraõ a ella, que já no decimo quarto Seculo era famoso Poeta o celebre Dante, quem fixou todas as accentuações harmonicas do hende-



easyllabo, que ficou sendo o mais necessario metro da Poesia Italiana, Castelhana, e Portugueza.

Entráraõ os Mouros em Hespanha, e com elles a Poesia: porem o desassocêgo da guerra não dêo lugar aos antigos possuidores desta Região, tão infestada de Nações estranhas, a cultivar a Poesia seriamente, nem a pulir os seus Idiomas tão cedo como os Italianos. Da longa dominação, que os Romanos tiveraõ em Hespanha se havia nella introduzido o uzo da Lingua Latina, que veio a ser vulgar: della, e de varios dialectos barbaros, se formáraõ os dous mais bellos, e sonoros Idiomas de Hespanha, e talves da Europa, o Castelhana, e o Portuguez.

Estas duas Linguas se foraõ igualmente aperfeiçoando, de sorte que a hum mesmo tempo chegáraõ ao seu auge. Com tudo, sendo a Nação Portugueza mais moderna, e occupando muito menos espaço de terreno, que a Castelhana, veio mais cedo a produzir monumentos, que assaz distinguíraõ, e acreditáraõ o seu Idioma. As historias de João de Barros dadas á luz no meio do Seculo decimo sexto, e traduzidas em todas as Linguas cultas da Europa, fizeraõ mostrar ao Mundo litterário, que a Lingua Portugueza era a mais filha da Latina. Hum numero sufficiente de Escritores, que logo depois vieraõ, acabáraõ de determinar o genio da Lingua, cujo character hé elegancia, e perspicuidade. Sendo pois a Lingua Portugueza desde a sua origem mui dôce, e sonóra, resultado natural da quantidade proporcionada das suas vogáes, e consoantes, das quaes as primeiras, não são tão frequentes, e conjunctas, que enfraquêçaõ a harmonia, e fãçaõ languida e pouco notada, comose vê na Lingua Italiana; nem as segundas com nimia frequencia se atropellaõ, e produzem sons rudes e asperos, como nas Linguas do Norte. Todas estas felices disposições, além do genio, convidávaõ a Nação á cultura da



Poesia para que sempre teve natural inclinação. Deixemos a miúda investigação destas causas, a qual será mais propria de quem tentar escrevêr a historia da Lingua. Deixemos tambem as Poesias anteriôres ao Seculo de quinhentos, muitas das quaes existem em algumas Bibliothecas antigas, como as d' El Rei D. Diniz, na do Convento da Ordem de Christo em Thomar, e outras andaõ empregadas no celebre Cancioneiro de Resende, collecção preciosa, donde se podem extrahir as maiores luzes a respeito da Natureza, e origem da nossa Poesia : e começando a tratar do auge a que esta elevou a Lingua Portugueza; as graças, e numero, que lhe communicou; principiaremos a discorrêr de huma época mais vizinha a nos, e esta seja determinada pelo famôso Sá de Miranda.

Vejá-mos pois os assumptos, que este Poeta tratou, a qualidade de sua imitação em geral, o uzo que fez do hendecasyllabo, até ao seu tempo pouco ou nada conhecido em Portugal, e em toda a Hespanha; como tratou, como aperfeiçãoou o Sonêto, do qual se deve reputar inventor entre nós, novas graças que accrescentou á nossa Lingua, e como finalmente preparou aos Poetas, que lhe succedêraõ, hum novo caminho para se elevárem até a immortal Lusitada.

Mas antes que entremos neste exame, vejâmos primeiro o estado em que o Sá de Miranda, achou o Idioma.

A Nação Portugueza, que até ao fim do reinado de D. Fernando jazia na ignorancia, occupada unicamente da cultura das suas terras, quanto lhe era preciso para o consumo interiôr do Reino, e para entreter huma ligeira sombra de commercio exterior, continuamente vexado pella tyrannia Arabica, que infestando os mares, era eterno obstaculo á navegação; vivendo como desterrada na solidão dos campos, sem communicação, nem policia, fallava



huma linguagem informe, e grosseira, chêa de sons rudes; que as Linguas barbaras lhe tinhaõ communicado; e a pezar de ter huma origem tão pura, como a Lingua Latina, donde procedia, só conserváva alguma energia natural nascida das significações primitivas das suas vózes, que, alem de serem maculadas de infinitas anomalias, e dissonancias, eraõ privadas de translações, que daõ força e elevação a os Idiomas. Chêa pois de construccões erróneas, de dithongos ásperos, e desinencias rudes, póbre de termos, sem idéa do nexó, que subsiste nas particulas, sem syntaxe, sem harmonia o seu periodo incerto, e desunido vacillára sem carácter.

A grande revolução de D. João I. fazendo a mais viva commoção no genio dos Portuguezes, com ella lhe viéraõ novos estimulos de gloria, que eleva o espirito; novas emprezas, novos pensamentos, nova força, nova energia ás suas enunciações; novos objectos do discurso, e nova linguágem. Hum Latim barbaro até alli organo das Leis, e instrumentos publicos, cessou de ser a linguágem do Fôro.

Da conquista de Ceuta nasceo a idéa, a grande idéa dos descubrimentos, que mostrando a necessidade de cultivar as Mathematicas, e a Astronomia, taes, quaes existião naquelles tempos obscuros, alargou a esfêra da Mechanica, que fazendo novas investigações sobre a acção dos ventos, e resistencia das agoas, extrahindo a somma da combinação dos movimentos resultantes da acção, e reacção destes dous Elementos, alcançou mais perfeito conhecimento das leis dos liquidos, e do equilibrio, e aperfeiçoou finalmente a Arte de navegar. Novos Astros, novos mares e costas, novas ilhas, novos mundos enchem de admiração tôdo o universo.



---

*Extractos Poeticos.*

---

---

FROM THE THIRD CANTO OF THE LUCIAD  
OF CAMÕES.

---

**E**STA'VAS linda Inez posta em sossêgo,  
De teus annos colhêndo o dôce fruto,  
Naquêlle engâno da alma, lédo, e cégo,  
Que a fortuna não deixa durár muito :  
Nos saudózos câmpos do Mondêgo,  
De teus formózos olhos nunca enxuto,  
Aos montes ensinândo, e as ervínhas.  
O nome, que no peito escrito tínhas,

Do teu príncipe alli te respondião  
As lembranças, que na alma lhe morávaõ,  
Que sempre ante seus olhos te traziaõ :  
Quando dos teus formózos se apartávaõ :  
De noite em dóces sônhos, que mentiaõ,  
De dia em pensamentos, que voávaõ :  
E quanto em fim cuidáva, e quanto via,  
E'raõ tudo memórias de alegria.

D'outras béllas senhóras, e princêzas,  
Os dezejados talamos engêita,  
Que tudo em fim, tu puro amor desprêzas,  
Quando húm gesto, suáve te sugêita :  
Vêndo estas namoradas estranhêzas,  
O velho pay sesúdo, que respeita,  
O murmurár do povo e a fantasía,  
Do filho, que casárse não queria.

Tirár Inez ao mundo determína,  
Por lhe tirar o filho, que tem prêso,  
Crêndo co'sangue só da morte indina,  
Matár do firme amôr o fogo acêso :  
Que furôr consentio, que a espáda fina,



Que pôde sustentár o grande peso  
Do furor Mauro, fôsse levantáda,  
Contra huma fraca dama delicáda?

Traziaõ-na os horríferos algôzes  
Ante o Rey, ja movído a piedáde,  
Mas o pôvo com falsas, e ferózes  
Razôens, á morte crua o persuáde.  
Ella com tristes e piedósas vózes,  
Sahidas só de mágoa e saudáde  
Do seu Príncipe e filhos que deixáva,  
Que mais que a propria móрте a magoáva.

Para o céu cristalino levantâdo,  
Com lágrimas os olhos piedósos,  
Os olhos, porque as mãos lhe estáva atâdo  
Hum dos duros ministros rigorôsos:  
E depois nos menínos atentâdo,  
Que tão queridos tinha, e tão mimósos,  
Cuja orfandáde como mãi temía,  
Para o avô cruel assim dizia.

Se já nas brutas feras, cuja mente  
Nátúra fez cruel de nascimêto;  
E nas áves agrêstes, que somênte  
Nas rapínas aérias tem o intêto,  
Com pequênas criânças vio a gente,  
Têrem tão piedôso sentimêto,  
Como coa mãy de Nino ja mostráraõ,  
E cos Irmãos, que Roma edificáraõ:

O'tu que tens de humâno o gesto, e o peito,  
Se de humâno he matár hum donzêlla  
Fraca, e sem força só por têr sugêito  
O coração, a quem sôube vencêlla,  
A éstas criancínhas tem respêito  
Pois o não tens á morte escura délla,  
Môvate a piedáde sua, e minha,  
Pois te não move a culpa, que não tinha.

E se vencêdo a Maura resistêcia,



A morte sabes dar com fogo, e ferro,  
Sabe tambem dar vida com clemência,  
A quem para perdêlla não fêz erro.  
Mas se te assi meréce esta innocência,  
Põe-me em perpétuo e mísero destêrro,  
Na Scythia fria, ou lá na Libia ardênte,  
Onde em lágrimas viva eternamênte.

Põe-me onde se use toda a feridáde,  
Entre leôens, e tigres; e verêi  
Se nelles achar posso a piedáde,  
Que entre peitos humanos não achêi;  
Alli co' amor intrínseco, e vontáde,  
Naquêlle por quem môrro, criarêi  
Estas relíquias suas, que aqui viste,  
Que refrigerio séjaõ da mãi triste.

Queria perdoár-lhe o rey beníno,  
Movído das palavras, que o magôaõ,  
Mas o pertináz pôvo, e seu destino,  
(Que desta sorte o quiz) lhe não perdôaõ;  
Arrancaõ das espádas de aço fino,  
Os que por bom tal feito alli pregôaõ,  
Contra huma dama, ó peitos carnicêiros,  
Ferózes vos mostráes, e cavalleiros?

Qual contra a linda moça Policena,  
Consolação extrêma da mãy velha,  
Porque a sômbra de Achilles a condêna,  
C' o ferro o duro Pirro se aparêlha:  
Mas élla os olhos, com que o ar serêna  
(Bem cômô paciênte, e mansa ovêlha)  
Na mísera mãy postos, que endoudêce,  
Ao duro sacrificio se offerêce:

Taes contra Inez os brutos matadôres,  
No colo de alabástro, que sostinha  
As óbras, cõ que amôr matôu de amôres  
A'quelle, que depôis a fêz rainha:  
As espádas banhâdo, e as brâncas flôres,



Que ella dos olhos seus regádas tinha,  
Se incarnicávaõ fêrvidos, e irósos,  
No futuro castigo não cuidósos.

Bem pudéras, ó sol, da vista dêstes,  
Teus ráyos apartár aquêlle dia,  
Cômo da séva mesa de Thyestes  
Quando os filhos por maõ de Atrêu comia :  
Vós ó concavos valles que pudéstes,  
A voz extrêma ouvír da boca fría,  
O nome do seu Pedro, que lhe ouvístes,  
Por muito grande espaço repetístes.

Assi como a bonína, que cortáda  
Antes de tempo fôí, cândida, e bélla,  
Sêndo das mãos lascívas mal tratáda,  
Da menína, que a trouxe na capélla,  
O cheiro traz perdído, e a côr murcháda,  
Tal está morta a pállida donzélla,  
Sêcas do rosto as rósas, e perdída  
A brânca, e viva cor, co' a doce vida.

As filhas do Mondêgo a morte escúra,  
Longo tempo chorândo memoráraõ,  
E por memória etérna em fonte pura,  
As lágrimas chorádas transformáraõ :  
O nome lhe puzéraõ, que inda dura,  
Dos amôres de Inez, que alli passáraõ ;  
Vêde, que fresca fonte rega as flores,  
Que lágrimas são ágoa, e o nôme amôres.

---

FROM THE FIFTH CANTO OF THE SAME.

---

Porêrn já cinco sôes éraõ passádos,  
Que dalli nos partíramos, cortândo  
Os máres nunca de ôutrem navegádos,  
Prosperamênte os ventos assoprândo :  
Quândo huma noite estando descuidádos,  
Nâ cortadôra proa vigiândo,



Huma nuvem que os ares escurece,  
Sobre nossas cabeças apparece.

Tam temerosa vinha, e carregada,  
Que pôz nos coraçõens hum grande medo,  
Bramíndo o negro már de longe bráda,  
Como se dêsse em vaõ n'alguim rochêdo :  
O' potestáde, disse, sublimáda,  
Que ameaço divino, ou que segrêdo,  
Este clima, e este már nos apresêta,  
Que mór cousa parece, que tormênta?

Naõ acabáva, quando huma figúra,  
Se nos móstra no ár, robústa, e válida,  
De disfórme, e grandíssima estatúra,  
O rôsto carregádo, a barba esquállida :  
Os olhos encovádos, e a postúra  
Medônha, e má, e a côr terrêna, e pállida,  
O bôca nêgra, os dentes amaréllos.

Tam grande éra de mêmbrós, que bem pôsso  
Certificárte, que este era o segúndo,  
De Rhódes estranhíssimo Colôssó,  
Que hum dos sete milágres foi do mundo :  
Co' hum tom de vóz nos falla horrêdo e grôssó,  
Que parecêo sahir do mar profúndo,  
Arrepiãose as cárnés, e o cabêllo,  
A mi, e a todos, só de ouvílo, e vêlo.

E disse, o' gente ousáda mais que quântas  
No mundo comettêraõ grandes cousas ;  
Tu, que por guerras cruas, taes, e tantas,  
E por trabalhos vãos nunca repousas,  
Pois vedádos térmínos quebrântas,  
E navegár meus longos mares ousas,  
Que eu tanto tempo há que guardo, e tenho  
Nunca arádos de estranho ou proprio lenho ;

Pois vens vêr os segrêdos escondidos  
Da naturêza, e do humido elemento,  
A nenhum grande humano concedidos  
De nóbre ou de immortal merecimento :



Ouve os damnos de mi, que apercebidos  
Estão a teu sobêjo atrevimento,  
Por tôdo o largo már, e pela terra,  
Que inda hás-de subjugar com dura guerra.

Sábe que quantas náos esta viagem,  
Que tu fazes, fizérem de atrevidas,  
Inimiga terão esta paragem  
Com ventos, e tormêntas desmedidas.  
E da primeira armada, que passagem  
Fizér por éstas ondas insoffridas,  
Eu farei de improviso tal castigo,  
Que sêja mór o damno que o perigo.

Aqui espéro tomar, se não me engâno,  
De quem me descubrio alta vingança ;  
E não se acabará só nisto o damno  
De vossa pertinace confiança ;  
Antes em vossas náos vereis cada ânno  
(Se hé verdade o que meu juizo alcança)  
Naufrágios, perdições de toda sorte,  
Que o menór mal de tôdos seja a morte.

E do primeiro illustre que a ventura  
Com fama alta fizer tocár os Céos,  
Serei eterna e nóva sepultura,  
Por juizos incógnitos de Dêos :  
Aqui porá da Turca armada dura  
Os sobêrbos e prosperos trophéos :  
Comigo de seus damnos o ameaça  
A destruida Quilôa, com Mombaça.

Outro também virá de honrada fama,  
Liberal, Cavalleiro, e namorado,  
E comsigo trará a formósa Dama,  
Que Amôr por gram mercê lhe terá dado :  
Triste ventura e nêgro fado os châma  
Neste terrêno meu, que duro, e irádo,



Os deixará de hum crú naufragio vivos,  
Para verem trabálhos excessivos.

Verão morrer com fome os filhos charos,  
Em tanto amôr gerados, e nascidos:  
Verão os Cáfres asperos, e aváros,  
Tirár á linda Dama os seus vestidos:  
Os crystallinos membros, e preclaros,  
A' calma, ao frio, ao ár verão despídos;  
Despois de ter pizado longamênte  
Co' os delicados pés a arêa ardente.

E verão mais os ólhos que escapárem  
De tanto mal, de tanta desventura,  
Os dous amântes miseros ficárem  
Na férvida e implacabil espessura.  
Alli, despois que as pedras abrandarem  
Com lágrimas de dôr, de mágoa pura,  
Abraçados, as almas soltaraõ  
Da formósa e misérrima prisaõ.

Mais hia por diante o monstro horrêdo  
Dizendo nóssos fados, quando alçado  
Lhe dice eu: quem és tu que esse estupendo  
Côrpo, certo me tem maravilhado?  
A bôca, e os ólhos nêgros retorcêdo,  
E dando hum espantôso e grande brádo,  
Me respondêo com voz pesáda e amára,  
Como quem da pergunta lhe pezára:

Eu sou aquelle occulto e grande Cábo  
A quem chamáais vós outros Tormentório;  
Que nunca a Ptolemêo, Pompónio, Estrábo,  
Plinio, e quantos passáraõ fui notório.  
Aqui toda a Africâna cósta acábo  
Neste meu nunca visto Promontório,  
Que para o Pólo Antárctico se estende,  
A quem vóssa ousadía tanto offênde.

Fui dos filhos aspérrimos da Terra,



Qual Encélado, Egêo, e o Centimâno;  
Chameime Adamastôr, e fui na guérria  
Contra o que vibra os raios de Vulcão:  
Não que puzesse sérra sôbre sérra,  
Mas conquistando as ôndas do Occeano  
Fui Capitão do már, por onde andáva  
A armáda de Neptuno, que eu buscáva.

Amôres da alta Espôsa de Pelêo  
Me fizéram tomár tamânha emprêza,  
Todas as Dêosas desprezêi do Céu,  
Só por amár das águas a Princêza:  
Hum dia à vi, co'as filhas de Nerêo,  
Sahir núa na praia; e logo prêza  
A vontáde senti, de tal manêira  
Que inda não sinto cousa que mais queira.

Cômo fôsse impossivel alcançálla  
Pela grandêza fêa de meu gésto,  
Determinei por armas de tomálla,  
E a Dóris este caso manifestó:  
De mêdo a Dêosa então por mi lhe falla;  
Mas élla co' hum formôso riso honéstó  
Respondêo: Qual será o amôr bastânte  
De Nympha que sustente o de hum Gigânte?

Com tudo, por livrarmos o Occeano  
De tanta guerra, eu buscarei maneira,  
Com que com minha hônra escuse o dâmno:  
Tal resposta me torna a mensageira.  
Eu que cahir não pôde neste engâno  
(Que hé grande dos amântes a ceguêira)  
Enchêram-me com grâdes abondanças  
O peito de dezêjos, e esperanças.

Já nescio, já da guérria desistindo,  
Huma noite de Dóris promettida,  
Me apparece de longe o gésto lindo,  
Da brânca Thétis, unica despida:  
Cômo doudo corri, de lônge abrindo



Os braços, para aquélla que éra vida  
Deste corpo ; e começo os ólhos bellos  
A lhe beijar, as fáces, e os cabêllos.

Oh que não sei de nôjo cómo o cõte !  
Que crêndo ter nos braços quem amáva,  
Abraçado me achei co' hum duro môte  
De áspero mato, e de espessura bráva :  
Estâdo co' hum penêdo frôte afrôte,  
Que eu pêlo rôsto angélico apertáva,  
Não fiquei hómem não, mas' mudo, e quêdo,  
E junto de hum penêdo outro penêdo.

O' Nympha a mais formósa do Occeâno :  
Já que minha presênça não te agráda,  
Que te custáva ter-me neste engâno,  
Ou fôsse môte, núvem, sônho, ou náda ?  
De aqui me páрто irádo, e quási insâno,  
Da mágoa, e da deshônra alli passáda,  
A buscár ôtro mûndo, ônde não visse  
Quém de meu prânto, e de meu má se risse.

Eraõ já nêste têmpo meus irmãos  
Vencidos, e em miséria extrêma póstos ;  
E, por mais segurár-se os Dêoses vaõs,  
Aguns a vários môtos sotopóstos :  
E cómo contra o Céu não válem mãos,  
Eu que chorâdo andáva meus desgôstos  
Comecei a sentir do fádo imígo,  
Por meus atrevimêtos, o castígo.

Convérte-se-me a cárne em térra dúra,  
Em penêdos os óssos se fizéram :  
Estes mêmbrós que vês, e ésta figura,  
Por éstas lônegas águas se estendêram :  
Emfim minha grandíssima estatúra  
Neste remoto cábo convertêram  
Os Dêses ; e por mais dobrádas mágoas,  
Me anda Thetis cercando destas ágoas.

Assim contáva, e co' hum medônho chôro,



Subito dante os ólhos se apartôu;  
Desfêz-se a nuvem negra, e co' hum sonôro  
Bramído muito lônge o már soôu.  
Eu, levantando as mãos ao sancto côro  
Dos Anjos, que tão lônge nos guiôu,  
A Dêos pedi, que removêsse os duros  
Cásos que Adamastôr, contou futúros.

---

FROM THE SECOND CANTO OF THE SAME.

---

Ouvio-lhe éstas palávras piedósas  
A formósa Dióne, e commovída,  
De êntre as Nymphas se vái, que saudósas  
Ficáraõ désta subita partída.  
Já penétra as estrêllas luminósas;  
Já na tercêira Esféra recebída  
Avânte pássa; e lá no sexto Céu  
Para ònde estáva o Padre se movêo.

E cômo hia affrontáda do camínho,  
Tão formósa no gésto se mostráva,  
Que as estrêllas, o Céu, e o ar vizínho  
E tudo quânto a vía namoráva.  
Dos ólhos ònde faz seu filho o nínho  
Huns espíritos vivos inspiráva,  
Com que os Pólos geládos accendía,  
E tornáva de fogo a Esféra fria.

E por máis namorar o Soberâno  
Pádre, de quem foi sêmpre amáda, e chára,  
Se lhe apresênta assi cômo ao Troiâno  
Na sélva Idea já se apresentára.  
Se a víra o caçadôr, que o vulto humano  
Perdêo, vêndo a Diana na água clára,  
Nunca os famíntos gálgos o matáram;  
Que primeiro desêjos o acabáram.



Os crêspos fios de ouro se espraziam  
Pêlo cólo, que a néve escurecia :  
Andando, as lácteas têtas lhe tremíam  
Com quem Amôr brincáva, e não se vía :  
Da álva pretína châmas lhe sahíam,  
Onde o menino as álmas accendía :  
Pêlas lisas colúmnas lhe trepávam.  
Desêjos, que cómo héra se enrolávam.

Co' hum delgado cendál as pártes cóbre,  
De quem vergonha hé naturál repáro :  
Porêem nem tudo escônde, nem descóbre  
O véo dos rôxos lírios pôuco aváro :  
Mas para que o desêjo accênda, e dóbre,  
Lhe põe diânte aquelle objecto ráro.  
Já se sêntem no Céu, por tôda a páрте,  
Ciúmes em Vulcão, amôr em Márte.

E mostrâdo no angélico semblânte  
Co' o riso húma tristêza misturáda ;  
Como dâma que fôí do incáuto amânte  
Em brincos amorósos mál tratáda ;  
Que se queixa, e se ri n' hum mêsmo instânte,  
E se móstra êntre alêgre magoáda ;  
Desta árte a Dêosa, a quem nenhúma iguála,  
Mais mimósa que triste a o Pádre fála.

---

FROM THE FIRST IDYL OF BOCCAGE.

---

A' fóz do Téjo, em brônca penedía,  
Mináda pêlas ôndas salitrósas,  
Prisionêiro de Amôr, Tritaõ gemía.

Luziaõ-lhe as espádoas escamósas,  
Sustentáva o marítimo instrumêto,  
O búzio atroadôr nas mãos callósas :



Cônchas da côr do líquido Elemento  
Parte do corpo enórme lhe vestiaõ,  
Iguâl na ligeirêza ao próprio vênto :

Da bárba sálsas gôtas lhe cahiaõ,  
E nos ólhos, que Amôr affogueáva,  
Em borbotões as lágrimas ferviaõ.

Lília que hum Bósque próximo habitáva,  
Lília a Napéa, desdenhósa, e bêlla,  
Amorósos clamôres lhe arrancáva :

Hum dia a vio na práia, e só de vêlla  
Seu coração feróz enfeitiçado,  
Voôu, gemêndo, para os ólhos délla.

Das entrânhas do Pélago salgádo,  
Lôuco de Amôres, lôuco de suadádes.  
O queixôso Amadôr tinha saltádo :

Do Pai, que abáfa as nêgras tempestádes,  
Já, seu voráz tormênto éra sabído,  
E das ôutras Equóreas Divindádes.

De aéreas esperanças illudído,  
Graõ têmpo seu espírito saudôso,  
Rastejâdo a cruél, vagôu perdído ;

Graõ têmpo glórias vaas sonhóu teimôso,  
Antes que dêsse fructuósa entráda  
A o ácre desengâno, o peito anciôso. &c.

FIM.



---

LONDRES: Impresso por T. C. Hansard, Peterboro' Court, Fleet Street; onde  
se acha tambem hum sortimento completo dos Caracteres necessarios e  
particulares para imprimir, na Lingua Portuguesa.

---



*Books lately published, by F. WINGRAVE, in the  
PORTUGUESE and SPANISH LANGUAGES.*

1. A DICTIONARY of the Portuguese and English Languages, in Two Parts ; Portuguese and English, and English and Portuguese : wherein, First—The Words are explained in their different meanings, by Examples from the best Portuguese and English Writers. Secondly—The Etymology of the Portuguese generally indicated from the Latin, Arabic and other Languages. Throughout the whole are interspersed, a great number of Phrases and Proverbs. By ANTHONY VIEYRA. In Two Large Volumes, 8vo, a new Edition, carefully revised, and greatly improved, with upwards of 12,000 new Articles, and Commercial Phrases, by Mr. J. P. AILLAUD, and the Portuguese words properly accented, to facilitate the Pronunciation to Learners.

2. An Abridgement of the same in a pocket Volume.

3. A New Grammar of the Portuguese and English Languages. By Mr. VIEYRA, 8vo. A New Edition, greatly improved by Mr. AILLAUD, with the Portuguese Words properly accented.

4. EXERCISES upon the different Parts of Speech of the Portuguese Language, referring to Mr. VIEYRA's Grammar. 12mo.

5. Nova Grammatica Inglesa, a qual serve para Instruir aos Portuguezes na Lingua Inglesa, 8vo. Nova Edição revista, e consideravelmente augmentada.

6. HISTORIA de Portugal, por Antonio de MORAES SILVA, natural do Rio de Janeiro, e continuada até os nossos tempos, por Hippolyto José da COSTA, 3 tom. 12mo.

7. Historia de GIL BRAZ de Santilhana traduzida em Portuguez, 4 tom. 12mo.

8. SELECTIONS in Portuguese and English, with the Portuguese Words properly accented, for the Use of Persons learning those Languages, 8vo,

9. A NEW DICTIONARY of the Spanish and English Languages, in Two Parts—1. Spanish and English ; 2. English and Spanish. By JOSEPH BARETTI. A New Edition, corrected and improved. 2 vols. 8vo.

10. The same abridged in a small size.

11. A New Spanish Grammar : or, the Elements of the Spanish Language. By Mr. DELPINO. A new Edition, improved by Delpueyo. 8vo.

12, FERNANDEZ's New Practical Grammar of the Spanish Language ; a New Edition, considerably enlarged by the Author, 8vo.

13. EXERCISES upon the Rules of Construction of the Spanish Languages ; with references to the above Grammar. By Mr. FERNANDEZ. A New Edition, greatly improved by the Author. 12mo.



14. Mr. FERNANDEZ's new Dictionary of the Spanish and English Languages under one Alphabet. 12mo.

15. Las AVENTURAS de GIL BLAS de Santillana ; Restituidas al Castellano, por el Sapiientísimo Padre Isla, y en esta Nueva Edición, revisadas por el Rev. Don FELIPE FERNANDEZ, 4 vol. 12mo.

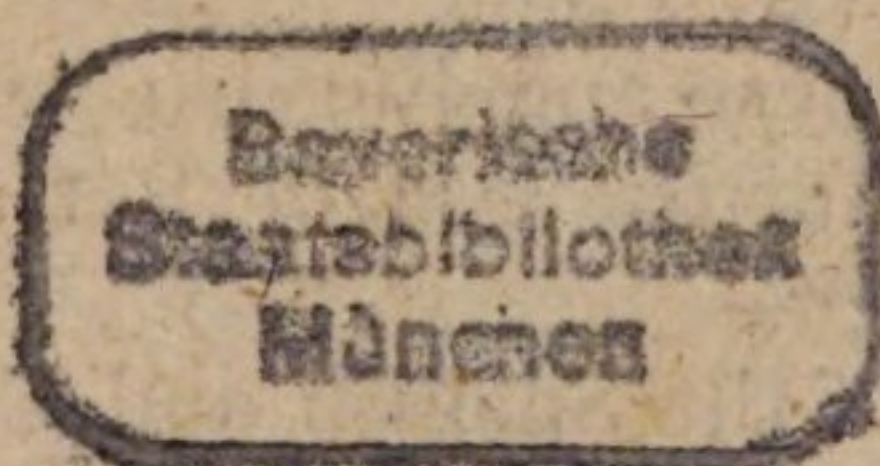
16. The same, vols. 2, 3, and 4 to complete sets.

17. Don QUIXOTE de la Mancha, compuesto por Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra. Nueva Edición por M. FERNANDEZ, 4 tom. 12mo.

18. NOVELAS NUEVAS, por Mr. DE FLORIAN, traducidas libremente, e ilustradas con algunas notas curiosas e instructivas, por Don Gaspar Zavala y Zamora, 12mo.

19. GONZALVO de CORDOVA, por Mr. De Florian, trad. por D. Juan Lopez de Penalvon, 2 tom. 12mo.

20. HISTORIA de la CONQUISTA de MEXICO, por Don Antonio de Solis, 3 tom. 8vo.















**Obermeier**  
Bucheinbände nach RAL RG 495  
Neufahrner Str. 8 · Tel 08781/530  
8303 Rottenburg / L.







Vieyra, Antonio,

A New Portuguese Grammar, in four parts

London 1813

L.lat.f. 547 sd

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10588355-1